

THE LIBRARY



Wilson Library

U. M.,

PALAE[•]STRA: CIX.

UNTERSUCHUNGEN UND TEXTE

AUS DER DEUTSCHEN UND ENGLISCHEN PHILOGIE

herausgegeben von **Alois Brandl**, **Gustav Roethe** und **Erich Schmidt**.

GUEVARA IN ENGLAND

NEBST NEUDRUCK VON LORD BERNERS'

“GOLDEN BOKE OF MARCUS AURELIUS”
(1535).

VON

JOSÉ MARIA GÁLVEZ.

BERLIN.
MAYER & MÜLLER.
1916.

W. Wagner
an
Herrn
Herrn

Weimar. — Druck von R. Wagner Sohn.

OMWL
PD
3
.P24x
v.109

Inhaltsverzeichnis.

	Seite
Vorwort	IX
Einleitung	XI
Bibliographisches	XIII
I. Guevaras Leben	1
II. Lord Berners' „Golden Boke“	10
1. Guevaras „Libro Avreo“ 1529	10
A. Überlieferung	10
B. Äußere Entstehungsgeschichte	12
C. Innere Entstehungsgeschichte	16
Angebliche Quellen 16. — Biographisches 17. —	
Philosophisches 21. — Soziologisches 24.	
2. Berthaults „Livre dore“ 1531	27
A. Überlieferung	27
B. Veranlassung zur Übersetzung	29
3. Lord Berners' „Golden Boke“ 1535	32
A. Überlieferung	32
B. Veranlassung zur Übersetzung	37
C. Aufnahmevorbedingungen in England	38
Boethiusübersetzungen	38
Alfred 38. — Chaucer 39.	
Fürstenspiegel	40
Joh. v. Salisbury 40. — Giraldus Cambrensis 40.	
— Hoccleve 41. — Erasmus 42. — Elyot 43.	
Staatsspiegel	45
Mores „Utopia“ 45.	
Spiegel der Lebensführung	47
Mores Biographie des Pico 47.	
D. Inhalt des „Golden Boke“	50
Prolog 50. — Kapitel 50ff. — Briefe 58ff.	
E. Übersetzungsweise	65
a) Hinzufügungen	66
α) Hinzufügungen des Berthault	66
Sätze 66. — Wortgruppen 66. — Einzelne Wörter	
zur Bildung von Parallelismen 66: (Substantive	

Bd. 1.68

245362

352

Steuer

20 25 19

245362

	Seite
67, Adjektive 67, Verben 67). — Einzelne Wörter ohne parallelen Begriff 67: (Substantive 68, Zahlwörter 68).	
β) Hinzufügungen des Lord Berners	68
Sätze 68. — Wortgruppen 68. — Einzelne Wörter zur Bildung von Parallelismen 68: (Substantive 68, Adjektive 68). — Einzelne Wörter ohne parallelen Begriff 69: (Adjektive 69).	
b) Auslassungen	69
α) Auslassungen des Berthault	69
Sätze 69. — Wortgruppen 70. — Einzelne Wörter 71: (Verben 71).	
β) Auslassungen des Lord Berners von Elementen, die aus dem Spanischen stammen	71
Sätze 71. — Einzelne Wörter 72: (Adjektive 72, Partikeln 73).	
γ) Auslassungen des Lord Berners von Hinzufügungen des Berthault	73
Einzelne Wörter 73.	
c) Umgestaltungen	74
α) Umgestaltungen des Berthault	74
Sätze 74. — Wortgruppen 74. — Einzelne Wörter 75: (Substantive 75, Adjektive 75, Verben 76, Partikeln 76).	
β) Umgestaltungen des Lord Berners	77
Sätze 77. — Wortgruppen 78. — Einzelne Wörter 78: (Substantive 78. — Verben 79).	
F. Diktion des Lord Berner	80
a) Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit zu erregen	80
Antithese 80. — Inversion 81. — Frage 82. — Ausruf 82. — Anrede 83.	
b) Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit zu befriedigen	83
α) Mittel des Nachdrucks	83
Parallelismus 83. — Aufzählung 85. — Wiederholung 85. — Alliteration 86: (Allit. spanischen Ursprungs 86, Allit. französischen Ursprungs 87, Allit. englischen Ursprungs 87: [Einfache 87, Regelmäßig verteilte Allit. außer der einfachen Reihe 88]). — Reim 89.	
β) Mittel der Anschaulichkeit	90
Apposition 90. — Schmückendes Adjektiv 90. — Gleichnis 91. — Metapher 92. — Allegorie 96.	

	Seite
III. Textabdruck des „Golden Boke“ von 1535	97
THE TABVL	99
*THE PROLOGVE	103
MARCVS AVRELIVS	110
Here begynneth the boke of the lyfe of the noble and eloquent Marke Aurele emperour, Of the byrthe and lygnage of Marke aurele Anthony emperour. cap. primo	110
What maysters Marke Aurelee hadde in his youth. Cap. xii	113
what sciences Marcus the emperour lerned. And of a meruayllous letter that he sent to Polyon. Cap. iii	118
Howe for the wysedome of Marcus many wise men flouryshed in his tyme. Cap. iiiii	123
Of the emperour Marcus sonne named Ueriffimus. capit. v	126
What wyse auncient men Marcus chole to instructe his sonne. Capit. vi.	128
Howe it chaunced to fyue wyse men, wherfore they were put out of the emperours house. Cap. vii	130
Howe the emperour reasoned with the maysters that shulde lerne his sonne. Ca. viii	134
Howe the maysters of princis oughte to kepe them from vices. Capitulo. ix	138
How themperour Marcus nourished the princeffes his doughters. Cap. x	144
Howe Marcus themperour dyd chole and proued his sonnes in lawe. Cap. .xi.	147
What the emperour Marcus sayde to the father of a yonge man that wolde marye one of his doughters. Cap. .xii.	150
Howe a sonne in lawe ought to be wel examined er he be accepted to his purpose. Cap. xiii	153
Howe Marke the emperour fauoured all noble exercyses, and hated trewandes and fooles. Cap. xiiii	156
Of the good conuersation of this emperour Marcus Aurelius. Cap. xv	160
Of the feaste that the Romaines kept to the god Jano in Rome, and what chaunced to the sayde emperour there. Cap. xvi	162
Howe Marcus the emperour aunswered a senatour in the senate. Cap. xvi. [sic]	165
Howe themperour Marcus diuided the houres of the day for the busynesses of thempire. Capi. xviii	170

	Seite
The anfwere of M. themperour, whan Faustine his wife demaunded the key of his study. Cap. xix	172
The emperour reherfeth the perilles of them that haunt women exceffiuely. Cap. xx	177
The emperours anfwere to Faustine for that ſhe ſayde, ſhe was with chylde. Cap. xxi	180
Howe tydynges was brought to the emperour, that the Mauritaynes wolde conquere greatte Britayne. Cap. xxii	183
What themperour ſayd to them of his courte in eſche- wyng ydelneffe. Cap. xxiii	185
Of the peryllous lyuyng of them that haunt the courte continually. Cap. xxiiii	188
Howe the emperour wolde haue them of his courte to lyue. Capit. xxv	192
Of a meruaylous and fearefulle monſter that was ſeene in Scicile, and of his wrytynges. Capit. xxvi . . .	197
What befell to a citizen of Rome in the tyme of this emperour Marcus. Cap. xxvii	200
Of a great peſtilence that was in Italy in this emperours tyme. Ca. xxviii	203
Howe Mar. answered his phifitiens that wold haue him leaue his ſtudie. Cap. xxix	205
Howe ſcience ought to be in princes. Ca. xxx	209
What a vilayne ſaide to the ſenatours of Rome in the preſence of the emperour. Cap. xxxi.	213
Of dyuers other thinges that the vilayne ſayd before the ſenate. Cap. xxxii	217
Howe themperour deſired the welth of his people, and the people his welthe. Cap. xxxiii	221
How themperour gaue Lucylla his daughter lycence to ſport her at his palays. Cap. xxxiiii	223
What Marcus themperour ſaid to a Senatour as touchinge tryumphes. Cap. xxxv	227
Of the greate reproche that themperour gaue to his wyfe Faustine and her daughter. Cap. xxxvi	231
Howe themperour counſayled Faustine to eſchue yll occaſ- ions fro her daughter. Cap. xxxvii	238
What thought Marcus the emperour toke for the mariage of his daughters. Cap. xxxviii	243
Of a ſyckenes, wherof themperour died, of his age, and where he died. Cap. xxxix	250
The wordes of Panutius ſecretarie to themperour at the houre of his death. Cap. xl	252

— VII —

	Seite
Howe the emperour demanded to haue in writinge all that the Secretarie had sayde. Cap. .xli.	259
The answere of themperour to Panuti9. Ca. xlii.	260
What themperour sayde to the maysters of his sonne, and to the rulers of thempire. Cap. xliii	270
Howe the emperour at the houre of his dethe, sent for his sonne, and declared to him, who shuld gouerne the Empire. Cap. xliiii.	281
What the emperour sayde to his sonne at the houre of his dethe. Cap. .xlv.	282
Of other more perticular councelles gyuen by the em- perour to his sonne. Cap. xlvi	287
Of dyuers and particular recommendations whiche the emperour commaunded his sonne. Cap. xlvii.	291
Of the lasste wordis that the emperour spake to his sonne, 7 of a table that he gaue hym. Ca. xlviii	295
A letter sent by Marcus Aurelius to Pyramon his speciall frende. Capitu. xlix. The firste letter	298
A letter sent by Marcus the emperour to Cornelius of the trauayle of warre, and vanitie of triumph. The seconde letter	306
To Torcatus beinge at Gayette in consolation of his bany- shement. The .iii. letter	317
A letter to Domitius of Capue to comforte him in his banysshement. The fourth letter	324
A letter sent fro the emperour to Claudius and Claudyne his wyfe, bycause they beinge olde lyued as yonge persones. The .v. letter	328
A letter sente fro Marke the Emperour to Labinia a Romain widow for to comfort her for the deth of her husbande. The .v. [sic] letter	341
A letter sente by Marc the emperour to Cyncinatus his frende, bycause he beinge a gentylman became a mar- chant. The .vii. letter	346
A letter sente fro Marc the emperour to Catulus cenforius, that was sorofull for the death of his sonne Ueriffimus. The .viii. letter	353
A letter sente by Marc the emperour to Marcurino being at Sannye nowe called Benauente. The .ix. letter . . .	359
A letter sent by Marc the emperour to Antigonus com- fortinge hym in a sorowfull case. The tenth letter . .	365
An other letter sent by Marc the emperour to the same Antygonus ageinst cruell iuges. The leuenth letter . .	376

— VIII —

	Seite
A letter sent by Marcus to Lambert gouvernour of the yle of Helespôte, whã he dyd banyfhe the vacabũdis fro Rome. The xi. [sic] letter	388
A letter sent by Marc themperour to Catulus his speciall frende of the nouelties of Rome. The .xiii. letter . .	395
A letter sent by Marke the emperour to the amorous ladyes of Rome, by cause they made a play of hym. The .xiiii. letter	407
A letter sent by Marc the emperour to Boemia a loue of his, that wolde haue gone with hym to the warres. The .xv. letter	416
The anfwere to the emperours letter sent by Boemia. The .xvi. letter	421
A letter sent by Marcus the emperour to Matrine a yonge mayden of Rome, of whom he was enamoured, feinge her at a wyndowe. The .xvii. letter	430
An other letter sente by Marc the emperoure to the sayd gentylwoman Matryne. The .xviii. letter	433
A letter sent by Marc the emperour to Lybia a fayre lady Romaine. The .xix. letter	436

Vorwort.

Dieser Band enthält den schon als Berliner Dissertation erschienenen Teil meiner Arbeit über Guevara in England nebst dem Textabdruck von Lord Berners' „Golden Boke“ v. J. 1535, der ältesten mir bekannten englischen Ausgabe von Guevaras Erstlingswerk.

Da ich jetzt in Santiago de Chile den Lehrstuhl für englische Philologie übernehme, so hoffe ich baldigst den Rest der Arbeit mit dem Texte von Sir Francis Bryans „Dispraise of the Life of a Courtier“ v. J. 1548 als Band CX der Palaestra veröffentlichen zu können.

Die Korrektur des hiermit herausgegebenen ersten Textes hat für mich Herr Dr. phil. Richard Röhmer in liebenswürdiger Weise übernommen. Ich bin ihm dafür zu großem Dank verpflichtet.

Liverpool, im Mai 1911.

J. M. Gálvez.

Die Herausgabe des vorliegenden Textes ist auf manche unerwartete Schwierigkeit gestoßen. Anfangs ließ die Vorbereitung auf den Beruf, später die Arbeit in diesem selbst nur wenig Muße für die Drucklegung. Dazu kam, daß die in Oxford hergestellte Abschrift des dortigen Exemplars als druckreif bezeichnet worden war, sich aber bei näherer Prüfung als recht wenig zuverlässig erwies. So mußte ich an Ort und Stelle nochmals eine genaue Nachprüfung der Abschrift vornehmen, und dazu waren die Sommerferien

zweier Jahre erforderlich. Zum Glück schloß Mars die Pforten der Bodleiana erst, nachdem gerade die letzte Zeile verglichen worden war. Zum Schluß nahm der Dienst mit der Waffe zur Verteidigung der Heimat Zeit und Kräfte vollauf in Anspruch.

Die krause Schreibung und Zeichensetzung der ältesten bekannten Textgestalt ist möglichst getreu wiedergegeben; nur wo augenscheinlich ein den Sinn entstellender Druckfehler vorliegt, erschien ein Hinweis darauf durch eine eckige Klammer am Platze.

Charlottenburg, Neujahr 1916.

R. Röhmer.

Einleitung.

Diese Untersuchung will folgende Fragen lösen:

1. Welches sind die wesentlichen Gedanken und welches die wesentlichen formalen Elemente, die durch Guevaras Werke nach England kamen?
2. Wie wurden alle diese Faktoren dort aufgenommen?

Trotz des Titels dieser Arbeit habe ich es mir nicht nehmen lassen, sie mit einer ausführlicheren Darstellung von Guevaras Leben zu beginnen. Dies schien mir unbedingt nötig, um zu einer richtigen Würdigung der Bedeutung und der Wirkung von G.s Wirken anzuleiten. Aus demselben Grunde habe ich bei der Behandlung der Werke G.s das Wesentlichste dargeboten, was ich über die Überlieferung und Entstehungsgeschichte der span. Originale und der frz. Übersetzungen fand, und was ich in gedanklicher und stilistischer Hinsicht für typisch hielt.

Da seit Anfang des 17. Jhdts. kein Werk G.s, mit Ausnahme der „Misterios del Monte Calvario“, in englischer Sprache neuerschienen ist, so ist es ferner der Lösung obiger Fragen dienlich, ausführlich den Inhalt aller englischen Übersetzungen der Werke G.s anzugeben. Damit wird eine genauere Kenntnis dieser Werke vermittelt, die meines Wissens nur in wenigen Bibliotheken vertreten sind.

Das Schwergewicht der Arbeit liegt in der Behandlung von G.s Erstlingswerk, dem „Libro Aureo“, weil es sowohl inhaltlich wie formal alle für die späteren Werke wichtigen literarischen Momente enthält.

Bibliographisches.

- Ames, J.**, *Typographical Antiquities*, ed. William Herbert, London 1785—1790.
- Antonio, Nicolas**, *Bibliotheca Hispana Nova*, Madrid 1783.
- Bayle, Pierre**, *Dictionaire Historique et Critique*, 3^{me} éd., 3 vols., Rotterdam (M. Bohn) 1720.
- Berthault de la Grise, R.** [gek. Bert.]: s. Guevara.
- Biographie Universelle**, Nouv. éd. publ. sous la dir. de J. F. Michaud, T. 1—45, Paris 1843—65.
- Bond, R. W.**, *Euphues and Euphuism*, im I. Bd. der "Complete Works of John Lyly", 3 vols., Oxf. 1902.
- Bourchier, Sir J.**, *Lord Berners* [gek.: Bern.]: s. Guevara, *Golden Boke*; s. Lee, Huon.
- Child, C. G.**, *John Lyly and Euphues*, in *Münchener Beiträge VII*, Erlangen und Leipzig 1894.
- Dictionary of National Biography**, ed. Leslie Stephen and Sidney L. Lee, vols. 1—63 nebst Suppl. 1—3, Lond. 1885—1900.
- Dilthey, W.**, *Auffassung und Analyse des Menschen im 15. und 16. Jahrhundert*, im A. f. G. d. P. IV. 604ff.
- Elyot, Sir Thomas**, *The Boke named The Gouvernour*, ed. H. H. S. Croft, 2 vols., Lond. 1880. [Berlin: Bibl. d. Engl. Seminars].
— *The Image of Governance*, Lond. 1541. [Brit. Mus. C. 21. b. 7].
- Erasmus Roterdamus**, *Institutio principis christiani*, Basel 1519. 4^o.
- Fenton, Geoffrey**: s. Guevara, *Golden Epistles*.
- Guevara, Antonio de**, *Libro avreo de Marco Aurelio* [gek. L. A.], Antwerpen 1529. 4^o. [Brit. Mus. 521. e. 4].
— *Libro Aureo de Marco Aurelio*, Paris 1529. 4^o. [Edinburg: Advocates' Library].
— *Liure dore de marc Aurele . . . Traduict . . . par Rene Berthault de la Grise . . .* Paris 1531. 4^o. [Brit. Mus. 521. e. 1].
— *The Golden Boke of Marcus Aurelius* [gek.: G.B.] . . . (Lord Berners' *Übersetzung vom Livre dore*) London, Thomas Berthelet 1535. 4^o. [Oxf., Bodleian Library].

- Guevara, A. de**, idem, 1536. 4°. [Oxf., Bodl. Libr.]
— idem, 1539. 4°. [Brit. Mus. 293. e. 1].
— idem, 1542. 4°. [Brit. Mus.].
— idem, 1553. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 524. c. 9 (3)].
— idem, Lond., A. Vele 1557. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 293. a. 16].
— idem, Lond., T. Berthelet 1559. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 8407. a. 54].
— idem, angebl. 1534, vermutl. 1553 oder 1559. 8°. [Manchester: John Rylands Libr.]¹⁾.
— idem, London, John Awdeley 1566. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 8404. aaa. 35].
— idem, 1573. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 8410. aaaa. 42].
— idem, Lond., Thomas East 1586. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 523. a. 4°].
— *Libro del emperador Marco aurelio cō relox de principes*, Valladolid 1529. Fol. [Brit. Mus. C. 38. h. 8].
— *Lorloge des Princes (Übersetzung des Relox durch Rene Bertault de la Grise)*. Paris 1540. Fol. [Brit. Mus. 8006. f. 7].
— idem, 1540. Fol. [Rennes: Bibliothèque Municipale]²⁾.
— idem, 1550. 8°. [Brit. Mus. 521. b. 14].
— *The Diall of Princes. Englyffhed out of the Frenche*, by **Thomas North**, Lond., John Waylande 1557. Fol. [Brit. Mus. C. 54. f. 15].
— idem, Lond., Richard Tottill and Thomas Marshe 1568. Fol. [Brit. Mus. 8006. f. 17].
— idem, 1582. 4°. [Brit. Mus. 525. e. 27].
— idem [Berlin: Bibl. d. Engl. Seminars].
— idem, Lond., B. Alsop 1619. Fol. [Brit. Mus. 8408. i. 6].
— *Las obras del illustre señor . . . A. de G. . . . prologo y argumento: . . . decada de Cesares: . . . Auifo de priuados: . . . Menosprecio de corte . . . inuentores del marear . . . Va toda la obra al estilo y romãce d Marco aurelio: porque el auctor es todo vno*. Valladolid 1539. [Brit. Mus. 630. l. 17].
— *Menosprecio*: s. San Pelayo.
— *Epistolas Familiares* [gek.: *Epist. Fam.*], Salamanca 1575. 12°. [Berl., Kgl. Bibl.].
— *The familiar epistles* [gek.: *Fam. Epist.*] . . . Tranflated . . . by **Edward Hellowes**, Lond. 1574? 4°. [Brit. Mus. 1085. i. 27].
— idem, 1577. 4°. [Brit. Mus. C. 40. d. 29].

¹⁾ Für Mitteilungen über dieses Buch bin ich dem Bibliothekar der John Rylands Library Herrn H. Guppy und ganz besonders dem Herrn G. Vine aus Manchester zu Dank verpflichtet.

²⁾ Für Mitteilungen über dieses Exemplar bin ich Herrn Prof. A. Feuillerat der Universität Rennes zu Dank verpflichtet.

- Guevara, A. de**, Golden Epistles . . . gathered . . . By Geffray Fenton, Lond. 1575. 4°. [Lond.: Guildhall Libr.]
 — idem, 1577. 4°. [Brit. Mus. 8407. bbb. 31].
- Giraldus Cambrensis**, De principis instructione liber, ed. G. F. Warner, Lond. 1891.
- Hazlitt, W. C.**, Hand-book to the popular, poetical, and dramatic literature of Great Britain, Lond. 1867.
- Histoire littéraire de la France**, 33 Bde., Paris 1824—1906.
- Hoccleve, Th.**, The Regement of Princes, ed. F. J. Furnivall, E.E.T.S. LXXII, Lond. 1897.
- Hume, M.**, Spanish Influence on English Literature, Lond. 1895.
- Koeppel, E.**, Stud. z. Geschichte der italienischen Novelle in der englischen Lit. des 16. Jahrhunderts, Straßburg 1892.
- Lajard, F.**, Gilles de Rome, in Hist. litt. d. l. Fr. XXX, 421 ff., Paris 1888.
- Landmann, F.**, Euphues . . ., in Vollmöllers Engl. Sprach- und Literaturdenkmale IV, Heilbronn 1887.
- Lee, S. L.**, Euphuism, in Athenaeum No 2907.
 — Introduction zum Boke of Duke Huon of Bordeaux done into English by Sir J. B., Lord Berners, E.E.T.S. XL, Lond. 1882.
- Lowndes, W. T.**, The Bibliographer's Manual of English Literature, Lond. 1857.
- Macaulay, G. C.**, Chronicles of Froissart. Transl. by . . . Lord Berners, Lond. 1895.
- Marcus Aurelius Antonius**: τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, hrsg. v. J. Stich, Leipzig 1882.
- Menendez y Pelayo, M.**, Orígenes de la Novela . . . Bd. I, Madrid 1905. 4°.
- More, Sir Th.**, Utopia, ed. J. H. Lupton, Oxf. 1895.
 — idem, ed. J. Churton Collins, Oxf. 1904.
 — Giovanni Pico della Mirandola: his Life by his nephew Giovanni Francesco Pico: . . . (Transl. by Sir T. M.), ed. J. M. Rigg, Lond. 1890.
- Nort, Sir Th.**: s. Guevara.
- Nouvelle Biographie Universelle** . . . V., Paris 1853.
- Rhua**, Cartas Censiorias, y prudente crítica, sobre las epístolas, y obras historiales del . . . señor . . . A. de Guevara . . . donde se advierten repetidos descuidos . . . Hrsg. v. Phelipe Ignacio Montero, Madrid 1726. [Brit. Mus. 11850. d. 13].
- Sandoval, P. de**, Historia del Emperador Carlos Quinto . . . Hrsg. v. J. Martinez de la Fuente, Madrid 1675.
- San Pelayo, J. de**, Estudio Preliminar zu seiner Ausg. v. Guevaras Menosprecio de Corte y Alabanza de Aldea, Bilbao 1893.

- Saresberiensis, Joh.**, Opera omnia . . . ed. J. A. Giles, 5 vols., Oxf. 1848.
- ten Brink, B.**, Geschichte der Englischen Literatur, 2 Bde., hrsg. v. A. Brandl, Straßburg (I) 1899 und (II) 1893.
- Ticknor, G.**, History of Spanish Literature, 3 vols., Lond. 1863.
- Underhill, J. G.**, Spanish Literature in the England of the Tudors, New York 1899.
- Warton, Th.**, History of English poetry, ed. Hazlitt, 4 vols., Lond. 1871.
- Watson, P. B.**, Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, New York 1884.
- Wilson, J. D.**, John Lyly, Cambridge 1905.
- Xenophon**, Institutio Cyri, hrsg. v. A. Hug, Leipzig 1883.

I. Guevaras Leben.¹⁾

Asturien ist das Stammland des uralten Geschlechts der Guevara, dessen Sproß Antonio de Guevara, der Chronist Karls V., war. Er wurde zu Treceño, einem kleinen Orte in den Bergen von Santander um 1480 geboren. Sein Vater Beltran verwaltete die Güter seines älteren Bruders Ladron, eines mit Ferdinand von Aragonien verschwägerten Mannes. Seine Mutter Elvira de Noroña y Calderon war Hofdame der Isabella von Kastilien gewesen. Beltran und Elvira hatten sieben Kinder: Antonio war der zweite der drei Söhne, die unter der Strenge des Vaters und der Frömmigkeit der Mutter ihre früheste Jugend verlebten. Mit zwölf Jahren kam Antonio auf Wunsch des Vaters an den Hof Ferdinands und Isabellas. Der plötzliche Wechsel ging nicht spurlos an dem empfänglichen Knaben vorüber: er macht uns seine ständige Sehnsucht nach der Natur, vor allem nach den Bergen begreiflich. Als Granada fiel und als Amerika entdeckt wurde, wird G. am Hofe gewesen sein. Sicher aber war er am Hofe, als die humanistische Bildung dort festen Fuß gefaßt hatte. — Isabella selbst wurde von Antonius Nebrisensis unterrichtet, und der italienische Humanist Petrus Martyr Anglerius war Lehrer ihres Sohnes.

Die Anfänge von G.s humanistischer Erziehung gehören höchst wahrscheinlich dieser Zeit an. Zugleich offenbarte er in wüstem sinnlichen Treiben die Zügellosigkeit seines Temperaments. Dies muß den jungen Mann zur Über-

¹⁾ Für diesen Abschnitt ist häufig benutzt San Pelayo: s. Bibliographie.

sättigung geführt haben, die ihn in der Stimmung der Reue nach dem Tode des Prinzen Johann (1497) und dem Isabellas (1504) zum Eintritt in den Franziskanerorden veranlaßte. Vor der Gewalt der Sinnlichkeit suchte er auf einmal bei der Askese Zuflucht. Er wurde ein fleißiger Mönch, der viele Jahre in der Stille des Klosters oder auf dem Lande bettelnd verbrachte. Eine Zeit der Receptivität und der Reflexion bricht für G. an. Durch die Bettelwanderungen wird seine Beobachtungsgabe entwickelt, und in der Ruhe des Klosterlebens wird er zu einem eifrigen Leser heiliger und profaner Bücher.

Auf einmal finden wir G. als Verwalter (*guardian*) der Klöster seines Ordens in Arevalo¹⁾ und Avila²⁾, und während des Jahres 1518 in Soria³⁾. Auch wurde G. meiner Ansicht nach im Jahre 1518 Hofprediger. Er sagt, daß, als er nicht mehr zur Welt zurückzukehren gedachte, Karl I. (V.) ihn aus dem Kloster als Prediger und Chronisten geholt habe.⁴⁾ Bei San Pelayo⁵⁾ heißt es zwar, G. sei 1520 Hofprediger geworden, weil G. an derselben Stelle des „Menosprecio“ sagt, daß er am Hofe Karls 18 Jahre lang gewesen sei. Die zwischen 1518 und 1538 fehlenden zwei Jahre kann er aber fern vom Hofe auf Reisen oder sonstwie verbracht haben. Es wäre auch denkbar, daß der Prolog des „Menosprecio“ 1536 geschrieben worden sei. Auf jeden Fall scheint mir dies nicht so sicher, als wenn G. im Prolog des Relox (Fol. XI) mitteilt, er habe sich mit jenem Werke erst im Jahre 1518 beschäftigt. Dies bezieht sich aber auf den L. A., welchen G. im Jahre 1529 mit dem Relox identifiziert. Im Prolog zum L. A. teilt ferner

¹⁾ *Miento si no me acontecio en Arevalo siendo yo guardian, con un juez nuevo y inexperto* (Epist. Fam. 1575, Fol. 130. An den Conde de Buendia).

²⁾ Vgl. Rhuas Epistel an G., nach San Pelayo S. LXXI.

³⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam., ed. 1575, Fol. 326. (An den Admiral Fadrique Enriquez).

⁴⁾ Menosprecio, Prolog.

⁵⁾ S. LXXIII, Anm.

G. mit, er habe erst bei seiner Ankunft am Hofe etwas von der Geschichte des M. A. gefunden, was ihn so mächtig angezogen habe, daß er fortan auf diesem Gebiete mit allen Kräften weiter geforscht habe. — G.s Ankunft am Hofe muß also in das Jahr 1518 gesetzt werden und in engen Zusammenhang damit der Beginn seiner literarischen Tätigkeit.

Im Prolog zum „Menosprecio“ sagt G., er habe den Hof Kaiser Maximilians besucht. Maximilian starb am 12. Januar 1519, G. muß also noch im Jahre 1518 im Gefolge Karls geweilt haben. Während des Jahres 1518 war auch John Bourchier, Lord Berners, als Gesandter Heinrichs VIII. am spanischen Hofe.

Karl von Spanien wurde 1519 zum römischen Kaiser deutscher Nation gewählt. Um seine neue Würde ausfüllen zu können, mußten die ungewohnterweise berufenen Cortes von Kastilien ihm außergewöhnliche Geldmittel bewilligen. Gleich darauf brach der kommunistische Aufstand los. Während desselben wurde G. mehrmals als Parlamentär der Gouverneure an die Rebellen gesandt, um eine friedliche Einigung herbeizuführen. Seine bei einer solchen Gelegenheit zu Villabraxima am 2. Januar 1521 in aristokratischem Sinne gehaltene kühne Rede zeigt uns G.s Königstreue und seine schroffe Stellung den Rebellen gegenüber. Im Namen der Aufständischen sagte der Bischof von Zamora zu ihm u. a., daß er infolge seines Aufenthalts im Kloster nicht wissen könne, was für Ungerechtigkeiten im Reiche vorgekommen seien¹⁾, eine höchst wahrscheinlich zutreffende Behauptung. — Als 1521 der Aufstand zu Ende ging²⁾, war G. mit der Abfassung der Kaiserchronik beschäftigt.

G.s Aufenthalt am englischen Hofe wird wahrscheinlich 1522 während Karls V. Besuch bei Heinrich VIII. stattge-

¹⁾ *Como vos padre os eſtays en ṽro monasterio no ſabeys las tyr̃anias que en el reyno ſe han hecho* (Epist. Fam. 1575, S. 232).

²⁾ Schlacht bei Villalar am 23. April 1521; vgl. Robertson, *History of the Reign of Charles V.*, herausgeg. v. O. Hoelscher, Berlin 1879, S. 83.

funden haben¹⁾. Im selben Jahre versammelte sich zu Burgos ein allgemeines Kapitel der Franziskaner²⁾, bei welcher Gelegenheit G. sich durch seine Beredsamkeit auszeichnete.

Im Jahre 1523 finden wir G. krank zu Burgos³⁾. Er wird sich wahrscheinlich von dort über Navarra nach Frankreich begeben haben⁴⁾. — Im April desselben Jahres bekam G. die Stelle eines Inquisitors, und als solcher brachte er einen großen Teil der folgenden drei Jahre in den Königreichen Valencia und Granada zu, wo er an den Zwangsbekehrungen der Mauren teilnahm. In Granada war G. am 4. Mai 1524⁵⁾, und von dort aus schreibt er auch am 20. Juli 1525⁶⁾, daß er Rom gesehen habe und daß diese Stadt, die zur Zeit des Heidentums die Mutter aller Tugenden gewesen, jetzt unter der Herrschaft des Christentums zur Schule aller Laster geworden sei⁷⁾.

1527 wurde G. von Karl V. dem Papst als Kandidat für den Bischofsstuhl von Guadix empfohlen. Darauf bezieht sich meines Erachtens ein Brief, in dem G. seinen Dank für die Gratulation eines Freundes zu seiner Erhebung auf einen Bischofsstuhl ausspricht. Dabei sagt er, er teile seines Freundes Freude nicht, weil es schwer sei, über die Seelen

¹⁾ Karl V. schiffte sich ein in Calais am 27. Mai 1522 und traf nach 4 Stunden in Dover ein. Vgl. Sandoval S. 127ff.

²⁾ Es handelte sich um die Wahl des Patergenerals: Gewählt wurde Quiñones. Fray Andres de Guadalupe in seiner *Historia de la Santa Provincia de los Angeles* sagt ausdrücklich, daß Quiñones, als er General war, A. de Guevara dem Kaiser als Prediger empfohlen habe (vgl. Cartas de Rhua).

³⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam. 1575, Fol. 80.

⁴⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam. 1575, S. 325. (An den Admiral Enriquez).

⁵⁾ Epist. Fam. (An Mosen Puche).

⁶⁾ Epist. Fam. 1575. (An den Gesandten Hieronymo Vique.)

⁷⁾ *No es ya Roma en poder de los Christianos, la q̄ era en tiempo de los Gentiles; porque siendo madre de todas las virtudes, la hemos tornado escuela de todos los vicios . . . De mi digo, que a Roma fuy, a Roma vi, a Roma visite, y a Roma contemple* (Epist. Fam. 1575, Fol. 97. An Hieronymo Vique).

zu herrschen¹⁾: „*Touching the congratulation you sent mee for the Bishoppriche, you are answered by Marcus Aurelius, by whom you see, it is more suretie to the man of religion and learning to follow the exercise of study, then to aspire after gouernment and rule: for that in the one he findes contentment with stabilitie, where the other ministreth nothing but passion, perplexitie and perpetuall subiection to reuolution and change*“²⁾).

1527 weilte G. in Madrid, Valladolid und dann wieder in Madrid³⁾. 1528 schreibt er von Madrid aus an den Admiral Fadrique Enriquez⁴⁾, und im März 1529 hatte er das Bistum Guadix inne. Am 29. August d. J. schreibt er aus Toledo, daß er an dem damals großes Aufsehen erregenden Prozesse gegen die Hexen von Navarra als Inquisitor amtlich beteiligt gewesen sei⁵⁾.

G.s inquisitorische Tätigkeit in den Jahren 1523—1529 führte ihn zu einer mehr und mehr zunehmenden streng kirchlichen Gesinnung. Es entstand in dieser Zeit der eigentliche Relox, der von den bisher gedruckten Schriften G.s das religiöse Moment zuerst in ausgeprägt katholisch-kirchlichem Sinne enthält.

Am 15. Oktober 1529 beklagt G. den Tod des Constable Iñigo de Velasco in einem Briefe: „*Of all great states in this kingdome, I holde some for kinsmen, others my good lordes, some for neighbours, and others for acquainted: but amongst them all, I held him for my singular good Lorde*

¹⁾ Um denjenigen, denen die Kenntnis des Sp. abgeht, das Verständnis zu erleichtern, habe ich im Folgenden im Texte die engl. Übersetzung statt des Originals zitiert, aber nur, wenn der Sinn des Sp. treu wiedergegeben ist.

²⁾ Golden Epist. Fol. 120. — Vgl. Epist. Fam. (An Alonso Xuarez).

³⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam. (An Mosen Rubin, Iñigo de Velasco und Alfonso Manrique).

⁴⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam. S. 168.

⁵⁾ *El no poder responder procedia de que a la sazón votauamos en la inquisición el negocio de las bruxas de Navarra* (Epist. Fam. Fol. 116—117. An Iñigo Manrique).

and friend for that I found him of a very good conuerfation, and of a founde condition“¹⁾). G.s hohe Stellung am Hofe läßt diese bedeutsamen Worte als durchaus glaubwürdig erscheinen.

Am 21. Mai 1531 befand sich G. in Granada: er schrieb zu dieser Zeit dem Bischof von Tuy, dem neuen dortigen Gerichtspräsidenten, was er für die Pflichten eines solchen Amtes halte, und teilte ihm mit, er führe schon zwei Jahre einen Prozeß wegen der Abtei von Baça gegen den Erzbischof von Toledo und habe auch schon einen für ihn günstigen Urteilspruch erlangt. Dieser Prozeß hat G. tief in die Mängel des heimatlichen Rechtswesens blicken lassen, was von Bedeutung für die Entstehung seines „Aviso de privados“ war.

Am 18. Juli 1532 macht G. aus Medina del Campo dem Marquis von los Velez Mitteilungen über den Hof²⁾.

Am 7. Januar 1533 war G. in Toledo³⁾. Im selben Jahre besuchte er sein Bistum Mondoñedo⁴⁾.

Am 30. März 1534 schreibt G. an den Admiral Fadrique Enriquez: . . . „*you hold me for a man both carefull and curious, for which cause you suppose (for that I haue passed diuers times with Caesar into Italie, & haue many ways traueled through Spaine) I shulde haue collected & recouered some Epitaphs of Sculptures*“⁵⁾. Im selben Briefe sagt G.: . . . „*if*

¹⁾ Vgl. Fam. Epist. S. 167. — *A todos los grandes deste reyno tengo yo, a vnos por deudos, a otros por señores, a otros por vezinos, a otros por conocidos, y entre todos tenia a el por particular señor y amigo: porq̄ le hallaua de muy buena conuerfacion y de muy sana condicion: (Epist. Fam. Fol. 139—140: An den Admiral Fadrique Enriquez).*

²⁾ Vgl. Fam. Epist. S. 96 ff.

³⁾ Fam. Epist. S. 321: An den Kanonikus Orosius.

⁴⁾ Fam. Epist. S. 348. Vgl. San Pelayo S. CLXI.

⁵⁾ Fam. Epist., S. 344. — *Dezis tambien señor en vuestra carta q̄ me teneys por hombre cuydadofo y curioso, por cuya causa teneys en pensamientos q̄ de las vezes q̄ con Cefar he passado a Italia, y de lo mucho q̄ he andado por Hespaña, terne algunos Epitaphios de sepolturas dignos de ver y notables para sacar.* (Epist. Fam. Fol. 323. An Fadrique Enriquez).

you write againe within this halfe yeare, I will refuse to aunswere for that I haue in hand certeine workes of mine owne, presently to be printed and after to be published“¹⁾.

Am 7. Januar 1535 schreibt G. aus Valladolid an den Abt von Monserrat über den günstigen Einfluß, den die Berge auf seine Gemütsstimmung ausüben²⁾. In einem anderen Briefe G.s vom 18. Januar³⁾ desselben Jahres an Pedro Acuña, Grafen von Buendia, klagt er über geistige Ermüdung, die vom „Studieren“ herrühre. Daran schließt er die allgemeine Bemerkung *„my strength decayeth, and also my haires grow hoarie“⁴⁾.*

Am 30. Mai 1535 schiffte sich Kaiser Karl in Barcelona zu seiner Tunis-Expedition ein⁵⁾. In dem Gefolge des Kaisers befand sich auch G., der in Afrika bei den nun folgenden Kämpfen vom Kaiser mit der Pflege der Verwundeten beauftragt wurde⁶⁾. Karls Weiterreise nach Italien wurde durch einen großen Sturm verhindert. Die Schiffe der Flotte wurden zerstreut; manche kamen nach Sizilien, wie z. B. die Galeere des Kaisers, die in Trapani eintraf. Andere Schiffe wurden vom Sturm nach Neapel entführt⁷⁾. Mit diesen mag auch G. nach Neapel gekommen sein. Auf jeden Fall war er daselbst Anfang November mit dem Kaiser: er bemühte sich, Juden durch Disputationen zu bekehren. In einer seiner damaligen Reden⁸⁾ sagt G. den Juden: *„I haue so little*

¹⁾ *...fi de aqui a medio año tornays a escriuir, no os tengo de rescriuir porq̃ tengo entre manos ciertas obras mias, para luego las imprimir, y despues las publicar.* — Epist. Fam. Fol. 327 (An Fadrique Enriquez).

²⁾ Epist. Fam.

³⁾ Dieses Datum ist den Epist. Fam. von 1575 entnommen; die Fam. Epist. haben als Datum 13. März 1535.

⁴⁾ *... las fuerças desfallecen: y aun los cabellos se encanescen.* — Epist. Fam. S. 114. — Fam. Epist. S. 134—135.

⁵⁾ Vgl. Sandoval S. 287.

⁶⁾ Vgl. Sandoval S. 291.

⁷⁾ Vgl. Sandoval S. 303.

⁸⁾ Fam. Epist. S. 370.

profited, and done so little good amongst you in these five monethes, in arguing, preaching, and disputing"¹⁾).

G. muß mithin früher in Italien eingetroffen sein als Karl V., der nicht ganz fünf Monate dort weilte²⁾).

Die eben angezogene, sowie eine spätere, in Rom gehaltene Rede, die auch in den Epist. Fam. überliefert ist, zeigt, wie erregt solche Disputationen gewesen sein müssen. Manche stark beleidigenden Ausdrücke („*wretched*“, „*wicked*“) werden von G. gebraucht. Kein Wunder, daß er niemanden bekehrte!

Sir Thomas Elyot (1495?—1546), der den Zug nach Tunis im Gefolge des Kaisers als Gesandter Heinrichs VIII. mitmachte, sagt in der Einleitung zu seinem „*Image of Governance*“, daß ihm die angebliche originale griechische Handschrift dieses Werkes in Neapel von einem gewissen „Herrn Pudericus“ geliehen worden sei. G. und Elyot waren also Mitreisende, und da beide schon höfische Werke verfaßt hatten und ähnliche humanistische Interessen besaßen, so ist anzunehmen, daß sie näher mit einander bekannt geworden waren. Durch eine solche Bekanntschaft mag Elyot größeres Interesse für den L. A. gewonnen haben, so daß er ihn später die Form für sein „*Image of Governance*“ entlehnte.

Während Karls Zug durch Rom und Florenz, sowie während des erfolglosen Kriegs in der Lombardei und in der Provence befand sich G. im Gefolge des Herrschers. Überall forschte der wißbegierige Chronist nach antiken Dingen. Dies kam ihm späterhin bei der Abfassung seiner Episteln zugute.

Im November 1536 segelte Karl V. von Genua nach Barcelona zurück³⁾).

1537 finden wir G. in Toledo wieder, von wo er am 22. Juli an den Bischof von Karthago schreibt: . . . „*being confessor vnto his maiestie, and Almner vnto the Empereffe I may not escape one day from the Court.*“ Dies zeigt, wie nahe G. in seinen besten Jahren dem Kaiser stand. Ferner

¹⁾ Vgl. Fam. Epist. S. 389.

²⁾ Vgl. Sandoval S. 308.

³⁾ Vgl. Sandoval S. 314.

meint G., das Hofleben sei „*a langhuifhing death*“; aber „*we understand in this court, all that is done, or in practice, through the worlde, which is a matter wherein man doth much delight, & content his spirites, having no regarde to other thinges, that might turne him to more profit*“¹⁾.

1538 legte G. die Königschronik beiseite und bereitete im Franziskanerkloster zu Valladolid seine unvollendeten Schriften für die Öffentlichkeit vor. Nachdem G. 1539 Bischof von Mondoñedo geworden war, erschienen zu Valladolid seine „*Decada de Emperadores*“, „*Aviso de Privados*“, „*Menosprecio de Corte y Alabanza de Aldea*“, „*Arte de Marear*“ und der erste Teil der „*Epistolas Familiares*“²⁾.

Seit 1539 fängt G. schnell zu altern an. 1542 gibt er den 2. Teil der „*Epistolas Familiares*“ und seine „*Misterios del Monte Calvario*“ heraus, welche die fromme Stimmung seiner letzten Lebensjahre widerspiegeln. Noch im selben Jahre wird seine Gesundheit von der Gicht sehr angegriffen. In den folgenden drei Jahren tritt ein schneller Verfall der Kräfte bei ihm ein. Er wendet seine Gedanken jetzt völlig dem Himmel zu und bereitet sich durch Übungen der Frömmigkeit auf sein Hinscheiden vor. Am 7. Januar 1544 macht er sein Testament, und am 3. April 1545 stirbt er zu Mondoñedo, wo er im Dom begraben wird^{3) 4)}.

¹⁾ Fam. Epist. S. 365 ff.

²⁾ Vgl. Antonio unter *Guevara*.

³⁾ Seine Gebeine wurden 1552 neben denen seines Bruders Fernando in der Franziskanerkirche zu Valladolid beigesetzt; doch kann das Grab seit 1837 nicht mehr festgestellt werden, weil damals die Kirche abgerissen wurde (vgl. San Pelayo S. LXV).

⁴⁾ Sandoval sagt, daß G., dessen Schriften und dessen Gelehrsamkeit wohl bekannt seien, im Jahre 1545 gestorben sei, daß er von der Geschichte Karls V., deren Abfassung seine Hauptpflicht als Historiograph war, sehr wenig und dies ohne Zusammenhang hinterlassen habe. Martinez de la Fuente, der Herausgeber von Sandovals Buch, bemerkt dazu, Sandoval habe vier Tage hindurch G.s Geschichte benutzt und manches daraus entlehnt (vgl. Sandoval S. 382, §§ 1—2).

II. Lord Berners' „Golden Boke“.

1. Guevaras „Libro Avreo“ 1529.

A. Überlieferung.

Der „Libro avreo“ wurde zuerst am Hofe bekannt und zwar in einer Original-Hs., die geraubt und abgeschrieben wurde und erst später wieder in die Hände des Verfassers gelangte. G. war damit beschäftigt, den Relox zu beendigen (also vor 1527), als der L.A. zuerst in Sevilla, dann in Portugal und Aragonien heimlich erschien. Diese drei Ausgaben waren voll von Fehlern, obwohl manche der ersten Abschriften von G. selbst nach der Original-Hs. korrigiert worden waren.

Meines Wissens ist kein Exemplar einer der unerlaubten Ausgaben erhalten; jedoch werde ich bei der Besprechung der Übersetzungen zeigen, daß die zwei mir bekannten ältesten Ausgaben, die in Antwerpen und Paris erschienen sind, nur Nachdrucke einer der oben genannten Raubausgaben darstellen. Die Antwerpener Ausgabe ist vertreten durch ein gut erhaltenes Exemplar im Brit. Mus. (521. e. 4). Es ist in 4^o, in lateinischer Schrift und mit einer Numerierung (126 Folios) versehen. Auf dem Titelblatt steht:

LIBRO AVREO DE MARCO

**Aurelio: emperador: y elo
quentissimo orador.**

**Nueuamente
impresso.**

*

M.D.X . . .

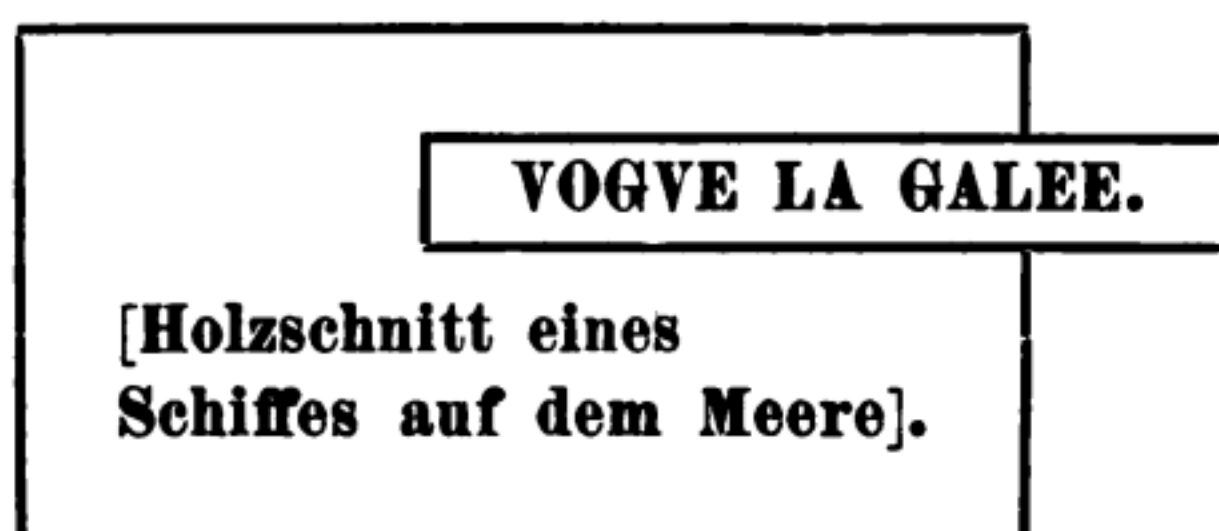
Es folgt zuerst ein Prolog (5 Seiten), darauf das Leben des Mark Aurel (in 48 Kapiteln); dann folgen 19 Briefe, die, mit Ausnahme eines von Boemia an M.A. gerichteten, sämtlich von M.A. herrühren. Auf Brief 19 folgt eine Seite mit einer Anmerkung des Herausgebers, worin das Werk und sein Verfasser sehr gelobt werden. Daran schließt sich folgende Bemerkung: „*¶ Fue impresso en la triunfante villa de Enueres por Joannes Grapheus. Año del Señor de mill E quinientos E veynte E nueve. Acabose a diez dias del mes de Enero.*“ Den Schluß bildet ein Verzeichnis der Kapitel und Briefe.

Die Pariser Ausgabe des L.A. ist durch ein Quarto-Exemplar vertreten, das auch in lateinischen Buchstaben gedruckt ist und ebenfalls 48 Kapitel und 19 Briefe enthält; es findet sich in der Library of the Faculty of Advocates zu Edinburg. Dies Buch weicht inhaltlich von dem Londoner Exemplar nur in der Schlußbemerkung ab: „*Fue nueuamente impresso en la triunfante oniuersidad de Paris, Par Pedro Vidoue, por Galleot de prado librero. Año del Señor de mill E quinientos E veynte E nueve.*“ Danach ist höchst wahrscheinlich die Antwerpener Ausgabe die ältere, denn es wäre ein großer Zufall, wenn beide Ausgaben in den ersten 10 Tagen des J. 1529 fertig gedruckt worden wären.

Auf dem Titelblatt des Edinburger Exemplars steht:

**LIBRO
AVREO
DE MARCO AV**

**relío / Emperador y eloquen-
tífsimo orador, Nue-
vamente im-
prefso.**



**Eu la triunphante villa de PARIS.
por Galleot de Prado librero
M. DXXIX.**

Nuevamente imprefso, das sich an den Titel beider Ausgaben anschließt und auch in der Anm. des Druckers der Pariser Ausg. nicht fehlt, bezieht sich meines Erachtens auf diejenige der drei genannten Raubausgaben, deren Nachdrucke die Antwerpener und die Pariser Ausgaben sein können. Freilich könnten letztere auch Nachdrucke zweier verschiedener Raubausgaben sein. — Die zahlreichen späteren Ausgaben des L.A. kommen für uns natürlich nicht in Betracht.

B. Äußere Entstehungsgeschichte.

G. besaß einen großen Wissensdrang. Er selbst sagt 1529, er habe mit der Lektüre und dem Studium *göttlicher und menschlicher* Bücher die meisten seiner Jahre ver-

bracht¹⁾. Durch seine Berufung als Prediger und Chronist des Königs an den durch humanistische Bildung beeinflussten Hof fand er reichlich Gelegenheit, seine Wißbegier zu befriedigen. Daß G. das Kloster, die „Schule seines Studiums“, mit dem Hofe vertauschte, bedeutet für ihn das Aufgeben einer mehr rezeptiven Beschäftigung und die Aufnahme einer mehr forschenden Tätigkeit auf dem Gebiete der Antike, der sich sein Geschmack schon in früheren Jahren zugewandt hatte. Seine Forschungen führten ihn zufällig auf ein Werk, worin ein Teil der Geschichte Mark Aurels nebst einem darin enthaltenen Brief stand. Sie gefiel ihm so gut, daß er sich fortan eifrig bemühte, das ganze Werk aufzufinden²⁾.

Im Prolog des L.A. sagt G., daß er, nachdem er viele Bücher und Bibliotheken durchforscht, mit vielen Gelehrten gesprochen und viele Länder besucht, die Lebensbeschreibung des M.A. in Florenz unter den Büchern aus dem Nachlaß des Cosmo de Medici gefunden habe³⁾. Die Wahrheit dieser Vorspiegelung G.s wurde sofort nach dem Erscheinen des Buches angezweifelt. Dies ersieht man aus der Verteidigung G.s im Prolog des Relox, wo er ausführt, viele seien verwundert gewesen, daß diese Lehren M.A.s so lange verborgen gewesen seien, und hätten behauptet, G. habe sie

¹⁾ *Desque nasci hasta agora assi en el mundo de do fui como en la religion a do me acogi: todo lo mas de mis años he ocupado en leer y / estudiar libros diuinos / y hūanos: avn q̄ cōfesso mi flaḡza de no auer leydo tāto quāto pudiera: ni he estudiado tāto quāto debiera: (Relox 1529. Prolog Fol. xj).*

²⁾ *Quando me vve salido de los colegios de mi estudio / y llevado a predicar a palacio: como vi tantas nuevas nouedades en las cortes: acorde cō deſseo de saber / darne a indagar y saber cosas antiquas. Acaſso paſando vn dia vna historia halle en ella esta hyſtoria acotada: y vna epistola en ella inferta: y pareciome tan buena que pueſſe todo lo que las fuerças humanas alcācā en buscarla (L.A. Prolog).*

³⁾ *Despues de rebueltos muchos libros: & andadas muchas librerias: hablando cō muchos sabios: peſquiſando por muchos reynos: finalmente deſcubriſe en Florencia entre los libros que dexo coſme de medicis varō por cierto de buena memoria. (L.A.)*

erfunden. Man erkannte also sofort, G. habe seine Lebensgeschichte des M.A. selbst erdacht.

Nach einer anderen Stelle des Relox¹⁾ wurde der M.A. dem G. aus Florenz gebracht. Wenn alle Angaben G.s hierüber wahr wären, so hätte er mithin seine Geschichte des M.A. in Florenz gefunden, und dieses wäre ihm dann später nach Spanien geschickt worden. Das angebliche Florentiner Original wurde jedoch von G. niemals gezeigt; auch suchte G. die Kritik in diesem Punkte nie zu widerlegen, sondern höchstens lächerlich zu machen. G. selbst scheint übrigens kaum damit gerechnet zu haben, daß jemand seine Erfindung, durch die er dem Werke einen Schein von Antiquität verleihen wollte, ernst nehmen würde.

Im Prolog des Relox²⁾ erhalten wir ferner Auskunft über folgende wichtige den L.A. betreffenden Punkte: 1) Die Abfassungszeit fällt zwischen 1518 und 1524; 2) Erst 1524 wurde G.s Verfasserschaft entdeckt; 3) 1524 hat Karl V. das Werk angesehen, als er am Fieber krank darnieder lag; 4) Das Werk war damals noch nicht fertig, und G. hatte noch nicht die Absicht, es so herauszugeben; 5) Die Hs. wurde aus dem Gemach des Kaisers gestohlen und von Pagen abgeschrieben; 6) Die Diebe brachten G. einen Teil des Werkes zum Korrigieren. Die Angaben unter 4 erscheinen mir wenig wahrscheinlich, denn der L.A. ist seinem Inhalte nach abgeschlossener als der Relox.

¹⁾ *Affí como a marco aurelio me truxerõ de florêcia* / (Prolog).

²⁾ *Yo comêce a entêder eñ: a obra eñlaño d'mill y quinientos y diez y ocho: y haſta el año de veynte y quatro*: ningũo alcãço en q̄ yo eſtaua ocupado: luego el ſiguiête año d'veynte y quatro: como el libro que tenia yo muy ſecreto eſtuuiefe dibulgado: eſtãdo ſu mageſtãd malo de la q̄rtana me lo pidio para paſſar t̄po y aliuir ſu calêtura. Yo ſerui a ſu mageſtãd entonces cõ marco aurelio: el qual avn no le tenia acabado ni corregido / y ſuplique le . . . q̄ a ninguno dieſſe lugar: q̄ en ſu real camara traſladaffe el libro: porq̄ en tanto q̄ yo yua adelante con la obra / no era mi fin de publicar la de la manera q̄ eſtõces eſtaua: . . . / el libro fue hurtado / y p̄ manos muy de diuerſas p̄ſonas traydo & traſladado / . . . & por manos d̄ pages le eſcreuiã: como cada*

G. beabsichtigte meiner Ansicht nach zuerst den L.A. allein herauszugeben. Der günstige Eindruck des Werkes auf den Kaiser und auf den Hof hat ihn dann offenbar veranlaßt, den L.A. zu seinem Relox auszuarbeiten. Über Punkt 5 schreibt G. an Iñigo de Velasco: „*As concerning that which you write of Marcus Aurelius, y case standeth thus: that I translated and presented it vnto Caesar not all finished, the which Laxao, did steale from the Emperour, and the Quéene from Laxao, and Tumbas from the Quéene, and the Ladie Aldonfa from Tumbas, & your Lordshippe from the Ladie Aldonfa: in such wise that my sweates ended in your theftes*“¹⁾. Dies steht in einem Briefe, der datiert ist: Madrid, 1. Januar 1524. Dieses Datum wird zutreffend sein, wenn meine Annahme, quatro (*) stehe versehentlich für tres, richtig ist. Obwohl übrigens die Angaben der Epist. Fam. (1538) nur mit Vorsicht zu benutzen sind, erwähne ich hier Folgendes aus G.s Epistel vom 19. August 1524 an Marquis Pescara: „*I beleue your Lordship shall receiue Marcus Aurelius, whiche I do send you.*“ G. wird sich hier auf eine handschriftliche Abschrift des Originals beziehen, die er nach dem Bekanntwerden des Werkes am Hofe an Pescara sandte.

Es ist anzunehmen, daß Laxao G.s Werk im Einverständnis mit dem Kaiser stahl, und da die Diebe dem Verfasser das gestohlene Werk zum Korrigieren brachten, so ist wohl sicher, daß er von dem künftigen heimlichen Erscheinen seines Buches wußte, obwohl er, als dies geschah, davon über-

*dia cresciã enl las faltas: & no auia mas de vn original por do corrigirlas: es verdad q̄ me truxerõ algũos a corregir: . . . / ya q̄ yo ãdaua alcabo de mi obra / y q̄ria publicar la: remanesce marco aurelio impreso en seuilla / . . . No parãdo enstõ el negocio imp̄mierõ le otra vez en portugal / y luego en los reynos de aragõ / y si fue viciosa la impresiõ primera / no por cierto lo fuerõ menos la segunda y la tercera Relox 1529, Fol. XIII, XIV). [*Quatro steht hier höchst wahrscheinlich versehentlich für tres].*

¹⁾ Fam. Epist., Fol. 220.

rascht zu sein schien. G. kann zu diesem Verhalten dadurch veranlaßt worden sein, daß er mit seinem in der Form rein heidnischen Werke bei den Inquisitoren keinen Anstoß erregen wollte.

G. beabsichtigte, zur moralischen Erziehung des jungen Königs Karl durch eine Schrift beizutragen; dies ist der Anlaß zur Abfassung des „Mark Aurel“ gewesen. M.A. erscheint nämlich als das Musterbild eines Herrschers: G. preist ihn als einen weisen Philosophen und einen sehr gewaltigen Fürsten¹⁾. 1529 meinte G. mit Bezug auf die Lehre des M.A., daß ihn nichts so sehr überrascht habe als zu sehen, daß Gott einem Heiden einen so großen Schatz in den Mund gelegt habe²⁾.

C. Innere Entstehungsgeschichte.

Angebliche Quellen.

G. beansprucht Glaubwürdigkeit für sein Leben des M.A., weil es zusammengestellt sei aus den Schriften, welche die Lehrer dieses Kaisers, Junius Rusticus, Cinna Catullus und Sextus Cheronensis, darüber geschrieben hätten. Ferner deutet G. an, wenige hätten es gekannt; auch habe er es nie gedruckt gesehen³⁾. Er sagt ferner, daß der historische M.A. z. T. Latein, meist aber Griechisch geschrieben habe: aus dem Lateinischen übersetze G. selbständig ins Spanische und aus dem Griechischen mit Hilfe seiner Freunde⁴⁾. M.A.s eigene Schriften werden hier also von G. als Quelle angegeben.

¹⁾ *Otros sabios no fuerõ mas de fimplemẽte phos / mas n̄ro marco aurelio fue pho muy sabio / y pr̄cipe muy poderoso / y poresta cosa es razõ q̄ sea mas creydo q̄ otro* (Relox, Fol. X; Prologo general).

²⁾ *De todo lo q̄ he leydo ningũa cosa tãto me ha espãtado / como es la doctrina de marco aurelio: por ver q̄ en la boca de vn pagano: puffiese dios tã grã theforo* (Relox, Fol. XI).

³⁾ L.A., Prolog. — Relox, Fol. XIII.

⁴⁾ Relox, Fol. XI.

Ferner sagt G., er habe aus vielen Historiographen geschöpft und manches Unnötige und Langweilige durch Angenehmes und Nützliches ersetzt¹⁾. G. erwähnt außer den vorgenannten Gewährsmännern im selben Prolog nur Erodianus, Eutropius, Lampridius, Julius Capitolinus und sagt, er kenne viele andere, die über das Leben M.A.s nur nach Hörensagen, also nicht in glaubwürdiger Weise wie er, geschrieben hätten.

Was G.s eigenen Anteil an der Schöpfung seiner Geschichte anbetrifft, so meint er, daß jeder Weise nach dem Lesen des Buches in ihm weder den Verfasser des Werkes sehen, noch auch die Autorschaft ihm völlig absprechen werde, weil einerseits so viele treffende Sentenzen in der Gegenwart nicht vorhanden seien, andererseits solch gehobener Stil in der Vergangenheit nie erreicht worden sei²⁾. Wie viel übrigens G. den Alten verdankt, ersieht man schon aus der Fülle antiker Zitate³⁾.

Biographisches.

Es war die Aufgabe des Hofchronisten G., die wichtigsten politischen Geschehnisse der Zeit im Rahmen der Biographie seines Herrschers darzustellen.

Die Chroniken hatten in Spanien eine lange Entwicklung gehabt, die in Pero Lopez de Ayalas (1332—1407) berühmter „Chronik Peters des Grausamen“ ihren Gipfel erreicht hatte. Sie arteten später aus in Geschichten wie „Das Leben und die Taten des großen Tamerlan“, welche die Brücke zum Ritterroman bilden⁴⁾.

Von seiner offiziellen Chronik soll G. sehr wenig ge-

¹⁾ L.A., Prolog.

²⁾ L.A., Schluß des Prologs.

³⁾ Menendez y Pelayo, Bd. I. S. CCCLXIX, sagt, daß G. aus Herodian, Lampridius, Julius Capitolinus das Historische geschöpft habe.

⁴⁾ Vgl. Hume, K. II f.

schrieben haben¹⁾; er erwähnt sie nur um zu sagen, daß er mit ihr beschäftigt sei²⁾. G. hatte kein Interesse an einer wahren Geschichtschreibung. Er bot Wahrheit und Dichtung, gab jedoch sein Werk für ganz wahr aus³⁾. Die in den entarteten spanischen Chroniken übliche Mischung von Wahrheit und Dichtung war G. für sein Leben des M.A. vorbildlich. Historisch an G.s M.A. ist dessen Milde und Neigung zum Philosophieren, wie auch der Leichtsinn der Faustina⁴⁾ und die Schlechtigkeit des Commodus⁵⁾. Der Haß des historischen M.A. gegen die Spieler tritt auch bei G. stark hervor⁶⁾. Historisch ist es ferner, daß M.A. den größten Teil seines Lebens zu Rom verbringt. An politischen Begebenheiten werden der Partherkrieg erwähnt und der Krieg in Pannonien⁷⁾. Der erfundene Einfall der Mauritanier in Großbritannien⁸⁾ hängt zusammen mit G.s Kenntniss vom Aufstande der Britannier, der im Anfang der Regierung M.A.s (zwischen 161 und 165) stattfand⁹⁾. Die Pest, die während M.A.s Regierung Italien verwüstete, wird von G. erwähnt¹⁰⁾, um daran die Erzählung vom Donaubauern¹¹⁾ zu knüpfen. G. läßt seinen Helden langsam verschneiden, so daß er bis zu einer Viertelstunde vor seinem Tode Zeit hat, lange Reden zu halten, welche acht Kap. füllen¹²⁾. Die Reden des Helden setzt G. am Schluß der 48 Kap. des Lebens M.A.s in den 19 Briefen fort, die den zweiten Teil der Biographie M.A.s bilden. Veranlaßt sind diese Briefe durch M.A.s erfundene freundschaftliche Beziehungen und (die letzten 5) durch seine erfundenen Liebschaften. — Das Werk ist also im ganzen nicht historisch, wie G. vorgibt: es ist vielmehr

¹⁾ Vgl. Sandoval, Lib. 26. §§ 1. 2.

²⁾ Vgl. Epist. Fam.

³⁾ *No haga vuestra merced hincapie en Historias Gentiles, y prophanas; pues no tenemos mas certinidad, que digan verdad vnos, que otros, & pro utraque parte militant argumenta* (Rhua, S. 66).

⁴⁾ L.A., K. 34.

⁵⁾ L.A., K. 42.

⁶⁾ L.A., K. 14, Br. 12.

⁷⁾ L.A., K. 39—48.

⁸⁾ L.A., K. 22.

⁹⁾ Watson, S. 61.

¹⁰⁾ L.A., K. 28, 29.

¹¹⁾ L.A., K. 30, 31.

¹²⁾ L.A., K. 41—48.

ein auf dürftiger historischer Grundlage fußender biographischer Roman.

In der Gattung des biographischen Romans hat höchstwahrscheinlich Xenophons Kyrupädie dem G. als Vorbild gedient. Ticknor hat bereits auf die Ähnlichkeit beider Werke hingewiesen¹⁾, und Menendez y Pelayo hat in B. III, Kap. 50—57 des *Relox* eine direkte Nachahmung der Kyrupaedie sehen wollen²⁾.

Es besteht allerdings eine gewisse Übereinstimmung zwischen dem ersten Kap. des L.A. und dem Anfang von Buch 1 der Kyrupaedie, nämlich da, wo von der erlauchten Geburt beider Herrscher die Rede ist. Die Prozessionen, die in Rom anläßlich des Janusfestes stattfanden³⁾, erinnern an die Prozessionen der Kyrupaedie⁴⁾. Der Senator Fulvius, der M.A. tadelt, weil er am Janusfeste zu den Gefangenen gegangen war⁵⁾, erinnert an den Daipharnes der Kyrupaedie⁶⁾. M.A. verteidigt sich in einer großen Rede, während Kyros dem unwillig gehorchenden Daipharnes sagen läßt, er brauche seine Dienste nicht mehr. Das Verfahren beider Herrscher bei dieser Gelegenheit zeigt in typischer Weise, wie beide sich von einander unterscheiden: M.A. ist der Held des Wortes, Kyros der Held der Tat.

M.A. spricht von der Erziehung seines Sohnes und berührt dabei die Tugenden, zu denen er ihn durch seine Erzieher geleitet haben möchte⁷⁾. Eben dieselben Tugenden werden bei der Erziehung des Kyros erstrebt.

Die Rede des Panutius und die letzten Reden des M.A.⁸⁾ erinnern stark an die Rede, in der Kyros seinem Sohne Kambyzes vor dem Hinscheiden Ratschläge erteilt⁹⁾. Wohl die weitgreifendste Ähnlichkeit beider Werke besteht darin, daß das Historische nur den Rahmen abgibt zu der erfun-

¹⁾ Ticknor, II. 14.

²⁾ Menendez y Pelayo, Bd. I, S. CCCLXXI.

³⁾ L.A., K. 16. ⁴⁾ Xenophon, *Institutio Cyri*, B. 8. ⁵⁾ L.A., K. 16.

⁶⁾ *Inst. Cyri*, B. 8. ⁷⁾ L.A., K. 6—9. ⁸⁾ L.A., K. 40—48.

⁹⁾ *Inst. Cyri*, B. 8.

denen Lebensbeschreibung zweier durch Gerechtigkeitssinn und Selbstbeherrschung verwandter Herrschernaturen. Diese Eigenschaften werden dem Kyros durch Erziehung zur Politik und zur Tatkraft beigebracht. Die konsequente Betätigung jener Eigenschaften verschafft ihm eine königliche Würde, die als selbstverständlich erscheint. Bei G.s M.A. hingegen sind dieselben Charakterzüge weit mehr die Folge einer wesentlich auf die Ausbildung philosophischer Vernunft abzielenden Erziehung, die M.A. nicht jene Tatkraft verleiht, die Kyros aus militärischer Zucht gewinnt.

Kyros wurde zur Mäßigkeit und zum Ertragen körperlicher Anstrengungen angehalten. In Letzterem ist M.A. gänzlich ungeübt; auch ist er nicht so mäßig wie Kyros. — Kyros ist als Knabe beredsam, M.A. sein ganzes Leben lang. — K.s Unterhaltung war anregend, was auch G. für seinen M.A. beansprucht. — K. war bescheiden in seinem Wesen: G. will dieselbe Eigenschaft seinem M.A. zuerkannt wissen; doch macht dieser, indem er so häufig philosophische Lehren erteilt, keinen ausgesprochen bescheidenen Eindruck. — K. zeigt persönlichen Mut, der dem M.A. fehlt. — Beide sind freigebig: Kyros mehr aus Berechnung als aus Güte. — Beide lieben die Arbeit. — K. vermag mit militärischer Strenge die Ordnung aufrecht zu erhalten, M.A. dagegen redet zu seiner Umgebung in den Wind. — K. und M.A. haben beide einen stark religiösen Zug, der sie an die Götter heftet. Jedes Mal, wenn K. eine große Tat ausführen will, fragt er die Götter durch Opfer, und es wird ihm dann Antwort zuteil durch das Eingreifen der Gottheit, die sich in Naturerscheinungen wie Blitz kundgibt. Auch im Leben M.A.s spielen überirdische Mächte eine Rolle: sie sagen ihm kommendes Unheil voraus¹⁾. — Die Weisheit und Freigebigkeit des Kyros werden wesentlich in der Richtung berechnender Politik betätigt, um die Anhänglichkeit selbst der

¹⁾ Zeller, E., Die Philosophie der Griechen, Leipzig 1880, 3. 1, S. 345 ff.

eben noch feindlich gesinnten zu gewinnen. M.A.s Weisheit verfolgt dagegen hauptsächlich moralische Ziele, wenn sie auch gelegentlich von politischer Berechnung geleitet ist. So ist er den Gefangenen gegenüber huldvoll, weil er damit die Herzen ihrer Völker zu gewinnen hofft.

M.A.s Mangel an Konsequenz, der Widerspruch zwischen seinen philosophischen Theorien und seiner Lebensführung sind Charakterschwächen, von denen Kyros frei ist. Dem körperlich starken und politisch klugen K. gegenüber steht der körperlich eher schwache, seelisch nur immer stark sein wollende M.A. da, dessen andauerndes Philosophieren uns kalt läßt, weil seiner Lebensphilosophie die Grundlage, die entsprechenden Taten, die sie erhärten sollen, fehlt. Im ganzen genommen erscheint uns K., trotzdem er ein berechnender Politiker, ja ein Gewaltmensch ist, menschlicher als M.A.

Das oben dargelegte Verhältnis des L.A. zur Kyrop. führt mich dazu, die Kyrop. als Vorbild für den L.A. auf dem Gebiete des biographischen Romanes anzusehen, so zwar, daß die Kyrop. ein teilweise entgegengesetztes Herrscherideal vertritt. G. selbst berichtet: Xenophon habe ein Buch über die Unterweisung des Fürsten geschrieben, worin dargestellt werde, wie König Kambyzes seinen Sohn Kyros belehrt¹⁾.

Philosophisches.

Der L.A. gehört zu jener typischen Literaturgattung der Renaissance, die der weltlich-praktischen Ethik dient. Er wurde zu einer Zeit geschrieben, als die von Petrarca begründete Richtung der Moralphilosophie ihren Einfluß auf Spanien ausübte. Diese Philosophie suchte in der Hauptsache die stoischen Lehren neu zu beleben, besonders diejenigen der römischen Kaiserzeit, die bei Petrarca selbst und während des 15. und 16. Jhdts. mit christlichen Vorstellungen vermischt wurden²⁾. Auch der hervorragendste

¹⁾ Relox, Prologo general.

²⁾ Vgl. Dilthey, Archiv f. Gesch. d. Philos. IV. 631.

Denker Spaniens zu jener Zeit, Ludovicus Vives (1492—1540), ist in seiner Ethik von der Stoa tief beeinflusst¹⁾.

Die Übereinstimmungen, die zwischen den „Selbstbetrachtungen“ des historischen M.A. und dem L.A. bestehen, lassen keinen Zweifel darüber, daß G. die Selbstbetr. gekannt hat. Weil aber die Selbstbetr. erst 1558 in Zürich von Gulielmus Xylander (in lateinischer Sprache) gedruckt wurden, kann G. einen Druck derselben nicht gekannt, er muß vielmehr eine Hs. benutzt haben. Da nun bis zum heutigen Tage in Florenz drei Bruckstücke von Handschriften der Selbstbetr. aufbewahrt werden²⁾, so könnte man annehmen, daß G. sie in Florenz sah — er gibt ja bekanntlich an, daß er seine Geschichte M.As in Florenz gefunden habe³⁾. — Die in seinem Werke enthaltenen Grundlehren hat er offenbar der Philosophie des historischen M.A. entlehnt.

Für den historischen M.A. gehört der Mensch völlig zur Allnatur. Er ist ein zur Tätigkeit⁴⁾ bestimmtes geselliges⁵⁾ Wesen, dessen höchstes Ziel darin besteht, in Einklang mit der Natur zu leben⁶⁾. Durch seine höchste Gabe, die Vernunft, soll er alle Affekte unterdrücken, um eine heitere Seelenruhe⁷⁾ zu erreichen, die ihn über alles Vergängliche⁸⁾ erhebt. Er wird dann den Tod als ein Gut betrachten, welches der Allnatur zuträglich ist⁹⁾.

Das Verhältnis von G.s M.A. zur Natur ist nicht so ausgeprägt monistisch; häufig zieht er indes die Natur zum Vergleich heran, wenn er nämlich einer moralischen Handlung

¹⁾ Vgl. Ueberweg-Heinze, Grundriß der Geschichte der Philosophie, Berlin 1907, III. S. 37.

²⁾ Watson, S. 310.

³⁾ L.A., Prolog; Relox, Prolog.

⁴⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.E. α, S. 47.

⁵⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.E. ις, S. 57 u. B.Γ, ζ, S. 26.

⁶⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.IB. α, S. 156.

⁷⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.A. η, S. 3.

⁸⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.Θ. λ, S. 121.

⁹⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.IB. xδ', S. 163.

durch Analogie eine Grundlage geben will¹⁾. So stellt G. einen Naturmenschen als Vertreter der Wahrheit und der Gerechtigkeit den verderbten Römern gegenüber²⁾. G.s M.A. ist ferner heiter, liebenswürdig³⁾ und gesellig⁴⁾. — Der leitende Grundsatz seiner Pädagogik ist, gut zu handeln, denn darauf beruht die Tugend und der Erfolg. Die Ethik des G.schen M.A. hat zum Grundbegriff die Weisheit, wie sie sich bei Sokrates und in den früheren Dialogen Platos findet. Sie unterscheidet sich von der späteren Ethik des Plato (Republik, usw.) darin, daß bei der letzteren die Tugend zwei Quellen hat, während die einheitliche stoische Tugend von G.s M.A. ausschließlich aus der Weisheit her stammt. Die Weisheit führt zum Guten⁵⁾: sie ist göttlich⁶⁾ und vereinigt den Menschen mit den Göttern. Diese sokratische Weisheit steht hier anstelle der Vernunft in den Selbstbetr. Die Weisheit muß für G.s M.A. zur Unterdrückung der Affekte⁷⁾ und zur Überwindung des Leidens führen⁸⁾. G.s M.A. aber erliegt oft seinen Affekten und besitzt daher nicht die Festigkeit des historischen M.A. Er strebt aber danach, die stoische Seelenruhe zu bewahren, was ihm auch, als die Nachrichten über die Landung der Mauritanier in Großbritannien eintreffen, gelingt. Er ist nicht immer Herr seiner Gefühle: der Schmerz über den Tod des Verissimus überwältigt ihn so, daß er mehrere Tage lang nicht in den Senat geht. Auch fürchtet er den Tod, obwohl er vorgibt, nur darum betrübt zu sein, weil er Commodus zurücklasse. Er tröstet sich aber mit der Hoffnung, daß er durch den Tod mit den Göttern zusammenkomme⁹⁾. Das Verhältnis von Gott zur Natur ist für G.s M.A. ein dualistisches (wie bei der römischen Stoa). Dies zeigt sich in dem Eingreifen der Gottheit in menschliche Dinge¹⁰⁾. Die Verkündung künftigen Unglücks durch un-

¹⁾ Der stoische Begriff der Natur ist die unbewußte Triebfeder bei allen Anziehungen der Natur durch G.s M.A.

²⁾ L.A., K. 30, 31.

³⁾ L.A., K. 14.

⁴⁾ L.A., K. 15.

⁵⁾ L.A., K. 30.

⁶⁾ L.A., K. 7.

⁷⁾ L.A., K. 7.

⁸⁾ L.A., K. 15.

⁹⁾ L.A., K. 43.

¹⁰⁾ L.A., K. 26 (Das sizilische Ungeheuer).

natürliche Geschehnisse, z. B. durch Regen von Milch und Blut¹⁾ und durch den Tod von drei Paar Tieren, indem eines wenige Tage nach dem anderen zu den Füßen des Kaisers stirbt¹⁾, beruht auf der stoischen Mantik²⁾. Da die Weisheit den Grundbegriff der Philosophie von G.s M.A. bildet, versteht es sich von selbst, daß er die geistigen Güter über Alles schätzt. Daraus folgt auch, daß G.s M.A. das geistige Heldentum dem kriegerischen überordnet, was ebenso in den „Selbstbetrachtungen“³⁾ vorkommt. — Als Aristokraten des Geistes kommen beide M.A. zur Geringschätzung der unwissenden Menge⁴⁾. — Über den Ruhm gehen ihre Meinungen auseinander: der historische M.A. hält ihn bei der Vergänglichkeit aller Dinge für wertlos⁵⁾, während G.s M.A., als echter Renaissancesproß, ihn sehr hoch schätzt und ihn auf die Weisheit gründet⁶⁾.

Soziologisches.

Auf der Weisheit beruht das Herrscherrecht von G.s M.A. Seinem soziologischen Gedankengange kann man den Satz zu Grunde legen: Fürsten sind unter der Voraussetzung gewählt, daß sie mehr wissen als andere⁷⁾. Der Weise soll gut sein⁸⁾: dann wird er gewaltig⁹⁾ werden können. — Die Faulheit führt zur Bosheit und ist also dem Staate schädlich¹⁰⁾. Selbst das Schlechte im Leben der Fürsten wird vom Volke nachgeahmt; man ist freilich nicht verpflichtet, den Fürsten darin zu folgen¹¹⁾; ihre rechtmäßigen Befehle aber soll man ausführen. — Kurz: das Volk soll vom Fürsten zur Tugend geführt werden, der Fürst soll der Erzieher seines Volkes sein. — Der Thron ist auf dem Willen

¹⁾ L.A., K. 28.

²⁾ Vgl. Zeller, 3.1., S. 342 ff. und 3.2., S. 254.

³⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.H. γ, S. 96.

⁴⁾ L.A., K. XII; τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.A. ις.

⁵⁾ τὰ εἰς ἑαυτόν, B.Θ, λ', S. 121.

⁶⁾ L.A., K. 25.

⁷⁾ L.A., K. 30.

⁸⁾ L.A., K. 7.

⁹⁾ L.A., K. 25.

¹⁰⁾ L.A., K. 23, 25.

¹¹⁾ L.A., K. 4.

des Volkes aufgebaut, und die Liebe ist daher für politische Zwecke ein besseres Mittel als die Furcht¹⁾. M.A. setzt sich in unmittelbare Berührung mit den Leuten, um die Ursachen ihrer Unzufriedenheit kennen zu lernen²⁾. Dieser weiseste aller Kaiser ist zugleich der tugendhafteste aller Menschen. In ihm ist Platos Ideal, wonach die Philosophen Könige und die Könige Philosophen sein sollten, verwirklicht worden³⁾. Er verdient also, das Musterbild der Fürsten zu sein. — Dieses milde, passive Ideal des stoischen Weisen verträgt sich gut mit der christlichen Anschauung des G., und, wie sich in seiner Bevorzugung der Wissenschaft gegenüber dem Kriege zeigt, ist es ganz dem starren Machtideal von Machiavellis „Principe“ (1513) entgegengesetzt.

Seinem soziologischen Ziele nach ist der L.A. ein Fürstenspiegel. Als solchem ist ihm in Spanien eine reiche Literatur vorangegangen, deren moralisierende Elemente auf „Kalila wa Dimna“⁴⁾ (in kastilianischer Sprache) zurückgehen. Das erste bedeutende Denkmal dieser Literatur ist der „Libro de los castigos é documentos“ (1292), von Sancho dem Tapferen für seinen Sohn Fernando geschrieben⁵⁾, und Raimund Lulls „Blanquerna“⁶⁾, ein pädagogischer Utopie-Roman, der unter dem Einflusse von Platos „Republik“ steht. Dem „Blanquerna“ auf sozialem Gebiet ähnlich⁷⁾ und durch ihn veranlaßt ist der „Libro de los Estados“ des Infanten Juan Manuel, dessen berühmtes „Libro de los Enxiemplos del Conde Lucanor et de Patronio“ (1335) aus Erzählungen besteht, welche alle eine für Fürsten und Adelige berechnete Moralphorschrift erläutern sollen. Im 15. Jhdt.

¹⁾ L.A., K. 17.

²⁾ L.A., K. 18.

³⁾ Rep. é, 18.

⁴⁾ Vgl. Menendez y Pelayo, Bd. I, S. XVIff.

⁵⁾ Vgl. Menendez y P., Bd. I, S. LXXI.

⁶⁾ *El Blanquerna, . . . merece con toda propiedad el título de novela social y pedagógica* (Menendez y P., Bd. 1, S. LXXX).

⁷⁾ Vgl. Menendez y P., Bd. I, S. LXXXVIII.

schrieb Alfonso de la Torre seine für die Erziehung des Prinzen von Viana berechnete „*Vision delectable de la filosofia y artes liberales*“, die unter dem Einflusse von Boëthius’ „*De consolatione*“ steht¹⁾. Der Humanismus förderte in Spanien die Kenntniss der Literatur über Fürstenerziehung. Dabei wurden besonders die Fürstenspiegel von Thomas Aquinas und seinem Schüler Egidio Colonna weiteren Kreisen bekannt.

Thomas Aquinas (1225—1274) schrieb einen in vier Bücher zerfallenden Fürstenspiegel „*De Regimine Principum*“, den er Hugo II. (1269) von Cyprien gewidmet haben soll und worin dem Fürsten Ratschläge erteilt werden²⁾.

Egidio Colonna oder Gilles de Rome (1427?—1316) schrieb seinerseits auf Ersuchen des Kronprinzen Philipp, des späteren Philipp des Schönen, und unter dem Einflusse seines verehrten Lehrers Thomas den Traktat „*De regimine Principum*“ (1285?), den er dem Kronprinzen widmete³⁾. Dieses Werk besteht aus drei Büchern, von denen das erste besonders die Lebensführung des Fürsten betrifft. Das zweite handelt besonders vom Regiment des Fürsten in der Familie, und das dritte von der Verwaltung des Staates durch den Fürsten. Colonna geht bei der Besprechung der Tugenden, die ein Fürst haben sollte, von Platos *Summum bonum* aus. Von der Selbstbeherrschung des Fürsten wie von den Sitten der Jungen und Alten wird ausführlich gehandelt. Das 2. Buch erläutert das Verhältnis von Mann und Weib, das der Eltern zu den Kindern und das des Herrn zu den Dienern. Den Kindern soll man die Mittel zur Verfügung stellen, um gut zu leben, und ihnen eine angemessene Erziehung angedeihen lassen. Fürstenskinder sollten vor allem die moralischen Wissenschaften kennen lernen, um sich selbst und andere beherrschen zu

¹⁾ Vgl. Menendez y P., Bd. I, S. CXXIII.

²⁾ Hist. litt. de la France, XXX, 524.

³⁾ Hist. litt. de la France, XXX, 421—3.

können. Auch sozial-ökonomische Fragen, wie Grundlage, Zuwachs und richtige Verwendung des Vermögens, werden behandelt. — Das dritte Buch hebt an mit der Darlegung der Staatstheorien von Plato, Aristoteles und anderen Philosophen. Daran schließt sich eine Betrachtung über die beste Regierungsform. Colonna stellt dann die Pflichten eines Königs im Frieden und im Kriege dar, wobei er zugleich von militärischen Taktiken, von Festungen, von der Belagerung von Schlössern und Städten und vom Schiffsbau spricht. — Colonnas Werk ist wohl der einflußreichste Fürstenspiegel der Humanistenzeit. Es soll erst 1491 zu Sevilla in einer Folioausgabe unter dem Titel „Regimento de principes, seu Ægidi Romani de Regimine principum opus“ erschienen sein¹⁾. — Die Dreiteilung in Colonnas Fürstenspiegel diente höchst wahrscheinlich dem G. als Muster für die Disposition des Relox.

Augenscheinlich unter dem Einfluß von Colonnas „Regimento de principes“ entstand der allegorisch-politische Roman „Regimento de Principes ó gobierno del rey Prudenciano en el reino de la Verdad“ vom Jahre 1518, dessen Hs. seit 1838 verloren ist. Es ist wahrscheinlich, daß dieses Werk eins der wichtigsten Vorbilder für G.s L.A. (1518—24) gewesen ist.

2. Bertauts „Livre dore“ 1531.

A. Überlieferung.

Die erste Ausgabe des von Rene Bertaut (oder Berthault) de la Grise ins Französische übersetzten „Libro Avreo“ ist im Brit. Mus. (521. e. 1) durch ein Exemplar vertreten. Auf dem Titelblatt steht:

¹⁾ In der Pariser Bibliothèque Nationale findet sich ein Exemplar der durch den Deutschen Ungut und den Polen Stanislas zu Sevilla 1494 gedruckten Ausgabe.

Liure dore de marc

Aurele empereur et eloquent orateur / Tra-
duict de / vulgaire Castillian en François
par R. B. / de la grise Secretaire de mon-
seigneur / le reuerendissime Cardinal de
gramont, Nouuellement
imprime a Paris.

¶ Avec priuilege.

∞ On les vend a Paris en la grant salle du Palais en la
boutique de Gaillot du pre libraire iure de l'uniuersite de
Paris.

¶ Mil. D. C. XXXI.

„*Nouuellement imprime a Paris*“ ist eine Nachbildung
des sp. „*Nueuamente impresso*“. „*Nouuellement*“ bedeutet
hier also nicht „von neuem“, sondern „neulich, kürzlich“. Das Buch ist in 4^o und in gotischen Buchstaben gedruckt (Brit. Mus. 521. e. 1).

Blatt 2 enthält die königliche Druck- und Verkaufserlaubnis; diese steht unter einem Holzschnitt, der das von zwei Engeln gehaltene französische Königswappen darstellt. Blatt 3 bringt die Widmung an Königin Margarete von Navarra, die Schwester Franz I. Auf den sechs folgenden Seiten ist der Inhalt der 48 Kapitel und 19 Briefe, den sp. Ausgaben von 1529 entsprechend, verzeichnet. Auf dem nächsten Blatt (als Folio I bezeichnet) fängt der Prolog an, der bis Fol. III reicht. Mit Fol. IIII beginnt das 1. Kapitel. Die Kapitel enden Fol. XCIX, wo die Briefe anfangen, die bis Fol. XCIX reichen; hierauf folgt die Schlußbemerkung des Herausgebers bis zu Fol. CLXXIIII. Daran schließt sich folgende Anmerkung: „¶ *Le present volume de Marc aurele empereur / autrement dit le liure dor a este acheue dimprimer le premier iour Dauril*

mil cinq cens XXX. Par Nicolas cousteau Imprimeur demourant a Paris pour Galliot du pre libraire iure de Luniuersite dudit lieu.“ Da nun aber die königliche Erlaubnis zum Druck und Verkauf erst am 24. April 1531 erteilt wurde, muß irgend ein besonderer Grund für das Nachholen der Erlaubnis vorhanden gewesen sein. Es ist möglich, daß Bert. seine Hs. aus Italien nach Paris schickte, erst ein Jahr später am Hofe eintraf und persönlich die Erlaubnis zur Veröffentlichung seiner Übersetzung nachsuchte. Sicher aber ist diese Ausgabe die erste, die in Frankreich überhaupt erschien.

Die Pariser Bibliothèque Nationale besitzt ein 4^o-Exemplar des „Livre dore“, das eine Ausgabe zu vertreten scheint, die ein bloßer Abdruck der Ausgabe von 1531 ist. Es wurde am 10. April 1533, auch von Nicolas Cousteau, fertig gedruckt.

B. Veranlassung zur Übersetzung.

Da Karls V. Reich gerade diejenigen Länder umfaßte, in denen der Humanismus seine höchste Blüte entfaltet hatte, so ist es nicht verwunderlich, daß viele literarische Strömungen des Humanismus an seinem Hofe sich kreuzten. Auch die auswärtigen Gesandten waren an der humanistischen Literatur beteiligt. Von ihnen war um 1525 Baldassar Castiglione, der Gesandte Clemens VII., der bedeutendste. Er hat in Spanien seinen „Cortegiano“ vollendet, so daß das Buch 1528 zu Venedig erscheinen konnte. Er starb 1529 zu Toledo.

Anfang 1526 kam der Kardinal de Grantmont, Erzbischof von Toulouse, an den spanischen Hof, um im Auftrage der Regentin Frankreichs über die Freilassung Franz I.¹⁾ zu verhandeln. Sekretär des Kardinals war bei dieser Gelegenheit Rene Berthault de la Grise, der

¹⁾ Franz I. wurde am 18. März 1526 freigelassen.

über seinen Aufenthalt in Spanien berichtet: „cōme le temps descouvre toutes choses | & faict venir au poinct par congnoissance et experience | loccasson de ceste mienne entreprinse des lanne mil cinq cens vingt six & vingt & sept | soubz feu de bonne memoire messire Gabriel cardinal de grāmōnt au dernier voyage quil feist en Espagne | ou demeura vng an entier | et en cest an les quatre derniers moys que la maieste de cesar Charles cinquiesme detint le dit feu seigneur renomme | prisonnier | et nous aultres avecques luy | Et la (pour et a celle fin que ie occupasse le temps) me gestay aux liures que ie peuz trouuer au dit lieu | entre lesquelz leuz le petit liure dore lequel me tyra tant de moy que tout le iour ne la plus grande partie de la nuict ne me suffisoient tāt pour le lire que pōur lescripre“¹⁾.

Die erste Übersetzung von G.s Erstlingswerk war also eine Folge von Karls V. Sieg bei Pavia (1525)²⁾. Die große Anziehungskraft, die G.s Buch auf Bert. ausübte, läßt sich leicht verstehen, wenn man bedenkt, daß seine hervorragende Stellung am Hofe ihn mit dem französischen höfischen Renaissancegeschmack vertraut machen mußte. Es war eben die Zeit, als die große französische Renaissancebewegung der zweiten Hälfte des 16. Jahrhunderts sich vorbereitete, und nur einige Jahre vor dem entscheidenden Schritt des französischen Humanismus, nämlich der Gründung des Collège de France (1530)³⁾. Diese Gründung wurde von Franz I. veranlaßt, welcher auch folgende Erlaubnis gab: „FRancoys par la grace de dieu roy de France . . . Rene berthault secretaire de nostre cher et ayme cousin le cardi-

¹⁾ L'orloge des Princes . . . Paris 1550, Prologue du traducteur.

²⁾ Franz I. regte während seiner Madrider Gefangenschaft die erste Übertragung des Amadis ins Französische an. Der „Livre dore“ ist also die zweite Übersetzung eines höchst wichtigen Werkes der spanischen Literatur, die durch jenen dynastischen Einfluß veranlaßt wurde.

³⁾ Vgl. Dilthey, A. f. G. d. P. IV. 647.

nal de Grantmont nous a fait dire et remonſtrer que puis certain tēps en cas eſtāt au ſervice de noſtre dit couſin tant es Eſpaignes que Italles pour noz affaires pour eüter et fuyr ouſiueſte ſe ſeroit occupe a traduyre et mettre de langage eſpaignol en vulgaire francois le liure dor de Marc aurele empereur oeuvre ſinguliere de grant erudiction et proffit. Lequel liure feroit volentiers imprimer et mettre en euidence ſi noſtre plaifir eſtoit luy permettre nous humblement requerrant ce faire. Pourquoy nous ces choſes cōſiderees deſirans de tout noſtre pouuoir faire florir les bonnes lettres en noſtre royaulme et mettre en euidence. Et autres cauſes a ce nous mouuās au dit Berthault auons permis . . . q̄l puiſſe faire imprimer et vendre le dit liure de Marc aurele par luy traduit . . . par Galliot du pre libraire iure de noſtre vniuerſite de Paris . . . Donne a Vannes le. XXIIII^e. iour Dauril lan de grace Mil cinq cens XXXI. Et de noſtre regne le XVII^e¹⁾. Bemerkenswert iſt der hier bekundete Wunsch des Königs, „die Literatur zur Blüte zu bringen“, weil er zu einer Zeit ausgesprochen wird, als Franz I., Petrus Castellanus und Budaeus ihre mächtige Anregung zu der Renaissancebewegung in Frankreich vom Hofe aus gaben²⁾.

Nach der Befreiung des Kardinals de Grantmont finden wir dieſen mit Bert. 1529 in Rom, wo letzterer weiteres Interesse für M.A. bekundet. Mit Begeisterung erzählt er von den Nachforschungen, die ihn zu der Entdeckung führten, daß das Reiterstandbild auf dem Lateran, welches nach einer alten römischen Volkssage einen Bauern darſtellt, der die Stadt befreit hatte, ein Denkmal des M.A. ſei³⁾.

Die innere Ursaſche von Bert.s Interesse an M.A. lag, wie es in der Widmung des Buches an die Königin von Navarra, die Schwester Franz I., heißt, in den „*profonds et*

¹⁾ L'orloge des Princes . . . 1550.

²⁾ Vgl. Dilthey, A. f. G. d. P. IV. 647.

³⁾ L'orloge, Prolog. — Dies iſt das berühmte Reiterstandbild M.A.s, das ſeit 1538 auf dem Kapitolplatz in Rom ſteht.

vertueux enseignements“ von G.s Darstellung, die für ihn die Hauptveranlassung zu seiner Übersetzung gewesen sind.

Nach dem Tode des Kardinals (1534)¹⁾ trat Bert. in den Dienst des Dauphin ein. Daß G.s Geschichte des M.A. noch immer den Mittelpunkt seines literarischen Interesses bildete, beweist seine Übersetzung des „Relox“, der, als „L'orloge“ dem Dauphin gewidmet, 1540 erschien. Für die Popularität des „Livre dore“ zeugen seine zahlreichen französischen Ausgaben²⁾.

3. Lord Berners' „Golden Boke“ 1535.

A. Überlieferung.

Das Erscheinungsjahr der ältesten Ausgabe des „Golden Boke“ wird verschieden angegeben. Übrigens erfährt man gewöhnlich nicht, wo die Exemplare dieser Ausgabe einzusehen waren. 1534 als Erscheinungsjahr findet sich angegeben bei: Ames, I, 425; Lowndes, I, 54; Hazlitt, S. 246, hat die folgende Angabe aus einem Exemplar des G. B.: „[Col.] *Thus endeth the volume . . ., ended at Calais y tenth daie of Marche in the yere of the reigne of our soueraygne lorde Kyng Henry VIII. the xxiiii. Londini in aedibus Thomae Bertheleti. MDXXXIII. 8^o B. L.*“; Lee, Euphuism, S. 49; Landmann, S. XVI f.: „*The earliest edition I have seen in the Brit. Mus. appeared 1534*“; Underhill, S. 375; Bond, S. 137; Hume, S. 56; Wilson, S. 22.

Nur Child (S. 26) gibt 1532 als Jahr der ersten Veröffentlichung des G.B. an. Übrigens hat Herbert 1534 ein-

¹⁾ Biographie Universelle, IV. 123.

²⁾ Außer der 4^o-Ausgabe von 1534 gibt es andere in Folio von 1535, in 8^o von 1537 und in 16^o (Biographie Universelle, IV. 123).

geklammert und diese Jahreszahl damit wahrscheinlich als zweifelhaft hinstellen wollen. — Landmann will die Ausgabe von 1534 im Brit. Mus. gesehen haben. Wo findet sich aber ein Exemplar der Ausgabe, deren „Colophon“ von Hazlitt abgeschrieben wurde und die Landmann sah? — Ich habe keine Ausgabe von 1534 finden können. Die älteste Ausgabe im Brit. Mus. wurde erst 1538 gedruckt, und daher kann die oben genannte Ausgabe, die Landmann gesehen haben will, nicht dem Brit. Mus. angehören. Vielleicht hat Landmann durch die Museumsverwaltung ein damals (1887) zur Althorp-Bibliothek des Earl Spencer gehörendes Exemplar des G.B. zu sehen bekommen. Dies Buch ist heute im Katalog der John Rylands Library zu Manchester in folgender Weise unter Aurelius Antoninus belegt: „*The golden boke of Marcus Aurelius Emperour and eloquent oratour. Translated by J. Bouchier, Knyghte, lorde Barners. 8.^{vo} Thomas Berthelet, London [1534]*“. Über dieses Buch erfuhr ich aus Manchester, daß die Jahreszahl ausradiert und 1534 handschriftlich an deren Stelle gesetzt worden ist. Unter der architektonischen Umrahmung des Titels findet sich nämlich die Zahl 1534, die sich allerdings auf das Jahr beziehen kann, in dem die Umrahmung gemacht wurde, weil damals solche Titelumrahmungen jahrelang in einer Druckerei beim Druck verschiedener Bücher gleichen Formats benutzt wurden. Da die Schlußbemerkung dieser Ausgabe zu den von Berthelet 1553 und 1559 gedruckten 8^o-Ausgaben stimmt, so ist anzunehmen, daß das Manchester-Exemplar eine dieser beiden Ausgaben vertritt. Wenn dieses Buch auf dem Titelblatt den handschriftlichen Vermerk „*W^m Herbert 1775*“ aufweist, so erklärt dies auch, warum der oben zitierte (mit diesem offenbar identische) Herbert „[1534]“ als Erscheinungsjahr angibt.

Die älteste mir bekannte Ausgabe (in 4^o) ist die von 1535 in der Bodleiana, wo auch ein Exemplar der Ausgabe von 1536 vorhanden ist. Diese beiden Exemplare

und die beiden ältesten von 1539 (1538 gedruckt) und 1542 des Brit. Mus. vertreten vier 4^o-Ausgaben, die von Thomas Berthelet in derselben Weise gedruckt worden sind. Die Größe und die ganze Anlage dieser Ausgaben stimmen mit der französischen von 1531 vollkommen überein; sie sind die ältesten mir bekannten Ausgaben. Ferner habe ich im Brit. Mus. Exemplare einer Reihe anderer Ausgaben in 8^o und in deutschen Buchstaben aus den Jahren 1553, 1557, 1559, 1566, 1573 und 1586 gesehen. Die von 1553 und 1559 sind bei Berthelet erschienen; die von 1557 hat A. Vele, die von 1566 und 1573 John Awdeley und die von 1586 Thomas East gedruckt. Die Ausgabe von 1535 enthält außer dem Titelblatt 344 bedruckte Seiten; die Buchstaben sind deutsch. Der Titel lautet:

THE GOLDEN
BOKE OF MARKVS AVRELIVS EMPEROVR
AND ELOQVENT ORATOVV
ANNO M. D. XXXV.

Auf dem nächsten Blatt beginnt das Inhaltsverzeichnis der 48 Kapitel und 19 Briefe (ganz mit dem Inhaltsverzeichnis der französischen Ausgabe von 1531 und der entsprechenden Antwerpener spanischen von 1529 übereinstimmend). Die Inhaltsangabe nimmt 4¹/₈ Seiten ein. Es folgt G.s Prolog auf weiteren 7 Seiten. Auf dem nächsten Blatt fängt das eigentliche Werk an, dessen Numerierung (167 Folios) auf der zweiten Seite beginnt. Unten auf der zweiten Seite von Folio 165 endet der letzte Brief; daran schließt sich folgende Bemerkung: „*¶ THVS ENDETH THE GOLDEN Boke of the eloquent Marc Aurelie emperour: . . . Certainly as great prayse as oughte to be gyuen to the auctour, is to be gyuen to the tranflatours, that haue laboriously reduced this treatyse oute of Greke into Latin, and out of Latin into Castilian, and out of Castilian into frenche, and out of frenche into englishe, written in high and swete styles . . .*“

Diese das ganze Werk betreffende Anmerkung rührt nicht von Bern. her, wie Landmann behauptet, oder von Sir Francis Bryan, wie Sidney Lee (Athenaeum No. 2907, S. 49) als möglich annimmt, sondern, wie vorher gezeigt wurde, von dem Herausgeber einer der ersten drei unerlaubten Ausgaben des L.A., nach der die spanischen Antwerpener und Pariser Ausgaben von 1529 gedruckt wurden. Sie lautet im spanischen Original: „*AQui haze fin el libro aureo del eloquentissimo Marco Aurelio emperador, . . . Pero por cierto no se le deve menos al autor que con grandes trabajos & vigiliass traduziendolo del Griego en latin: y del latin en castellano por tan alto y dulce estilo lo escriuio . . .*“ Ein Vergleich der beiden oben gegebenen Stellen ergibt, daß die Dankesworte an den Verfasser, welche zuerst im Original begegnen, späterhin durch eine Hinzufügung auf Bert. und Bern. ausgedehnt wurden. — Die letzte Druckseite des Buches enthält die häufig zitierte Bemerkung des Druckers: „*Thus endeth the volume of Marke Aurelie emperour otherwise called the golden boke, translated out of Frenche into englyshe by John Bouchier knyghte | lorde Barners, deputie generall of the Kynges | towne of Caleys and marches of the same, | at the instant desyre of his neuewe syr | Francis Bryan knyghte, ended*

*at Caleys the teneth day of
Marche, in the yere
of the reygne
of oure
Soueraygne lorde Kynge
Henry the VIII.
the XXIII.“*

Wir ersehen übrigens hieraus, wie auch aus den entsprechenden Anmerkungen der folgenden Quarto-Ausgaben von 1536, 1539 und 1542, daß die Übersetzung des Werkes am 10. März 1532 zu Calais beendet wurde, während in den vorhin genannten Oktavo-Ausgaben bemerkt wird: „*endea*

at Calais the tenth day of Marche, in the yere of the reygne of oure fouerayn lorde Kynge HENRY the VIII. the XXIIII“ (d. h. 1533). Anscheinend irrtümlich wird hier die Beendigung der Übersetzung auf den 10. März 1533 verlegt. Es wäre zwar auch möglich, daß eine beabsichtigte Korrektur vorliegt, da aber die vier ältesten mir bekannten Ausgaben von 1535, 1536, 1539 und 1542 (von Berthelet gedruckt) in der Angabe: „*in the yere . . of . . Kynge Henry the VIII the XXIIII*“ übereinstimmen, ist nicht anzunehmen, daß man erst 1553 ein so wichtiges Datum bewußt geändert habe. Ich halte vielmehr daran fest, daß die Übersetzung des „Livre dore“ am 10. März 1532 beendet worden ist. Das „*ended at Caleys*“ bezieht sich jedenfalls auf das Übersetzen. Auf das Drucken bezieht sich dagegen die folgende Schlußanmerkung:

LONDINI IN AEDIBVS THO-
MAE BERTHLETI RE
GII IMPRESSORIS
CVM PRIVILEGIO A RE
GE INDVLTO.

Hazlitts oben zitierte Angabe stimmt mit dem Schluß der Anmerkung des Herausgebers und mit dem Anfang der Schlußbemerkung (des Druckers) in Berthelets Ausgaben überein. Unmittelbar darauf folgt in Hazlitts Angabe: „MDXXXIIII. 8^o B. Q.“, das sich wahrscheinlich, wie Landmanns Angabe, auf das irreführende Datum des Manchester-Exemplars bezieht. Auf Herbert, Hazlitt oder Landmann fußen in diesem Punkt die Angaben aller übrigen Forscher. — Ich will hier noch die Jahreszahlen der Ausgaben beifügen, die mir nicht zu Gesicht gekommen sind: 1546, 1554, 1556, 1576, 1584, 1587 (nach Underhill bei Lowndes).

Die beträchtliche Zahl der Ausgaben des G.B. bedeutet für die damalige Zeit einen ungewöhnlichen Erfolg, den freilich Lord Berners nicht mehr erlebte, denn er starb bereits am 16. März 1533 oder in den Tagen vorher zu Calais¹⁾.

¹⁾ Vgl. Lee in E.E.T.S., LX, S. XLVI, Anm. 2.‡

B. Veranlassung zur Übersetzung.

Als Bertauts „Livre dore“ erschien, gab es am englischen Hofe einen vornehmen Kreis, der sich um Katharina von Aragonien gebildet hatte und der unmittelbare Beziehungen zu den höfischen Kreisen Spaniens unterhielt. Zu ihm gehörte die Familie von John Bouchier, Lord Berners (1467—1533)¹⁾.

Berners war ein tüchtiger Soldat und Diplomat, der Heinrich VIII. sehr nahe stand²⁾. 1518 wurde er von Wolsey in einer Sondermission nach Spanien geschickt, um dort ein Bündnis zwischen Karl von Spanien und Heinrich VIII. zustande zu bringen. Die Verhandlungen dauerten von April bis Dezember 1518. Berners blieb bis Januar 1519 in Madrid und wird, trotz seiner Krankheit, höchst wahrscheinlich mit dem schon dorthin berufenen Hofprediger Guevara in Berührung gekommen sein. Es ist anzunehmen, daß Berners während dieses Aufenthaltes genug Spanisch lernte, um später beim Übersetzen von Berts „Livre dore“ das Original zum Vergleiche heranziehen zu können. 1519 stand Berners auf der Höhe seines Rufes; aber Krankheit und Schulden führten rasch zu einem großen Wendepunkt in seinem tätigen Leben. Dezember 1520 wurde er Gouverneur (*deputy*) von Calais, wo er bis zu seinem Ableben blieb³⁾.

Die Übersetzung des „Livre dore“ machte Bern. auf Anregung seines Neffen Sir Francis Bryan⁴⁾. Sie wurde unter dem Namen: „The Golden Boke of Marcus Aurelius“ am 10. März 1532 fertig gestellt. Bryan war ein Günstling Heinrichs VIII. und, wie sein Freund der Dichter Wyatt, gehörte er der spanischen Richtung am Hofe an. Bryan war in seiner Lyrik Petrarkist; es läßt sich also

¹⁾ Vgl. Underhill, S. 70 ff.

²⁾ Über Berners' Leben vgl. Lee in E.E.T.S., XL.

³⁾ Bern. starb am 16. März 1533: Lee, Huon S. XLII u. XLVI, Anm. 2.

⁴⁾ GB., Schlußbemerkung des Druckers.

verstehen, daß er für die von Petrarca herrührende stoisch-moralisierende Literaturgattung das genügende Interesse haben konnte, um Veranlasser der Übersetzung des „Livre dore“ zu werden.

Bern.s G.B. ist auch ein wichtiger Beitrag zur Entwicklung des englischen Romans und der englischen Prosa; es bezeichnet zugleich den ersten bedeutenden Einfluß der spanischen Literatur auf die englische.

C. Aufnahmeverbedingungen in England.

Boethiusübersetzungen.

Ansätze zu den philosophisch-soziologischen Gedanken, die in England den Boden für die Aufnahme des G.B. vorbereiteten, sind schon in König Alfreds *Boëthiusübersetzung*, also schon im 9. Jhdt. vorhanden.

Die Philosophie ermahnt den Boëthius im Unglück zur Selbstbeherrschung¹⁾ und zur Selbsterkenntnis²⁾, beide im stoischen Sinne: so wird er all das Gute finden, das er in der äußeren Welt vergeblich sucht³⁾. Stoisch ist die Betonung der Vergänglichkeit des Glücks⁴⁾ und des Ruhmes⁵⁾. Das Glück und (im echt Sokratischen und stoischen Sinne) die Tugend werden aus der Weisheit hergeleitet⁶⁾. — Man soll also der Tugend und nicht dem Ruhm nachjagen⁷⁾. Der Glückliche, also der Weise, ist ein Gott⁸⁾. Die Menge da-

¹⁾ King Alfred's ags. version of Boëthius *De consolatione philosophiae*, ed. S. Fox, Lond. 1895. Kap. XXIX (102). — Boët. lib. III, pr. 5.

²⁾ Alfred, K. V (8). — Boët. lib. I, pr. 5.

³⁾ Alfred, K. XXXV (154). — Boët. lib. III, met. 11.

⁴⁾ Alfred, K. VII (11). — XIV (40). — Boët. lib. II, pr. 5.

⁵⁾ Alfred, K. XVIII (60). — Boët. lib. II, pr. 7.

⁶⁾ Alfred, K. XI (30). — Boët. lib. II, pr. 4 und Alfred, K. XXVII (94). — Boët. lib. III, pr. 4.

⁷⁾ Alfred, K. XVIII (60). — Boët. lib. II, pr. 7.

⁸⁾ Alfred, K. XXXIV (134). — Boët. lib. III, pr. 10.

gegen ist töricht¹⁾. Sie wird daher von der Philosophie verachtet²⁾).

Dieser Stoizismus wird durch die christliche Demut³⁾ und das Vertrauen auf die Liebe Gottes⁴⁾ gemildert. Er stammt aus der römischen Stoa⁵⁾ und erinnert besonders an die mildere Lehre des Epiktet und des M.A., wie denn auch alle oben genannten stoischen Hauptbegriffe in G.s M.A. wiederkehren. Durch mancherlei Hinzufügungen und viele Umgestaltungen entfernt sich Alfred allerdings sehr vom Original.

Geoffrey Chaucer (1340—1400) ließ sich in Italien als Dichter von Dante und Petrarca beeinflussen. Petrarca (1304—74), den Chaucer zu Padua getroffen haben mag⁶⁾, war damals ferner der Führer der italienischen Moral-Philosophie. Wenn Chaucer nach seiner italienischen Reise eine Wendung zu philosophischem Denken zeigt, so ist dies auf den Einfluß des italienischen Rationalismus zurückzuführen, der Chaucer den Anstoß gab zu seiner Übersetzung der „*Consolationes philosophiae*“ des Boëthius. Hier erscheinen die philosophischen Gedanken des Boëthius nicht wie bei Alfred mit christlichen Vorstellungen vermischt, sondern durch größere Genauigkeit der Übersetzung in ihrer ursprünglichen Beschaffenheit. Namentlich der Grundgedanke des Werkes: *Die Vernunft siegt über die Affekte*, wie Plato und die Stoa lehrten⁷⁾, kommt jetzt zu vollerer Geltung.

¹⁾ Alfred, K. XXX (106). — Boët. lib. III, pr. 6.

²⁾ Alfred, K. XXXVIII (194). — Boët. lib. IV, met. 3.

³⁾ Alfred, K. II (4). — Boët. lib. I, met. 1.

⁴⁾ Alfred, K. XXXIX (210). — Boët. lib. IV, met. 4.

⁵⁾ Alfred, K. XXIX (68). — Boët. lib. II, met. 7: Über den Tod des Seneca.

⁶⁾ Chaucer, Clerk of Oxford's Tale-Prologue, Globe Edition 1903, S. 186.

⁷⁾ Vgl. Ueberweg-Heinze, Bd. I (1903), S. 397.

Fürstenspiegel.

Alfred bezweckte mit Boëthius wie mit seinen anderen Werken hauptsächlich die Bildung des Adels. Ähnliche soziologische Bestrebungen verfolgte der um 1165 verfaßte „Policraticus“ des Johann von Salisbury († 1180)¹⁾. Schon hier findet sich in England das Soziologische — zum ersten Male — nach Art der Fürstenspiegel dargestellt. Auch im „Policraticus“ werden, wie in den späteren Fürstenspiegeln, gute Fürsten und Tyrannen zu einander in Gegensatz gebracht²⁾. — Der Fürst soll die Gesetze befolgen und nach dem Willen des Volkes regieren³⁾. Keusch, nicht habgierig⁴⁾, gemäßigt, gerecht und gnädig soll er sein⁵⁾. — Es wird von der Wahl eines Fürsten, von seinen Rechten, von der Weise wie seine Tugend gelohnt wird und von seinen Fehlern gehandelt. Der tugendhafte Hiob wird ihm als Muster vorgehalten⁶⁾. Es wird ferner gezeigt, wie die Sitten des Fürsten auf die Untertanen vorteilhaft oder nachteilig wirken können⁷⁾. Die Folgen von Caligulas und Neros Sittenverderbnis werden dargestellt⁸⁾. Ebenda wird der Unterschied zwischen einem Fürsten und einem Tyrannen wiederum in folgendem Satze gekennzeichnet: „*Princeps pugnat pro legibus et populi libertate: tyrannus nihil actum putat, nisi leges evacuet, et populum devocet in servitutem*“⁹⁾.

Giraldus Cambrensis (1147—1218) schrieb seinen „Liber de principis instructione“, um Fürsten und Prälaten einen Spiegel der Lebensführung zu geben. Ein Fürst

¹⁾ Vgl. ten Brink, I, 229.

²⁾ Johannis Saresberiensis, III, 219 ff.

³⁾ ibid., S. 219: „(principis) . . . hic legi obtemperat, et ejus arbitrio populum regit, cujus se credit ministrum.“

⁴⁾ ibid., III, 230.

⁵⁾ ibid., III, 244.

⁶⁾ ibid., III, 277.

⁷⁾ ibid., III, 285.

⁸⁾ ibid., II.

⁹⁾ ibid., II, 308.

soll folgende Eigenschaften besitzen: sittliche Schönheit, Milde, Schamhaftigkeit, Keuschheit, Geduld, Mäßigkeit, Freigebigkeit, hehren Sinn, Gerechtigkeit, Klugheit, Vorsicht, Bescheidenheit, Mut, Adel¹⁾. G. C. setzt den Unterschied zwischen einem Könige und einem Tyrannen auseinander und weist namentlich auf das blutige Ende der Tyrannen und das lobenswerte Ende guter Fürsten hin. Der Fürst soll vor allem Gott fürchten und lieben²⁾. — G. C. griff zur Bibel und zur alten Geschichte, um durch Beispiele seinen Lehren Nachdruck zu verleihen. So wird Christus als Muster der Geduld, der Gerechtigkeit und der Bescheidenheit vorgeführt. Caesar wird von G. C. als Muster eines mutigen, Antoninus Pius als Muster eines guten und Nero³⁾ als Muster eines tyrannischen Fürsten hingestellt. G. C. hebt ferner hervor, daß das Wissen für die Fürsten nützlich sei⁴⁾ und daß die größten Fürsten sich auch der Literatur gewidmet hätten. G. C. ist in seinem Gedankengange außer durch Plato insbesondere durch die Stoiker Seneca und Cicero⁵⁾ beeinflusst worden. Eine weitere Quelle des G. C. (wie später angeblich des G.) ist Eutropius.

Thomas Hoccleve (1368[9]—1450?), ein Schüler Chaucers, schrieb gegen 1413 sein Werk „The Regement of Princes“ in der Hoffnung, durch den Prinzen, den späteren Heinrich V., aus seiner Geldnot befreit zu werden. In der ersten Hälfte des Werkes bis zum eigentlichen Regement⁶⁾ klagt Hoccleve über seine Armut und wird von einem philosophierenden Bettler, wie Boëthius von der Philosophie, getröstet, indem jener dem H. vor allem die Nachteile des Reichtums und die Vorteile der Armut vor Augen führt⁷⁾.

¹⁾ Giraldus Cambrensis: Liber de principis instructione: K. 1—15.

²⁾ ibid., K. 16—18, 21.

³⁾ ibid., K. 5, 10, 12, 14, 18, 16.

⁴⁾ ibid., K. 11.

⁵⁾ G. C., L. d. p. i., K. 10.

⁶⁾ E. E. T. S., LXXII, Str. 289.

⁷⁾ ibid., Str. 156—8.

Ein König solle eidestreu¹⁾ und gerecht²⁾ sein; großherzig³⁾, freigebig⁴⁾, geliebt und gefürchtet von seinem Volke solle er sein⁵⁾. Die Alten und Weisen solle er zu Rate ziehen⁶⁾ und den Frieden, den Gott liebt, erhalten⁷⁾. Am Schluß ruft H. den christlichen Fürsten zu, sie sollten den Frieden zu erhalten trachten⁸⁾.

Desiderius Erasmus Roterdamus (1467—1536). — Für die Humanisten galt es als eine der Hauptaufgaben, das Christliche mit dem Heidnischen zu versöhnen. Dieses Bestreben tritt überall deutlich hervor, so in den Werken des Erasmus und besonders in der „*Institutio principis Christiani*“ (1516), dem römischen Könige Karl, dem späteren Karl V., gewidmet. — Der erste Fürst wurde wegen seiner Tugend zum Herrscher gewählt. Der Fürst soll von tugendhafter, ruhiger und standhafter Gesinnung sein. Die Laster, zu denen er seiner Natur nach neigt, sollten ehrenwerte Männer durch Erziehung zur Tugend beseitigen. Durch Märchen und Sprüche sollte er zur Tugend erzogen, wacker und fleissig sollte er werden. Vor allem sollte man ihn über Christus belehren. Durch gute Beispiele sollte man ihn zum höchsten Gut, zur Frömmigkeit, führen. — Die Gesinnung macht einen Fürsten, nicht sein Reichthum. Ein christlicher Fürst sollte gerecht und geliebt sein. — Auf der Vernunft soll die Weisheit eines Fürsten beruhen. — Das vorbildliche Leben eines Fürsten vermag die Sitten seines Volkes zu bessern. — Ein Fürst soll Schmeichler meiden. — Salomos Sprüche und Buch der Weisheit, das Evangelium, Plutarchs *Moralia*, Senecas *Moralschriften*, Aristoteles' *Politica* und Ciceros *De officiis* sollte man ihm zur Lektüre geben. — Nach Aristoteles führen Haß und Verachtung die Zersetzung eines Reiches herbei. Gegen den Haß soll man Gutwilligkeit, gegen Verachtung Tapferkeit und Würde ins Feld führen. — Die Bestrebungen eines Fürsten sollten allen

¹⁾ E.E.T.S., LXXII, Str. 318 ff. ²⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 360. ³⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 558. ⁴⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 590. ⁵⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 689 f. ⁶⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 706—8. ⁷⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 744 ff. ⁸⁾ *ibid.*, Str. 774 ff.

Bürgern von Nutzen sein. — Ein frommer und weiser Fürst ist ein lebendiges Gesetz. — Die verkehrten Meinungen des schlechten und gemeinen Volkes sind die Ursache vieler Laster. — Die Beamten sollen nicht durch Bestechung ihre Ämter erlangen, sondern durch Frömmigkeit und die Erfahrung des Alters. — Bündnisse darf ein Fürst nur zum Wohle der Gesamtheit schließen. — Man soll mit seinen Nachbarn in Frieden leben. — Der Fürst muß ein sittliches Eheleben führen. Seine Frau soll gehorsam und fromm sein. Geschlechtliche Ausschweifungen der Fürsten führen zu Aufruhr und Krieg. — Der Fürst hat die Gesetze zu verbessern. — Die vorbildliche Weisheit frommer Fürsten, die Redlichkeit frommer Beamten, das ehrenhafte und fromme Leben der Priester sowie die guten Lehren der Schulmeister können das niedere Volk heben. — Bevor ein Fürst in den Krieg zieht, soll er die Vorteile des Friedens und die Nachteile, die er durch den Krieg vielen Unschuldigen zufügt, genau abwägen. — Die Prediger haben die Begierde im Volke auszurotten. — Alle Fürsten sollen auf die Erhaltung des Friedens bedacht sein, und alle Nationen als Christen in Frieden leben.

Sir Thomas Elyots (1495?–1546) „Governour“ (1531) will hauptsächlich ein Wegweiser sein, um künftige Staatsmänner zu einer tugendhaften Lebensführung und dadurch zum Wohle des Staates zu erziehen¹⁾. Vom Staatsmann geht Elyot über zum Herrscher, so daß sein Buch eine breitere Art des Fürstenspiegels darstellt. — Nur ein Herrscher sollte den Staat regieren. — Die Erziehung der künftigen Staatsmänner, sowie die Anordnung ihres Unterrichts wird eingehend behandelt. Mit großer Sorgfalt sollten die Erzieher ausgewählt werden. — Ein junger Herrscher sollte zu seinem Nutzen und Vergnügen körperliche Übungen anstellen. Selbst das Tanzen kann ihm dazu dienen, die Besonnenheit, die erste der Tugenden, sich anzueignen. Vor-

¹⁾ Governour II (Schluß).

sicht, Fleiß, Umsicht, Erfahrung und Bescheidenheit sollen einen Fürsten auszeichnen. Ein Herrscher sollte vor allem „*lerne wisdom and fall nat*“¹⁾. Die Majestät seiner Person soll bestehen in „*a beautie or comelynesse in his countenance, langage and gesture apt to his dignitie, and accomodate to time, place, and company*“²⁾. Vor Stolz soll diese Majestät durch edle Gesinnung bewahrt werden. Liebenswürdig und barmherzig, gütig und freigebig soll ein Fürst sein. — Die Freundschaft wird gepriesen, die Undankbarkeit verdammt. — Gerechtigkeit soll Freunden und Feinden gegenüber geübt werden. Treue, Beständigkeit, Geduld und Edelmut werden gelobt, dagegen werden die Nachteile der Hartnäckigkeit und des Ehrgeizes hervorgehoben. Es wird erklärt, was Enthaltbarkeit wirklich bedeute, daß Mäßigung nur ein Teil derselben sei. Die Weisheit definiert Elyot nach Cicero als „*the science of things diuine and humaine, which considereth the cause of euery thing, by reason wherof that which is diuine she foloweth, that which is humane she esteemith ferre vnder the goodness of vertue*“³⁾. — Erfahrung ist für einen Herrscher unbedingt notwendig. — Wie man aus Ratschlägen Vorteil ziehen könne, wird ferner erörtert.

Die oben gegebene Gedankenfolge zeigt die soziologischen Ziele des „Governour“, die nach Elyot nur durch eine sittliche Lebensführung erreichbar sind. Zu letzterer führt allein eine gute Erziehung. Ein wesentlicher Teil dieser Erziehung besteht in der Anleitung zum Studium von Werken wie Xenophons „Kyrupaedie“⁴⁾, Ciceros „De Officiis“, der Ethik des Aristoteles, Platos Schriften (vor allem!), Salomos Sprüchen und Erasmus' „Institutio“, die sehr empfohlen wird¹⁾. Von anderen Weisen auf dem Gebiete der Lebensführung werden Sokrates⁵⁾, Seneca⁶⁾,

¹⁾ Governour, II. 4.

²⁾ „ II. 12.

³⁾ „ II. 351.

⁴⁾ „ I. 84—95.

⁵⁾ „ III.

⁶⁾ „ I. 74 — II. 161 — III. 260.

Plutarch¹⁾ und Mark Aurel genannt. Von letzterem sagt Elyot: „*Marcus Antoninus, which . . . was commended for his vertue and sapience*“²⁾. — „*It was no rebuke, but for an excellent honour, that the emperour Antoine*“³⁾ *was surnamed the philosopher, for by his moste noble example of lyuing, and industrie incomparable, he during all the tyme of his reigne kept the publike weale of the Romanes in such perfecte astute, that by his actes he confirmed the sayeng of Plato, That blessed is that publike weale wherin either philosophers do reigne, or else kinges be in philosophie studious*“⁴⁾. Antoninus Pius und M.A. sollen stets weise Philosophen um sich gehabt haben⁵⁾. Elyot erzählt auch von M.A., daß er den ehrenhaftesten Männern Roms befohlen habe, ihm mitzuteilen, was das Volk von ihm sage, und wenn etwas der Verbesserung bedürftig gewesen sei, so habe er es von selbst verbessert. Dadurch besserte er auch seine Diener⁶⁾. — Nach Elyot soll Herodian von der großen Lebenswürdigkeit des M.A. berichtet haben⁷⁾. Die Wertschätzung des M.A. durch Elyot als eines Musterfürsten, der Platos Ideal erfüllte, ist ein wichtiges Moment im Gedankengange eines Platonikers wie Elyot. Dasselbe Moment gab Guevara den Anstoß dazu, die Herrschergestalt seines M.A. zu schaffen.

Staatsspiegel.

Sir Thomas More (1478—1535). — Das zweite und wichtigste Buch der „Utopia“ wurde von More 1505 in Antwerpen geschrieben, als er noch zur englischen Gesandtschaft gehörte, die zu Brügge mit den Vertretern Karls von

¹⁾ *Governour*, II. 179 — III. 260.

²⁾ „ I. 52.

³⁾ „ I. 103, Anm. b.

⁴⁾ „ I. 103—104.

⁵⁾ „ II. 8.

⁶⁾ „ II. 45.

⁷⁾ „ II. 53.

Kastilien verhandelte¹⁾). Als More Ende 1515 nach England zurückkehrte, schuf er seinen stoischen Hythlodäus, den er mit den Worten: „Er begehrte weder Reichtümer noch Macht“, charakterisiert²⁾). Hythlodäus will also innerlich und äußerlich frei bleiben³⁾). Ihm legt More eine Kritik der hauptsächlichsten sozialen Übel seiner Zeit in den Mund, indem er zuerst die Ungerechtigkeit der Verwaltungsbeamten angreift⁴⁾). Die Mißstände Englands führt er zurück auf die Faulheit des Adels und der Geistlichkeit und insbesondere derjenigen, die Grundbesitz haben und, um ihre kostspieligen Haushaltungen und faulen Diener zu unterhalten, das Ackerland in Schafland verwandeln, Städte und Dörfer ruinierend und den Bauern ihren Lebensunterhalt entreißend. Er ruft aus: „*Let not so manye be brought up in ydleness; lett husbandrye and tyllage be restored agayne*“⁵⁾). Dem Staate wie er ist und wie er nicht sein sollte stellt More in seiner Utopia einen platonischen Idealstaat gegenüber. Die Utopier, wie auch Hythlodäus, verachten in stoischer Weise den materiellen Besitz an sich⁶⁾). Der stoische Grundsatz, „ein Leben im Einklang mit der Natur zu führen“, kehrt auch in der utopischen Ethik wieder. Derjenige folgt der Natur, der von der Vernunft geleitet wird⁷⁾). Das Hauptziel der Utopier besteht in der Erreichung eines Glückes, das auf edlem Genuß beruht⁸⁾). Der epikureische Genuß wird hier also, damit er zum platonischen Glück führe, vom stoischen Guten begrenzt. Diese Lebensauffassung wird vervollständigt durch den religiösen Begriff der göttlichen

¹⁾ Utopia ed. Collins, S. XVf.

²⁾ Utopia ed. Lupton, S. 37.

³⁾ Vgl. Utopia ed. Lupton, S. 36f.

⁴⁾ Utopia ed. Lupton, S. 44.

⁵⁾ Utopia ed. Lupton, S. 58.

⁶⁾ Vgl. Utopia ed. L., S. 175ff.

⁷⁾ Vgl. Utopia ed. L., S. 190, Anm. 1.

⁸⁾ Utopia ed. L., S. 190: „*they thinke not felicitie to reste in ail pleasure, but onlye in that pleasure that is good and honest*“.

Schickung des Menschen¹⁾, welcher die utopische Weltanschauung dualistisch gestaltet. — Im letzten Grunde ist die Vernunft die Macht, welche die utopische Lebensführung zum höchsten Ziele führt: Utopia wird, der vernunftlosen Wirklichkeit gegenüber, als Musterbild eines Vernunftstaates hingestellt.

Mores Werk als ein auf die Vernunft gegründeter Staatspiegel und das „Golden Boke“ als ein auf die Weisheit gegründeter Fürstenspiegel haben beide das Wohl der Gesamtheit als soziologisches Ziel gemeinsam. Dieses Ziel wird deutlicher in der Utopia durch die Gegenüberstellung des vernünftigen Staatswesens und der unvernünftigen Wirklichkeit, im „Golden Boke“ durch den Gegensatz des weisen Herrschers und seiner unwissenden Umgebung.

Spiegel der Lebensführung.

Giovanni Francesco Picos (1498) lateinisch geschriebenes Leben seines Onkels, des Grafen Giovanni Pico, erschien 1510 in einer englischen Übersetzung von More als „Life of John Picus, Earl of Mirandula, a great Lord of Italy, an excellent, cunning man in all sciences, and vertuous of living, with divers Epistels and other workes, of the said John Picus“. More wurde zu dieser Übersetzung, der ersten Biographie in englischer Sprache, durch seine geistige Verwandtschaft mit Pico angeregt. Es heißt von Pico: „*he was to all of them y^e aspire to honour a very spectacle*“²⁾. P. war von edler Herkunft³⁾, noch bartlos „*a periphite philosophre and a perfyte devyne*“⁴⁾. Es wird dem P. verboten, in Rom über seine 900 Thesen zu sprechen⁵⁾, und als auch ihre Lektüre verboten wird, will P. selbst, daß sie nicht gelesen

¹⁾ Vgl. Utopia ed. L., S. 190.

²⁾ Mores Pico, S. 6.

³⁾ idem, S. 6 u. 7.

⁴⁾ idem, S. 9.

⁵⁾ idem, S. 9.

werden¹⁾. P.s Tugend macht ihn berühmt: Philosophen besuchen ihn und hören seine Lehren gern, weil er aus eigener Kraft das Laster verlassen hatte²⁾. Von neueren Gelehrten schätzt P. den Thomas „*as hym y enforceth hym selfe in a sure piller of truth*“³⁾. P. nimmt eine Einladung des Herzogs von Ferrara zu einer Disputation ungern an, indem er sagt, Disputationen seien nur in einer kleinen gelehrten Gesellschaft von Nutzen und nicht „*to th'ostentacion of lernynge & to wyne the favoure of the commune people & the commendacyon of fooles*“. P. verdankt seine große Gelehrsamkeit einer hervorragenden geistigen Begabung, unermüdlichem Fleiße und der Verachtung alles Irdischen⁴⁾. P. ist selbstlos. Seine persönlichen Bedürfnisse sind gering. Er betet täglich⁵⁾ und „*scourged himself in days representing passion of Christ*“⁶⁾. — P. ist immer heiter: Das Unglück macht ihn nicht niedergeschlagen, im Glück ist er nie stolz⁷⁾. Irdischer Reichtum, Ehre und Ruhm sind ihm nichtig. Er will sich in Ruhe nur dem Studium und dem Dienste Gottes widmen⁸⁾. Er schätzt seine Gelehrsamkeit nur „*in how moche he knewe that hit was profitable to y chyrche & to y extermynation of errours*“. Ein kluger Mann wird von den Worten P.s so durchdrungen, daß er seine Laster verläßt und sich bessert. — P. wird durch seine Anlage und durch sein Studium der Philosophie dazu geführt, die Freiheit über alles zu lieben. Er haßt daher die Ehe⁹⁾.

More und Pico waren Vernunftasketen, und darin ist Pico Mores Vorbild gewesen. More unterscheidet sich aber von jenem durch den gemäßigten epikureischen Zug seines Lebens. Picos Philosophie ist neuplatonisch und stoisch. Stoisch ist seine Verachtung des Ruhmes und der

¹⁾ Mores Pico, S. 11. ²⁾ idem, S. 12—13. ³⁾ idem, S. 14.
⁴⁾ idem, S. 16. ⁵⁾ idem, S. 17. ⁶⁾ idem, S. 17. ⁷⁾ idem, S. 16
⁸⁾ idem, S. 19. ⁹⁾ idem, S. 22.

materiellen Güter¹⁾, vor allem aber die auf der Tugend beruhende Kraft²⁾, die ihn seine Leidenschaften unterdrücken³⁾ läßt und zur heiteren Seelenruhe⁴⁾ des stoischen Weisen erhebt. Die stoische Weisheit führt Pico wie More und G.s M.A.⁵⁾ zur stoischen Scheidung der Menschen in Weise und Toren, die alle drei als Geistesaristokraten auf die unwissende Menge mit Verachtung blicken läßt.

Als im Erscheinungsjahr des „G o v e r n o u r“ G.s L.A. durch sein Auftauchen in Paris als „L i v r e d o r e“ England näher kam, war also, wie eben gezeigt wurde, der Boden für eine verständnisvolle Aufnahme des G.B. völlig vorbereitet. Die stoische Philosophie der Lebensführung, die den Kern des G.B. bildet, war in England zutage getreten in den Übersetzungen des Boëthius, in den Fürstenspiegeln wie auch in Mores Staatsspiegel und in seiner Übersetzung von Picos Biographie, die, wie gezeigt, wesentlich ein Spiegel der Lebensführung ist. Gemeinsam ist dem G.B. und den Werken des Erasmus, More und Elyot auch ein (mit der stoischen Philosophie eng zusammenhängender) platonischer Einschlag. Die Tatsache, daß G. gerade denjenigen Kaiser als Musterfürsten wählte, der in seiner Person wie kein anderer Platos Ideal der Könige-Philosophen erfüllt hatte, deutet schon auf Beeinflussung durch Plato, den er 1529 den Fürsten aller Philosophen nennt⁶⁾.

Das „G o l d e n B o k e“ unterscheidet sich aber von den oben besprochenen Werken durch das Fehlen christlicher Elemente. Dies bedeutet einen künstlerischen Gewinn insofern, als das Werk dadurch einheitlicher wird. Diese Einheit wird aber vor allem durch die erfundene Biographie des M.A. zustande gebracht, der in England nur Mores Biographien von Pico und Richard III. vorangehen.

¹⁾ Mores Pico, S. 11, 16. ²⁾ idem, S. 22. ³⁾ idem, S. 13.

⁴⁾ idem, S. 18. ⁵⁾ G.B. XII. 54f.

⁶⁾ Dial (Schluß), Br. an die verliebten Römerinnen.

D. Inhalt des „Golden Boke“¹⁾.

Prolog. Die Wahrheit siegt über alles Zeitliche. — Homer hat die Wißbegierde der Philosophen gelobt; später ist jedoch ihre Unwissenheit die Ursache der Zersplitterung der Wissenschaften gewesen. Wenn sie aber jetzt lebten, würden sie immer noch mehr wissen als wir. — Zu keiner Zeit hat man die Tugend so viel gelehrt und so wenig ihr gemäß gelebt, wie jetzt. — Das Verdienst des Erzählers großer Taten ist ebenso groß, wie das desjenigen, der sie vollbrachte. — Alle Schriften sind der Vervollkommnung fähig, ausgenommen die Heilige Schrift. — Der L.A. von Männern, die M. A. kannten, geschrieben; Hs. desselben angeblich von G. in Florenz gefunden und von G. Satz für Satz übersetzt. — Solche tiefen Sentenzen und solch hoher Stil nirgends vor dem L.A. zu finden.

Kap. 1, Fol. 1. M.A.s Eltern beide aus vornehmerm Geschlecht. Sein Vater wahrheitsliebend, ein tüchtiger Krieger. — **K. 2, Fol. 2.** M.A. vom Vater zum Studium der Wissenschaften, besonders der Philosophie angehalten. Kein Römer durfte ohne Beruf sein. Ehrenwerte Priester, keusche Vestalinnen, gerechte Richter, tapfere Heerführer und tugendhafte Lehrer in Rom am höchsten geschätzt. — **K. 3, Fol. 4.** Die Lehrer halten M.A. durch Beschäftigung vom Laster fern. — Philosoph aus Theben erwähnt, der sich selbst alles anfertigte. — Wir sind zum Guten ebenso wie zum Bösen fähig. — M.A. erzählt seinen Studiengang. — M.A. mäßig und klug. — **K. 4, Fol. 7.** Des Fürsten Lebensart pflegt vom Volke nachgeahmt zu werden. Dieses soll seinen ehrenhaften Befehlen, nicht aber seinem schlechten Lebenswandel folgen. — M.A. ein Gönner der Weisen. — **K. 5, Fol. 8.** M.A. hat zwei Söhne: Commodus, der ältere, ist schlecht, Verissimus, der jüngere, ist schön und gut. V.s

¹⁾ Diesem sowie den beiden folgenden Abschnitten ist die älteste im Brit. Mus. vorhandene Ausgabe des G.B. (von 1539) zu Grunde gelegt.

Tod ein großer Kummer für M.A. und für Rom. M.A. trägt jedoch alles Leid mit Ergebung. — **K. 6, Fol. 9.** M.A. wählt 14 der besten und weisesten Männer Italiens als Lehrer des Commodus aus und beobachtet ihr Tun. — **K. 7, Fol. 10.** Fünf der Lehrer, welche bei einer Feier zu laut jubeln, werden von M.A. entlassen, denn: gefährlich ist das schlechte Beispiel der Weisen; nur so lange kann Rom groß bleiben, als Einfalt im Reden und Ernst im Handeln darin herrschen. — **K. 8, Fol. 12.** M.A. sagt den neun Lehrern, welche geblieben sind, er habe sie geprüft, um sie als Freunde zu haben. Faustina habe den Commodus zwei Jahre lang spielen lassen. Die Frauen mit ihrem Leichtsinn dächten nur an die Gegenwart, während weise Männer Vergangenheit, Gegenwart und Zukunft im Auge hätten. Die Lehrer sollen aus dem Commodus einen Weisen, einen Gott, machen. — Die Fürsten sollen diejenigen, denen sie die Erziehung ihrer Kinder anvertrauen, sorgfältig prüfen. Es besteht ein großer Unterschied zwischen der Erziehung von Fürstenkindern und von solchen des Volkes. C. soll lernen, richtig zu handeln, nicht leere Worte zu reden. — **K. 9, Fol. 14.** Dadurch soll C. wahrheitsliebend, ernst, mäßig und mannhaft werden. Er soll weder spielen, noch sinnlich sein. Das erfolgreichste Erziehungsmittel besteht im guten Beispiel. — **K. 10, Fol. 17.** M.A. hat vier Töchter. Er läßt diese von ihrer Geburt an bis zu ihrer Vermählung fern vom Elternhause erziehen, damit sie in Einfachheit aufwachsen und nicht im Palast von der Mutter verwöhnt werden. — **K. 11, Fol. 19.** M.A. übertrifft alle Männer an Tugend. Er wählt sich gute Senatoren zu Schwiegersöhnen. Seine Töchter jedoch sind schlecht. — Der Weise soll nicht alles nach seiner eigenen oder alles nach der Meinung anderer tun. — M.A. überlegt lange, ehe er über eine Heirat entscheidet. — **K. 12, Fol. 20.** M.A. sagt, es sei noch keine Empfehlung für den jungen Heiratskandidaten seiner Tochter Matrine, daß er beim Volke beliebt sei. Nur Philosophen wären imstande, die Ehrenhaftigkeit eines Mannes zu beglaubigen, gewöhnliche Menschen

seien Toren. — **K. 13, Fol. 22.** Über die Gefahren einer schlechten Ehe: M.A. verweigert die Erlaubnis zur Heirat Matrinens. — **K. 14, Fol. 23.** Weisheit, sittlicher Lebenswandel und Kriegstüchtigkeit machen M.A. berühmt. Er ist heiter und in seiner Unterhaltung liebenswürdig: das größte Laster kann durch gute Unterhaltung verdeckt werden. Je mehr man zunimmt an Weisheit, desto geringer schätzt man die Fleischeslust. M.A. ist mäßig im Genuß. Beim Reiten hat er kein Glück. Er haßt die Schauspieler und verbannt sie. — **K. 15, Fol. 25.** Das größte Übel für einen Menschen bedeutet es, wenn er die Tugend mit dem Laster vertauscht. Die Guten sollen die Schlechten meiden. — M.A. ist einfach und paßt sich jedem Menschen an, wie es ein Fürst tun sollte. Er ist gerecht und gemäßigt in allen Dingen. — Der Weise muß mit Geduld Leid ertragen können. — **K. 16, Fol. 26.** M.A. ist während des Janusfestes gegen die Gefangenen außerordentlich milde. Ein neidischer Senator stellt ihn darüber zur Rede. — **K. 17, Fol. 28.** M.A. antwortet, daß der Thron auf der Liebe des Volkes ruhe, daß Liebe zum Volke dieses gehorsam mache und Milde gegen die Gefangenen ihm die Herzen ihrer Völker gewinne. — **K. 18, Fol. 30.** Der Philosoph muß gegen das Laster vor allem mit guten Handlungen ankämpfen. — M.A. teilt seine Zeit gut ein. Zweimal wöchentlich kommt er mit dem Volke in unmittelbare Berührung. — Er hat ein Gemach, das niemand außer ihm betreten darf. — **K. 19, Fol. 31.** Faustina möchte gerne das private Gemach sehen. Sie erinnert ihn an ein Gesetz, welches verbiete, schwangeren Frauen etwas abzuschlagen. M.A. erwidert, die Frau sei ihres Mannes schlimmster Feind. Der Weise mache seine Frau weder zu seiner Sklavin, noch lasse er sich aber von ihr beherrschen. Weiber seien töricht: sie wollen immer sprechen, herrschen, sehen und gesehen werden. M.A. beneidet die Toten, weil sie keine Frauen brauchen. — **K. 20, Fol. 34.** Es ist gefährlich, sich mit Frauen einzulassen. — M.A. sagt der Faustina, sie sei zwar schön, aber schlecht; hätte er sie

früher erkannt, so hätte er sie nicht geheiratet. — Des Mannes Herz ist edel. Die Frau verlangt viel für das Wenige, was sie bietet. Der Weise, der mit einer Frau in Frieden leben will, soll sie häufig ermahnen, selten tadeln und niemals schlagen. — **K. 21, Fol. 35.** Die Frauen waren besser, als der Senat zu ihren Gunsten Gesetze erließ. — M.A. gibt der Faustina nicht nach und zitiert ein Gesetz, nach welchem im Falle der Sittenverderbnis keine Privilegien zu gewähren seien. — **K. 22, Fol. 37.** M.A. zu Neapel an der Gicht erkrankt. Er erfährt daselbst, daß 10000 Mauritanier in Großbritannien gelandet seien. Dorthin befiehlt er seine Hofleute, die sich einschiffen, als die Nachricht eintrifft, die Mauritanier hätten die britischen Inseln schon wieder verlassen. — M.A. sucht seinen Hof vor Verderbnis zu schützen. — **K. 23, Fol. 38.** M.A. sagt zu den Hofleuten, daß gute Handlungen den Weisen am ersten erkennen lassen. Faule Leute verderben jetzt das Volk; früher gab es keine Verderbtheit, weil es keine faulen Menschen gab. Klagend ruft er aus, Rom möge sich bessern. — **K. 24, Fol. 39.** Die Faulheit ist das schlimmste aller Übel. M.A. bedauert die Verderbtheit seiner Diener, die Frucht ihrer Sinnlichkeit und ihrer Faulheit. — Wie der Fürst ist, so soll auch sein Haus und sein Reich sein. Die Untertanen handeln, wie der Fürst handelt: der Fürst muß also gut sein. — **K. 25, Fol. 41.** M.A. sagt zu den Pagen, sie seien nach Rom gekommen, um gute Sitten zu lernen. Rom brauche arbeitsame Leute. Catos Beispiel zeige, wie mächtig ein Mann durch seine Tugend werden könne. Wer während des Lebens und über das Grab hinaus Ruhm haben wolle, müsse seine Tugend in ehrenhaften Reden und guten Handlungen offenbaren. — **K. 26, Fol. 44.** Erzählung M.A.s von dem Untergange der Piraten von Palermo: Zwei Jahre nach seinem Regierungsantritt hatten diese den Numidiern zehn Schiffe weggenommen. Nach dem Befehl der Gouverneure sollte die Beute bis nach Beendigung des Krieges zur Verteilung aufbewahrt werden. Da erscheint ein fabelhaftes Ungeheuer und schreibt Buch-

staben, deren Bedeutung so entziffert wird: man solle, um Frieden zu haben, was anderen gehört, zurückgeben. Palermo wird von dem Feuer, das von dem Ungeheuer ausgeht, verheert: Die Piraten mitsamt den geraubten Schätzen verbrennen. 2000 Häuser fallen ein, und 10000 Menschen gehen zu Grunde: So vereinigen sich Natur und Unnatur, um die Menschen zu bestrafen. — **K. 27, Fol. 45.** Der Römer Antigonus, welcher mitsamt seiner Familie sich wenig an die Gesetze gekehrt hat und mit Frau und Tochter verbannt ist, weilt zur Zeit des Unglücks in Sicilien; die Tochter kommt hierbei um. M.A. spendet ihm daraufhin in einem Briefe Trost. — **K. 28, Fol. 47.** Drei überirdische Zeichen deuten auf das Herannahen der Pest und auf einen Krieg gegen die Parther. — Während der Pest bleibt M.A. bis zuletzt auf dem Kapitol, dann fährt er nach Neapel. — **K. 29, Fol. 48.** Trotz eines Fiebers legt M.A. zu Neapel die Bücher nicht beiseite. Er stellt das Geistige über das Materielle. Er beruft sich auf die Philosophen, welche eine erste Ursache annehmen, die ein Gott sei, und welche die verschiedenen Himmelsgötter mit den verschiedenen Tugenden der Erdbewohner identifizieren. — Was den Weisen fehlt, ersetzen sie durch Wissenschaft. — **K. 30, Fol. 50.** Die Unwissenheit ist besonders gefährlich für einen Fürsten, denn dieser ist unter der Voraussetzung gewählt, er wisse mehr als Andere. — Je gewaltiger ein Fürst ist, desto tugendreicher soll er sein. — Das alte Rom war mehr durch Weisheit als durch Waffen berühmt und gefürchtet. — Die Weisheit wird stets geehrt, und die Zeit, die man braucht, um sie zu erlangen, ist immer wohl angebracht. Weise und Bücher sind für M.A. die beste Gesellschaft. Es ist ein unfehlbares Gesetz, daß der weise Fürst gut, der unwissende dagegen schlecht ist. — **K. 31, Fol. 52.** M.A. ist krank. Die Ärzte und Redner sagen, Rom habe jetzt keine Männer mehr, die die Wahrheit zu sagen wagen. M.A. antwortet mit der Erzählung von dem wild aussehenden Donaubauern, der den Mut hatte, über die Ungerechtigkeiten der römischen Richter

und Beamten dem Senate die Wahrheit zu sagen: Der Bauer meint, die gerechten Götter hätten seine Ahnen bestraft, weil sie Schlechtes getan hätten, sie würden auch den Römern die unrechtmäßig erworbenen Güter wieder entreißen. Von der Habgier kommt der Bauer auf die allgemeine Verderbtheit zu sprechen und sagt, obwohl die Menschen einstimmig das Laster verurteilen, seien sie nichtsdestoweniger alle lasterhaft. — **K. 32, Fol. 54.** Es sei gerecht, daß derjenige, welcher sich zum Tyrannen erhebe, Sklave werde: Ihr habt unser Land in Besitz genommen, ihr müßt uns daher gerecht regieren. Aber eure Richter sind der Bestechung zugänglich! Die Götter strafen schwer für einen kleinen Fehler, den, der viele Fehler begangen hat, strafen sie überhaupt nicht. — **K. 33, Fol. 56.** Am Tage von M.A.s Triumph über die „Arragons“ wird Commodus zum Erben des Reiches gewählt. M.A. meint bei diesem Anlasse, die erbliche Thronfolge werde das Reich zu Grunde richten. Wette zwischen M.A. und dem Volke, wer den anderen am meisten liebe. M.A. betrachtet es als einen großen Ruhm, solche Untertanen zu haben. Das Volk rühmt die Gnade, die Tugend und die Kriegstüchtigkeit seines Kaisers, der als Triumphator aus Salon in Rom einzieht. — **K. 34, Fol. 57.** Faustina erlangt von M.A. die mit Widerstreben erteilte Erlaubnis für sich und ihre Tochter Lucilla, einem seiner Triumphe beizuwohnen. Faustina und Lucilla benehmen sich dabei sehr leichtsinnig. M.A. meint, es sei besser für eine Frau, nicht geboren zu werden, als sich einen schlechten Ruf zu erwerben. Es genügt nicht, gut zu sein: man muß auch die Gelegenheiten meiden, Böses zu tun. — M.A. vertraut zwar nie auf das Glück, verzagt jedoch ebensowenig im Unglück. — **K. 35, Fol. 59.** Nach dem Feste sagt M.A., er befürchte mehr den Verlust des guten Namens während des Triumphes, als den des Lebens während der Schlacht. — **K. 36, Fol. 63.** M.A. meint zu Faustina und Lucilla, Verschäntheit ziere die römischen Frauen am meisten. Treue Frauen und mutige Heerführer brauche der Staat; schlechte Frauen aber seien

dessen gefährlichste Feinde. Frauen genossen einen guten Ruf, wenn sie einsam und beschäftigt zu Hause blieben, wenn sie nicht übermäßig viel sprächen, ihren Männern in Treue ergeben, ordentlich und friedliebend, ehrenhaft und anderen gegenüber zurückhaltend wären. Jetzt heirate man allgemein des Geldes, nicht wie früher der Tugend wegen. — **K. 37, Fol. 66.** Die Faulheit verursache alle Laster. Wenn Faustina die Lucilla gegen Gefahren schützen wolle, müsse sie sie ständig mit guten Handlungen beschäftigen. — **K. 38, Fol. 69.** M.A.s Töchter Lucilla, Persena, Matrina und Domitia sind alle schön und leichtsinnig wie ihre Mutter. Schöne Frauen taugen nicht für die Ehe; es ist gefährlich, eine Schöne zu heiraten. Von der Geburt eines Mädchens an soll der Vater darauf bedacht sein, wie er es mit einem guten Manne vermähle. — **K. 39, Fol. 70.** M.A. wird zu Pannonien, als er dort im Winter seines 62. Lebensjahres mit Commodus das Heer befehligt, schwer krank: dabei verachtet er sein Leben, indem er sich im Lager herumführen läßt. Sein Gesicht wird gelb und sein Mund schwarz. Trotz seiner Weisheit seufzt, weint und heult M.A. — **K. 40, Fol. 71.** Panutius sagt zu M.A., es tue ihm weh, daß der Kaiser jetzt wie ein gewöhnlicher Mensch sterbe, nachdem er so lange wie ein Weiser gelebt habe. Weder um Helie, seine junge Frau, noch um seine Kinder brauche M.A. besorgt zu sein: sie alle würden seinen Tod herbeisehnen. Er solle den Tod, der von den Göttern kommt, ehren. — **K. 41, Fol. 75.** M.A. findet an Panutius' Worten Gefallen und meint, es sei ein Zeichen von großem Mitleid, wenn man Sterbenden zeige, was sie tun sollten. — **K. 42, Fol. 75.** Den Lohn für Panutius' guten Rat müßten die Götter geben. Guter Rat sei der beste Lohn, den ein Freund geben könne. — Als Mensch habe er Furcht vor dem Tode, mit der Vernunft aber habe er diese gänzlich überwunden. — Die Hauptursache seiner Niedergeschlagenheit sei, daß er den Commodus

in einem für diesen selbst und für das Reich gefährlichen Alter allein lassen müßte. Er fürchte, C. könne sich selbst und den Ruhm seines Vaters in Gefahr bringen. Das größte Glück eines tugendhaften Mannes sei, Ruhm während des Lebens und einen guten Erben nach dem Tode zu haben. — **K. 43, Fol. 80.** Sein Herz bleibe seinen Freunden. Wenn die Götter gerecht seien, müßten sie seinen Ruhm unsterblich machen, da er gut gelebt habe. Die Gesellschaft der Menschen gegen die Götter einzutauschen, sei nicht übel. — Sie sollten stets einig sein. Übler Rat verderbe den Fürsten und richte den Staat zu Grunde. — Man gehorche dem Commodus. — Freigebig sollen die Regenten sein. — Nie setze man seine Ehre den Wechselfällen des Schicksals aus! — **K. 44, Fol. 86.** M.A. hat nur gute Menschen um sich gehabt. — Er nennt sechs Senatoren, welche Commodus beraten und bei der Regierung zur Seite stehen sollen. Commodus wird geweckt; er zeigt keine Bekümmernis darüber, daß sein Vater im Sterben liegt. — **K. 45, Fol. 86.** M.A. klagt, Commodus sehne die Stunde herbei, wo er Kaiser sein werde. Rom werde jetzt vom Laster verheert. — Frei sei, wer frei geboren und frei sterbe. Keine Freiheit ohne edle Gesinnung! Ein wahrhaft edler Mann räume alles aus dem Wege, was ihn hindere, tugendhaft zu bleiben. — M.A. beansprucht für sich das Verdienst, nie die Gesetze wissentlich falsch ausgelegt zu haben, auch nie gegen einen guten Menschen vorgegangen zu sein. — **K. 46, Fol. 89.** M.A. warnt Commodus vor dem Leichtsinn der jungen Leute und der Habgier der Alten. Der Weise regiert selbst, hört jedoch auch auf den Rat anderer Leute. Die meisten Leute verfolgen beim Fürsten nur eigene Interessen. — **K. 47, Fol. 91.** M.A.s letzte Ratschläge an C.: Liebe, was ich im Leben liebte. Halte die Tempel und die Priester in Ehren. Bete zu den Göttern. Sorge für die Witwen und die Armen. — Alle geben vor, die Gerechtigkeit zu lieben, handeln jedoch nicht immer demgemäß. — **K. 48, Fol. 93.** Mit Tagesanbruch wird M.A. schwächer. Er entnimmt einem Koffer eine von Apelles

bemalte Tafel, die er sein größtes Juwel nennt. Als Kaiser hinterlasse er dem C. das Reich und als Vater diese Tafel, die früher in Ägypten jedem neuen Könige um den Hals gehängt worden sei. — Bald darauf stirbt M.A. — Die Tafel enthält die Grundsätze des Königs Ptolemäus Arsacides, z. B.: „niemals unterließ ich es, denen Recht zu sprechen, die danach verlangten“; „niemals öffnete ich Schmeichlern meine Tür“; „ich war milde gegen die Armen, und die Götter waren es gegen mich“.

Briefe.

Br. 1, Fol. 94. An Pyramon: M.A. wünscht seinem Freunde P. Kraft, das Unglück zu ertragen. Er selbst lebt der Arbeit. Die Welt und das Fleisch kämpfen andauernd gegen uns Menschen. — Wie soll man sich aber vor Neidern bewahren? Das einzige Mittel dagegen besteht darin, daß man sich jeglichem Wohlstand entziehe. Die Welt ist voll Neid; die Not der Armen und der Überfluß der Reichen nähren die Unzufriedenheit im Volke. Ein neidischer Freund schadet am meisten. Halte dich an deine Verwandten, wenn du deinen Feinden entgehen willst. — Das Buch vom „Trost im Leid“ habe ich beendet und ins Capitol gelegt.

Br. 2, Fol. 98. An Cornelius: Man soll einen römischen Heerführer um seinen Triumph nicht beneiden, denn auf einen Freudentag kommen für ihn tausend Tage der Besorgnis. Verflucht sei derjenige, der den römischen Pomp erfand! Das Unglück der Besiegten läßt M.A. während seines Triumphes nicht zu rechter Freude kommen. — Der herrschend gewordene Leichtsinn wird Rom künftig zum Sklaven seiner jetzigen Sklaven machen. Viele Männer verlassen ihre Arbeit unter dem Vorwande, in den Krieg zu ziehen, während sie doch untauglich für den Heeresdienst sind. Wenig wird erreicht, wenn die Frauen mitziehen in den Krieg. Diejenigen, die sich am furchtbarsten gebärden, sind gewöhnlich am feigsten. Der Starke kann leiden. Rom

hat Asien mit seinen Waffen erobert, dagegen hat Asien Rom mit seinen Lastern besiegt. Zum Schluß verurteilt M.A. die Übel des Krieges.

Br. 3, Fol. 104. An den verbannten Torquatus: Er vermisse T. als einen guten Freund. Tugendhafte Männer fürchten vom Glück mehr als vom Unglück. Ungemach stählt uns für die Zukunft. Das Schicksal ist voll Bitterkeit; man ertrage alles, wie es kommt. Es ist schwer, das Herz eines Menschen zu ergründen. Da deine Verdienste gering sind, T., warum beklagst du dich über dein Schicksal? Die Welt macht uns lasterhaft. — M.A. macht dem T. ein Geldgeschenk und sagt, er werde sich beim Senat für ihn verwenden.

Br. 4, Fol. 107. An den verbannten Domitius: Es ist bedauerlich, daß du wegen eines Pferdes um deine ganze Habe gekommen bist. Oft, wenn wir uns sicher wähnen, sind wir gerade in größter Gefahr. Wer sich über das Tier erheben will, sei bestrebt, edel zu leben und zu sterben.

Br. 5, Fol. 119. An das Greisenpaar Claudius und Claudine: Ihr verbrachtet euer ganzes Leben in Eitelkeit, ihr Toren! Alles an euch verdient Verachtung. Fünfzig Jahre lang suchte ich vergebens Befriedigung in Genüssen und fand dabei nur eine Steigerung meiner Begierde. Das Leben ist ein Traum; erst mit dem Tode wacht man auf. — Wir möchten als tugendhaft gelten und tun Böses. Wie konntet ihr euch in Gegenwart eurer Enkel wie junge Leute benehmen? Es steht nicht in der Macht des Menschen, dem Alter zu entgehen. Des Lebens geben uns die Götter wenig, des Todes ohne Maß. Wenn ihr den Tod fürchtet, dann verbessert ihr euer Leben! Euer Körper ist schon gebrechlich: Entsagt daher dem Leben und bereitet euch auf den Tod vor. Ein junger tugendhafter Mensch wird eher als ein reicher und lasterhafter Alter geehrt. Ich habe viele gekannt, die in ihrer Jugend gerühmt wurden und die später durch Leichtsinns zu Grunde gingen. Spendet, was euch vom Leben noch bleibt, den Göttern: Mögen sie uns ein gutes Leben schicken.

Br. 6, Fol. 116. An die Witwe Labinia: Mit Unrecht beweinst du den Tod deines Gatten, du hättest eher Grund gehabt, sein Leben unter schlechten Menschen zu beweinen. Der Gute lebt, während er stirbt, und der Böse stirbt schon, während er noch lebt. Denke nicht, daß du allein ihn verloren hast! Da wir über die Toten keine Macht haben, so überlasse alles den Göttern. Vergiß nicht, daß eine Römerin Ehrenhaftigkeit ziert. Die Götter mögen dich trösten!

Br. 7, Fol. 118. An Cincinnatus: Man nennt dich zwar alt, deine Werke aber zeigen, daß du jung bist. Ich weiß, daß du die Stelle eines Praetors im Kriege mit der eines Kaufmannes vertauscht hast. Du hast damit eine ehrenvolle Stellung für eine wenig ehrenvolle hingegeben. Denn statt den Staat zu verteidigen, wie bisher, wirst du ihn knechten. Jetzt erst, im Alter, bist du habgierig geworden. — Die Unsterblichkeit allein haben die Götter den Menschen nicht verliehen. — Weder das Schicksal noch die Zeit vermögen den Ruf, den man im Leben genoß, ebenso wenig wie die Strafe oder den Lohn der Götter vergessen zu machen. Es ist gerecht, daß die Betrüger durch ihre eigenen Gedanken beim Sterben betrogen werden. Deine ehrenvolle Vergangenheit und die Rücksicht auf des Landes Wohl hätten dich vor Habgier bewahren sollen. Deine Weisheit hätte für edlere Taten aufgewandt werden können. Möge deine Habgier dich verlassen und kein Betrug in deinem Herzen wohnen.

Br. 8, Fol. 122. An Catulus. M. A. erbittet seines Freundes Rat: Mein Sohn Verissimus ist gestorben; tagtäglich erneut sich mein Schmerz darüber. Das beste Heilmittel gegen das Unglück ist, es wie ein Weiser mit Geduld zu tragen. Die leiblichen Schmerzen sind leichter zu ertragen, als die seelischen. Ich trauere ebenso sehr um meinen schlechten überlebenden Sohn, wie um den guten V. Wenngleich die Götter mich durch seinen Tod strafen wollten, danke ich ihnen, daß es mir vergönnt war, wenigstens während seines kurzen Lebens an ihm Freude zu haben.

Obwohl ich ein heiteres Gesicht zur Schau trage, ist mein Leben voll Kummer.

Br. 9, Fol. 125. An Marcurinus: M.A. weist seinen alten Genossen auf die Ohnmacht des Menschen Krankheiten gegenüber hin. Derjenige, der anderen Reiche entreißt, vermag nicht das Fieber aus seinen Knochen zu verscheuchen. Ich glaube, dein Herz weilt noch bei dem Blei, das du auf dem Meere verloren hast. Das, wofür es kein Heilmittel gibt, sollte man geduldig ertragen. Nur die Toten sind vor den Übeln des Lebens sicher. Wenn du wieder in den Besitz deiner verlorenen Habe gelangen solltest, würdest du dein Leben und deinen guten Ruf gefährden.

Br. 10, Fol. 128. An den verbannten Antigonus: Deine Sache steht im Senate nicht schlecht. — Den betrübten Freund soll man trösten. — Während meiner Jugendzeit warst du immer mein Vertrauter. Dein großes Unglück hat mich nicht überrascht: Deine Bosheit hat es verdient. Es hat mich merkwürdig berührt, daß du dich über den Senat beklagst. Die Senatoren sind auch nur Menschen: Wenn es aber um die Gerechtigkeit geht, sollten sie mehr als Menschen sein. Du beklagst dich über die Götter wie ein Barbar. Da du unter Fremden bist, so muß du alles über dich ergehen lassen. In allem können die Götter nach eigenem Ermessen handeln, nur nicht in Bezug auf die Gerechtigkeit; denn da sie Götter Aller sind, müssen sie auch Alle gleich behandeln. Die Menschen sind selten gerecht. — Aus guten Handlungen erwächst die beste Linderung für ein betrübtes Herz.

Br. 11, Fol. 133. An Antigonus: Du sagst, daß wegen der unerbittlichen Strenge der Censoren die Sizilianer schlecht gegen den Senat gesonnen seien. Ehrlosen Menschen gegenüber müssen die Richter unerbittlich sein. Inselvölker sind allemal schlecht und die Sizilianer besonders. Die grausamen Richtersprüche der Censoren aber sind mehr die von Tyrannen, als von Römern. Rom wird sie als Gegner seines gnädigen Regiments betrachten. Richter sollten gemäßigt sein; sie sollten eher Mitleid üben, als Rache. Es

ist unheilvoll, die Rechtsprechung einem ungerechten Manne anzuvertrauen. Du sollst diesen Brief den Praetoren im Geheimen zeigen, und wenn sie sich nicht bessern sollten, müssen wir Mittel finden, sie öffentlich zur Rechenschaft zu ziehen.

Br. 12, Fol. 139. An Lambertus, den Gouverneur der Inseln des Hellesponts: Ich schicke dir drei Schiffe mit Narrenmeistern; wenn ich alle Narren aus Rom hätte verbannen wollen, hätten wir die Stadt neu bevölkern müssen. Es gibt kein Mittel, die Narren gänzlich auszurotten. In Rom wittert man Torheit und auf jenen Inseln die Weisheit der Philosophen, deren Gebeine dort begraben sind. Am Tage der Berecynthia haben die Narren Rom betreten. Ich habe sie verbannt, weil sie so vielen die Köpfe verdreht haben. Narren stehen mit einander auf gutem Fuße.

Br. 13, Fol. 143. An Catulus: M.A. macht seinem Busenfreunde C. Mitteilungen über den Hof. Mit den guten alten Sitten ist es vorbei. Ich bin erstaunt über die Beredsamkeit und den Gerechtigkeitseifer der Senatoren in der Sitzung; außerhalb derselben bin ich von ihrer schlechten Gesinnung und ihren unwürdigen Handlungen ebenso überrascht. Diejenigen, welche öffentlich stehlen, sind jetzt die Herren, und die, welche heimlich stehlen, werden Diebe genannt. Rom hat sich so plötzlich verändert, daß ein jäher Sturz unausbleiblich ist. Wie die Völker, sind auch die Einzelnen. Ein Gesandter sagte den Senatoren bittere Wahrheiten ins Gesicht; manche wollten, daß er bestraft würde, aber ich werde es nie dulden, daß ein Mann, der die Wahrheit sagt, in meiner Gegenwart zu leiden hätte. Die Götter tun niemals Übles und die Senatoren niemals Gutes; wer nicht die Wahrheit hören will, kann unmöglich Gutes tun. Ich bin gegen meinen Willen Censor im Senate geworden. Der Mann der Faustina ist zu allen Schlechtigkeiten fähig! Seit meiner Vermählung scheine ich meiner Sinne nicht mehr mächtig zu sein. Früher stand Rom wegen gerechter Bestrafung der Missetäter in Ansehen, jetzt ist es durch Beraubung Unschuldiger in Verruf gekommen.

Br. 14, Fol. 149. An die verliebten Römerinnen: Ihr fragt mich nach dem Ursprung des ersten Weibes. Die Ägypter sagen, die Frau sei aus Erde vom Bette des Nils entstanden. Da ich vom Weibe geboren bin, hasse ich mein Leben. Frauen, die gut sein wollen, sollten selbst den Weisen nicht trauen. Avilina, die du den Scherz auf mich machtest, du hast oft unschuldige Jungfrauen billig verkauft! Diejenigen, die mich verletzt haben, werde ich auch verletzen. Es ist leider unmöglich, die Frauen gänzlich zu meiden.

Br. 15, Fol. 153. M.A. an seine frühere Geliebte Boemia: Nach einer Schlacht las ich deinen Brief, welchem zufolge du zu mir zu kommen gedenkst. — Niemals fand ich ein Weib von festem Charakter. — Schlechtigkeiten der Jugend rühren von Unwissenheit her, die des Alters von Bosheit. — Ich habe dich in deiner Blüte genossen, jetzt gleichst du der Frucht, und nun, in deiner Reife, verlangst du nach mir. Alle meine Gaben vermochten nicht, deine Habgier zu sättigen. — Die Römerinnen sind der Aufenthalt des Lasters. — Deine zwei Knaben haben fünfzehn Väter! Lucia, unsere vermeintliche Tochter, habe ich verheiratet.

Br. 16, Fol. 151. Boemia an ihren Todfeind M.A.: Frauenherzen werden niemals überwunden. Du bist darum nicht in der Schlacht gefallen, weil du zu feige bist, um dich in Gefahr zu begeben. Weiber aber getraust du dich mit deiner Zunge anzugreifen, du Tyrann! Wir sind weder so töricht, wie du denkst, noch bist du so weise, wie du dir einbildest! Meine Liebe ist so groß, daß ich die Genüsse Roms deinetwegen mit den Schlachtfeldern vertauschen wollte. Ich habe als schwaches Weib, du aber als starker Mann gefehlt. Ich habe dir wie einem ritterlichen Manne getraut, du aber hast mich wie ein Lügner betrogen. Du wurdest mein Hauslehrer bloß, um mich meiner Unschuld zu berauben. Du weißt, daß Faustina nicht unschuldig war, als du dich mit ihr vermähltest. Deiner Lehre wegen ist dein Haus eine Philosophenschule am Tage, und wegen des Leichtsinns der Faustina ein Bordell während der Nacht. —

Du hast nie gut gelebt: Deine Schmach wird also nie ein Ende nehmen. Ich liebe dich niemals deiner Güter wegen, während du mich wegen meiner äußeren Schönheit geliebt hast. Du bist nicht der Vater von Faustinas Kindern! Deine Nachsicht Faustinas Schlechtigkeit gegenüber ist das Einzige, was an dir lobenswert ist.

Br. 17, Fol. 160. M.A. an die junge Matrine. — Matrine stand am Fester als M.A. sich in sie verliebte. — Ich wollte der Hinrichtung der Diebe beiwohnen, als du mich hinrichtetest. Ich verlange keine andere Gunst von dir, als daß wir einander unsere Meinung sagen dürfen. Sei meiner Treue versichert!

Br. 18, Fol. 162. Zweiter Brief an Matrine. — Keine größere Pein als verschmähte Liebe! Die Spröde der Frauen und die Unfreundlichkeit der Männer entspringen beide der Bosheit. Wenn du auch sagst, Patroclus, dein Gatte, besitze dich, so versuche es wenigstens einmal mit mir!

Br. 19, Fol. 163. An die schöne Lybia: Als du im Tempel der Vestalinnen betetest, habe ich dich angebetet. Es ist gerecht, demjenigen, der sein Herz opfert, mehr zu geben, als demjenigen, der nur sein Geld gibt. Aus Erfahrung weiß ich, daß jene Frau am freigebigsten ist und am leichtesten überwunden wird, die am strengsten bewacht wird. Die Liebe wird nicht gefühlt, bis sie zum Innersten gedrungen ist. Du bist verwundert, in mir äußerlich einen Philosophen und innerlich einen heimlichen Liebhaber zu sehen. Jetzt bin ich noch ein junger Tor in der Liebe: Wenn ich alt werde, werde ich weise werden. — Wer nicht liebt, der ist ein Narr! Der Weise ist auch ein Mensch! — Ich begehre nur deine treue Liebe. Was du verlangtest, tat ich, damit du später auch meine Wünsche erfülltest.

Schlußbemerkung. Fol. 166.

Dies „Goldene Buch“, ein besonders für Prinzen, Regenten und Richter lehrreiches Werk! Auch das Volk kann demselben Vieles entnehmen. Es enthält tiefe Wahrheiten und

gesunde Ratschläge gegen Unglück. Danken wir Gott, daß er einem Heiden so viel Gnade erwies, um in ihm ein Muster tugendhafter Lebensführung zu verkörpern. — Lob des anziehenden Stiles dieses Werkes.

E. Übersetzungsweise.

Die Wortwahl ist ein grundlegendes Merkmal jedes Stiles. Dies gilt besonders von Übersetzungen.

Es wird im Folgenden vor allem zu zeigen sein, wie die Wortwahl des „Golden Boke“ entstanden ist. Dazu ist unbedingt nötig, daß man den durch Berthaults Vermittelung von Guevara herstammenden und den ausschließlich Berthault angehörenden Elementen nachgehe, um so Berners' eigenen Anteil richtig feststellen zu können. Hierbei bin ich in folgender Weise verfahren: 1) die 48 Kapitel des „Libro Avreo“ verglich ich mit dem entsprechenden Teile des „Livre dore“ und diesen mit dem entsprechenden Teile des „Golden Boke“, das ich auch teilweise mit G.s Original verglich; 2) Um gründlich zu sein, habe ich die ersten 16 Kapitel jedes des verglichenen Teile der drei Werke bearbeitet und alle wichtigeren Abweichungen des Bert. und Bern. besprochen; 3) Bei der Behandlung jeder Abweichung habe ich die Stelle ihres Auftauchens zum Ausgangspunkte genommen, die Ursache ihrer Entstehung zu ermitteln versucht und ihre Wirkung bis ins Englische hinein verfolgt. Die Besprechungen habe ich auf das Nötigste beschränkt und sie ganz ausgelassen, wenn eine bloße Anführung des Falles zur Feststellung der Abweichung genügt. — Dieses Verfahren ermöglicht es, die Prosa des „Golden Boke“ in ihrer Entstehung aus der spanischen Quelle und in ihrer Entwicklung durch die französische Wiedergabe bis zu ihrer Aufnahme bei Bern. darzustellen. Es schließt ferner von selbst die Masse desjenigen Materials aus, das von Bert. und Bern. sklavisch übernommen wurde.

a) Hinzufügungen.

α) Hinzufügungen des Berthault.

Sätze. — Y al hombre viciofo metanle en la sepultura que alli acabara > Et a l'homme vicieux quant lon le mettra en sepulture illecques acheuera / *et iamaïs ne se peult corriger* > And whan the vitious man is laide in his graue he maketh an ende, and maye neuer correcte hym selfe (Fol. 15). Bert. will durch seine Hinzufügung den wörtlich wiedergegebenen Satz verständlicher machen.

Wortgruppen. — que por muy buenos se señalauã > q pour fort gens de bien estoient notez & luy ressembloient telz > that of manye folkes were esteemed to be of good behauour, and that to his femynges were suche in dede (Fol. 19). Die H. bewirkt Sinneserweiterung mit Hinweis auf M.A. — luego a las infantas las destetauã; y de ayas las proueyã > incontinent pourueoyent a leurs filles de femmes et maistresses *pour les endoctriner* > incontinente he prouided womene and maystresses for to teache them (Fol. 18). Die H. bestimmt besser die Bedeutung der Teile des Wortparallelismus „femmes et maistresses“.

Einzelne Wörter zur Bildung von Parallelismen. Die H., die zur Bildung von Wortparallelismen dienen, sind die zahlreichsten von allen. Es handelt sich hauptsächlich um den Zusatz von Substantiven, Adjektiven oder Verben. Die Neigung, solche Wortpaarungen zu bilden, war schon bei G. vorhanden, sie erfuhr aber eine bedeutende Verstärkung bei Bert., der bei seinem Streben, den Sinn des Spanischen mit breiter Deutlichkeit wiederzugeben, sich häufig zur Hinzufügung schmückender und erläuternder Ausdrücke verleiten ließ. Diese Art der Verdeutlichung entwickelte sich bei ihm zu einem ständigen Mittel der Sprachbereicherung. — Die hier gelegentlich zu beobachtende grammatische Angleichung (Gleichheit der Endung, Gleichheit des Anlauts) trägt übrigens, als ein Mittel des Nachdrucks, zur Befriedigung der Aufmerksamkeit bei.

Substantive. — *vezinos* > *voifins* & *habitās* > *neyg-bours* (Fol. 12). Hinzugekommen ist ein mit „*voifins*“ sinnverwandter, aber umfassenderer substantivischer Begriff. — *cordura* > *sageffe* et *vertu* > *wyfedome* and *vertue* (Fol. 12). Durch H. eines begrifflich verwandten Substantivums ist ein Wortparallelismus erzielt. — *los ficulos* > *les Siciliēs* et *Siculains* > *the Syliciens* and *Syculains* (Fol. 6). Durch die H. ergibt sich ein Wortparallelismus aus Eigennamen gleichen Anlauts und ähnlichen Auslauts. — *moços parleros* > *parleurs* et *menteurs* > *ianglers* and *lyers* (Fol. 11). Die H. ist eine mögliche Folgerung aus „*parleurs*“ mit gleichzeitiger grammatischer Angleichung.

Adjektive. — *perdidos* > *perduz* et *mauluais* > *lofte* and *naughte* (Fol. 15). Die H. durch Schlußfolgerung aus „*perduz*“. — *arduas* > *haultes* et *ardues* > *high* and *difficult* (Fol. 22). — *quexofos* > *marrys* ny *complainans* > *complayning* and *angrye* (Fol. 26). — *varones muy aprouados* > *hommes nobles* et *fort bien approuetez* > *noble men* and *well approued* (Fol. 3). Die H. trägt zur Steigerung der Bedeutung von „*fort bien approuetez*“ bei. — *El mayorazgo* > *Le plus grant* et *laisne* > *The greattest* and *eldest* (Fol. 8). Aus „*laisne*“ wird die naheliegende Folgerung „*le plus grant*“ gezogen.

Verben. — *desmāde* > *acoustume* ny *demande* > *he accoustume hym not to demaunde* (Fol. 15). — *con el pueblo lo reboluian* > *auec le peuple le blasmoient* & *vituperoint* > *amonge the people blamed hym, and rebuked hym* (Fol. 26). Die H. steigert den Grad des Begriffes „*blasmoient*“. — *no me alcācā* > *ne le peuent attaindre* ny *cōprendre* > *can not atteyne therto or comprife it* (Fol. 13). Begriffszergliederung: „*Attaindre*“ bedeutet das physische und „*cōprendre*“ das psychische „*Erreichen*“. — *se auia de pintar* > *deuoient estre painctes* & *insculpees* > *they shulde be paynted and grauen* (Fol. 17).

Einzelne Wörter ohne parallelen Begriff werden von Bert. seltener hinzugefügt.

Substantive. — ayos > maistres *docteurs* > greatte maysters (Fol. 12). — vna de las infantas > vne des *infantes ses filles* > one of his daughters (Fol. 20). — entalladores > tailleurs *dymages* > grauers of ymages (Fol. 8).

Zahlwörter. — cinco matronas . . . con cinco caualeros > cinq *cens* matrosnes auec cinq *cens* cheualiers > V hundred matrones . . . to V. c. knyghtes (Fol. 21).

β) **Hinzufügungen des Lord Berners.**

Sätze. — Como vn truhã fizieffe lo que los femejantes en femejantes casos fuelen fazer: el emperador . . . > Comme vng truant feist ce que les semblebles en semblebles cas ont acostume faire. Lempereur . . . > As a trewande and foole dothe lyke hym selfe, and semblablie as he is accustomed to doo. *And as lyke as oone dothe the semblable thynges and customes, that he is wonte to doo: so the emperour . . .* (Fol. 10). Derartige Verschrobenheiten kommen daher, daß Bern. die unklare frz. Ausdrucksweise nicht ganz verstand.

Wortgruppen. — cõ el dolor no salia al senado > auec la douleur ne venoit au senat > for sorrowe sawe not the senate *of a long space* (Fol. 9). Die hinzugefügte Wortgruppe bringt eine Bestimmung der Dauer hinzu. Sie zeigt Bern.s Neigung zur Bildung einfacher Alliteration.

Einzelne Wörter zur Bildung von Parallelismen werden von Bern. verhältnismäßig selten hinzugefügt.

Substantive. — clemencia > clemēce > clemencie and *lowlynes* (Fol. 26).

Adjektive. — maduro > meur > rype and *sadde* (Fol. 20). — sano > sain > hole and *clere* (Fol. 26). — del erizo erizado > de la cocque fort picquāte et hericee > of the sharpe prickinge and *hard* huske (Fol. 16): Hier liegt im Sp. eine Begriffswiederholung vor, die Verstärkung des Nachdrucks bezweckt. Sie wird von Bern. durch „hard

hufke“ wiedergegeben, womit zugleich eine Alliteration h . . . h . . . gewonnen wird.

Einzelne Wörter ohne parallelen Begriff sind äußerst selten.

Adjektive. — de agua > deaue > with *salte* teares (Fol. 9). Die H. bedeutet eine Verstärkung der Emphase.

Berners' Hinzufügungen sind, wie aus den Beispielen ersichtlich, von geringer stilistischer Tragweite.

b) Auslassungen.

α) Auslassungen des Berthault.

Sätze. — Comienca el libro de la vida: nobles y virtuosos exercicios / profundas y altas sentencias del eloquentissimo Marco Aurelio emperador. Affimefmo de algunas cartas fuyas dignas de salir a luz. *Va el libro tan alto en estilo | quan profundo en sentencias. I aun sin iniuriar a nadie se puede dezir | no auerse visto hasta oy estilo tan subido en lengua castellana.* > Cy commence le liure de la vie / nobles & vertueux exercices / profondes et haultes sentences de leloquentissime Marc aurele empereur / Auffi mesmes daucunes lettres fiennes dignes de faillir a lumiere. > Hier begyneth the boke of the lyfe of the noble and eloquent Mark Aurely emperour (Fol. 1). Bert. ließ nur die eigentliche Überschrift stehen und schaltete G.s Empfehlung des Werkes aus. Die A. des zweiten Teiles dieser Empfehlung paßt im Frz. gut, da er sich nur auf das Sp. bezieht. Auch später noch zeigt Bert. Neigung zur Kürzung der Überschriften. Bern. zeigt dieselbe Neigung in noch stärkerem Maße, daher die Knappheit, mit der er auch im vorliegenden Falle die frz. Überschrift wiedergibt. — Por cierto fue bueno el consejo: & *quiẽ me lo dijo muy bueno. Tenia razõ aq̃l viejo.* El curioso . . . > Pour certain fut bon iceluy cõfeil. Le curieux . . . > Surely this counsell was good. The curious . . . (Fol. 13). Die beiden ausgelassenen Sätze enthalten rhetorische Emphatisierungen des im vorhergehenden Satze Gesagten.

Wortgruppen. — Paulo emilio a los marineros: *Camillo capitã: a los mōteros*. Cayo cefar a los plateros.
 > Paulo emilio des mariniers / Cayo cefar les orfeurs /
 > Paulus Emilius mariners: Caius Cefar goldsmythes
 (Fol. 7). — cuchillo pa los adulteros: *pozo pa los saltea-*
dores: ni horca pa los ladrões. > / vng cousteau pour les
 adulteres / ny fourches pour les larrons. > . . , nor knyues
 for aduoutres, nor galowes for theues (Fol. 7). — ni la
 cadena en los hombros / *ni el joyel en los pechos* / ni el
 cetro en las manos / > / ny la chaisne dor sur les espaules
 ny le sceptre en la main / > . . , nor a chaine of gold about
 his shulders nor the sceptre in his hande (Fol. 15). Außer
 darin, daß diese Auslassungen sämtlich ein einzelnes Glied
 in der Mitte eines Parallelismus betreffen, stimmen sie auch
 darin überein, daß der Sinn einer jeden von ihnen mit dem
 der anderen Glieder des betreffenden Parall. in häufig sehr
 engem Zusammenhang steht. Dem entspricht es auch,
 daß die Glieder grammatisch einander beigeordnet sind.
 Erwähnenswert ist noch das häufige Vorkommen des Reimes
 am Ende jedes Aufzählungsgliedes im Sp. —: vn Alexandro
 los macedonios: vn Pyrro los epirotas: *vn Hector los tro-*
janos: vn Teotonio los vmbros: vn Viriato los yspanos:
 vn Anibal los cartaginēses: > / vng Alexādre les Macedoniens
 vng Pirrhe les Epirotiens / ceulx de lifle Epire / vng Han-
 nibal les Cartaginiens / > . . , the Macedoniens one Alexander
 the Epirotiens one Pirrhe, one Hanyball the Carthageniens, . .
 (Fol. 3). Drei beigeordnete Aufzählungsglieder sind aus-
 gelassen; dadurch stilistische Vereinfachung, die von Bern.
 übernommen wird, welcher außerdem — aus seiner Neigung
 zur Beseitigung des Überflüssigen heraus — „ceulx de lifle
 Epire“ fortläßt. — / y fus dichos y consejos quedaron por
 dechado *en todos los figlos entre otras cosas dignas de eterna*
memoria dixo orando en el senado > / et les dictz et con-
 feilz demourerēt pour estre laif memoire difoit orant au
 senat. > . . , and his wordes and counfels remayne for a re-
 mambraunce, sayd openly in the senate: (Fol. 20). Die A.

bedeutet eine Lücke in Berts Wiedergabe, deren Sinn dadurch unverständlich wird. Dieser Fehler mag durch das Fehlen einer Interpunktion nach „figlos“ hervorgerufen sein. Bern.'s Übersetzung bekommt wohl einen Sinn bis „remembraunce“ durch das Komma nach diesem Wort, aber das Folgende bleibt ohne Zusammenhang und unverständlich.

Einzelne Wörter.

Verben. — y no os engañeis diziendo harto fabe en lo que *fabe* este moço para regir el imperio > et ne vous trôpez en difant / assez scet / en ce que ce ieune enfant pour gouuerner et regir lempire > . . . , nor be begyled, in sayinge, that he knoweth inough of that so yonge a chylde fhulde haue to gouerne and rule thempire (Fol. 16). Bezeichnend ist für das Sp. die Wiederholung von „fabe“. Ausgelassen ist im Frz. das zweite „fabe“, was Verdunkelung des Sinnes zur Folge hat. Bern. fügt „fhulde haue“ hinzu, was nicht ganz glücklich ist, da man das ausgelassene „fabe“ auch im Engl. etwas vermißt.

β) Auslassungen des Lord Berners von Elementen, die aus dem Sp. stammen.

Sätze. — ni tã profunda que no se descubra: ni tã entera que no se desmiembre: ni tan desmembrada que no se ayunte: > / ny tant profunde qui ne se descouure / *ny tant entiere qui ne se desmembre* / ny tant desmembree qui ne se rassemble / >: nor so profounde but it may be discovered: nor so dyseuered, but it may be gathered together (Fol. 6). Durch die A. geht das erste Glied einer Antithese und damit ein Teil der rhetorischen Kraft der Stelle verloren; doch wird so größere Einfachheit des engl. Ausdrucks erreicht. — . . . vn terron: . . . y a los propincos ciegan: y al cabo el mesmo se desmorona. > . . . vne pelote de boue / . . . & les prochains aueugle / *et a la fin luy mesme se rompt.* > . . . a pellet of dust, it hurteth hym that it toucheth,

and blyndethe them that ftande nexte. (Fol. 23). Die A. betrifft das letzte Glied einer Aufzählung, welches für den Sinn wesentlich ist. — Las matronas y donzellas por fi. Las virgenes vestales por fi, y los embaxadores yuan... > Les matrosnes & ieunes filles par foy. *Les vierges vestalles par foy*: & les ambaffadeurs alloiēt . . . > The matrones and yonge maydens by them selfe, and the ambaffadours went... (Fol. 27). Die A. bewirkt eine Lücke im Sinn. --- Die drei letzten Beispiele bekunden wieder Bern.s Neigung, die frz. Aufzählungen zu vereinfachen. — Affimefmo defque nacia la hija y la dauan al ama: > *Ainsi des que estoit nee la fille on la donnoit a la nourrice* / > . . . to nouryshe (Fol. 17). — / triste del reyno que lo espera: > Et triste et malheureux *qui les attend* / > Oh heuye and vnhappy realme (Fol. 12). — grecia la parlera defterro los parleros a roma: & roma la que bien obraua / defterro los buenos sabios a grecia. > Greece *la parleuse* et menteuse a banny et enuoye les parleurs a Romme. Et Romme *que bien ouuroit* a banny & enuoye les bons sages a Grece > in greece the lyers and ianglers are banyshed, and hath sent them to Rome: and Rom hath banyshed and sent the good wyse men into Greece (Fol. 11). Durch die A. wird die sp.-frz. Antithese von Bern. zerstört. — De vn hijo muy querido que tenia Marco emperador por nombre veriffimo el qual se murio. > De vng filz fort ayme que auoit Marc empereur nomme Veriffimo *le quel luy mourut*. > Of the emperour Marcus sonne named Veriffimus (Fol. 8). Wiederum zeigt sich Bern.s Vorliebe für knappe Überschriften.

Einzelne Wörter. — Adjektive: su hermano deste y muy malo > son frere et fort *mauluais* > his myghtye brother (Fol. 8). „Mauluais“ wird ausgelassen, und für das Adv. „fort“ tritt das Adj. „fort“ (> myghtye) ein. — / como es el que es virtuoso en lo secreto > comme est celluy qui est *vertueux* en secret > as it is of hym that is secrete (Fol. 24). Der adj. Begriff des Frz. wird ausgelassen und durch den Begriff der adv. Bestimmung

(adj. wiedergegeben) ersetzt, wodurch der Sinn gänzlich verändert wird.

Partikeln. — / nũa le vi fazer obra que no merecieffe por ella grauiffima pena. > iamaiz ne luy veiz faire oeuvre qui *ne* meritaft griefue peine. > I neuer sawe hym do dede, wherby he deserued to haue greuous peyn (Fol. 11). Die A. der Negation gibt dem Engl. eine Bedeutung, welche der des Sp. und Frz. entgegengesetzt ist. — por las verdades de entonces > pour celles (qui seroiēt) *lors* veritables. >, for them that shall be vertuous. (Fol. 19). — aqui fue capitán contra los barbaros por adriano mi señor / y Antonio mi suegro: > icy fut capitaine contre les Barbares pour Adrian mon seigneur / *et* Anthoine mon beau pere. > Here was capitayne agaynste the Barbariens, to my lorde Adrian, Antonye my father in lawe (Fol. 1). Die klare sp. Konstruktion wird von Bert. wörtlich übernommen. Bern. verstand das subjektlose „fut“ nicht: er hielt es für fehlerhaft und machte durch die Auslassung von „*et*“ „Antony my father in lawe“ fälschlich zum Subjekt.

γ) **Auslassungen des Lord Berners von Hinzufügungen des Berthault.**

Einzelne Wörter. — la conquista de los mas crudos enemigos > la conqueste & *gaing* de plus cruz et *petis* ennemys. > the conquest of the most cruell ennemys (Fol. 1). Beide Hinzufügungen dienen dem Bert. zur Parallelismenbildung. „Gaing“ ist eine Schlußfolgerung aus „conqueste“ und „petis“ steht in Antithese zu „cruz.“ Nur die beiden klarsten Ausdrücke, die aus dem Sp. stammen, werden von Bern. übernommen. — se hã de admitir > se doiuent *recevoir* et admettre. > as shulde be admytted (Fol. 12). — Die beiden letzten Beispiele zeigen, daß Bern. in manchen Fällen G. näher steht als Bert., und daß diese Annäherung an G. auf Kosten von Bert.s Parallelismen geschieht. Dieser Umstand bestätigt meine Vermutung, daß Bern. seine Übersetzung manchmal mit dem sp. Original verglichen habe.

c) Umgestaltungen.

α) Umgestaltungen des Berthault.

Sätze. — *mirad que agora le destetã a mi hijo:* > *regardez que a ceste heure quelle chose est conuenable a mon filz* / > *Regarde as nowe, what thyng is moſte conuenable for my ſonne* (Fol. 15). Der derb bildliche Ausdruck des Sp. wird im Frz. umschrieben. Dabei geht der Nachdruck des Sp. zum großen Teil verloren.

Wortgruppen. — *que el dios jano que era dios de todos los tiempos los ſacaria de toda premia* > *q̄ le dieu Jano queſtoit dieu de tous les tēps les remuneroit de double loyer.* > *that the god Janus (which was god of tymes) wolde rewarde them double* (Fol. 27). Der den Begriff des „Wegnehmens“ enthaltende sp. Ausdruck wird in einen frz. des „Zuerteilens“ verwandelt. — *Acuerdome cada año del dia que me le dieron los dioſes:* > *Il me louuient chaſcun iour de lannee / et du iour que le me donnerent les dieux:* > *I thynke on euerye daye in the yere, and of the daye that the goddes haue gyuen me* (Fol. 14). Das sp. „cada año“ wird von Bert. emphatischer mit „chascun iour de lannee“ wiedergegeben. Bern. überſieht das Objekt „le“ des Nebensatzes. Sein Sinn weicht infolge Berts Änderung völlig vom Original ab. — *criada con tanta cordura en mi palacio* > *a eſte nourrie avec tant & ſi grãde vertu en mon palais* > *brought vp in ſo great vertu in my palays* (Fol. 22). „Vertu“ gibt nur annähernd „cordura“ wieder. — *mario cõ los rodanos.* > *Marius avec ceulx de la riuiera du Rin.* > *Marcus was ſent to theym of the ryuer of Ryne.* (Fol. 2). Durch die U. wird die Wiederholung des unmittelbar vorher gebrauchten „rhodiens“ umgangen. — *las entrañas dañadas* > *le cueur mauuais* > *an ylle harte* (Fol. 26). „Mauuais“ bringt einen (moralischen) Begriff hinzu, der in „dañadas“ nicht liegt.

Einzelne Wörter.

Substantive. — *diofes* > *dieu* > god (Fol. 17). Die U. bedeutet eine Verchristlichung, sie ist daher ein Stilfehler. — *Varon* con los *varones* > *baron* entre les *barons* > A baron amonge barons (Fol. 24). Bert. wählte „baron“ wegen der äußeren Ähnlichkeit mit „varon“, zeigt also Mangel an Verständnis des Sp. Dadurch entstand zugleich ein Stilfehler, indem ein aus dem Mittelalter stammender Begriff in das antikisierende Werk eingeführt wurde. — *segū la ley de Ligurgo* > *felon la loy de lignage* > after the lawe of lygnage (Fol. 16). Die U. kann hier absichtlich vorgenommen worden sein; es scheint mir jedoch auch möglich, daß „Lyurgo“ in Bert.s sp. Exemplar undeutlich gedruckt war; und da dies Wort die gleiche Zahl Buchstaben wie „lygnage“ und noch dazu vier mit „lygnage“ gemein hat, könnte Bert. durch eine Verwechslung darauf gekommen sein. — *No ay cafo* > *Il nest chose* > There is nothyng (Fol. 4). — *oficios* > *officiers* > officers (Fol. 8). — *fus sentidos* > *leurs sentemens* > theyr owne iugementes (Fol. 16). — *q̄ eñ el pefebre del coracō se ha de ceuar* > *qui en linteſtine du cueur doit garder* > which is the inteſtyn e of the harte (Fol. 13). Das poetische Bild des Sp. wird zu einem unästhetischen und unlogischen. — *ayos* > *vielz fages* > wyfe and auncient men (Fol. 9). Durch die U. wird zwar die Art von Erziehern bezeichnet, die M. A. für seinen Sohn haben wollte, der Sinn des Sp. jedoch nur annähernd wiedergegeben.

Adjektive. — *fi es piadofo* / *todos fō clemētes* : > *fil est pitiable* tous sont *pitiables* > *yf he be pitiefull*, all wyll haue pitie (Fol. 7). Die richtige Entsprechung von „piadofo“ wäre „pieux“ gewesen. „Pitiable“, welches nur entfernt den Sinn des Sp. wiedergibt, mag wegen der größeren Ähnlichkeit mit „piadofo“ gewählt worden sein. Indem nun auch „clementes“ durch „pitiables“ wiedergegeben wird, ist zugleich eine Wortwiederholung erzielt. Bern. ersetzt zur Vermeidung der Wiederholung „pitiables“ durch

das entsprechende Subst. — *tan descuydados se mostraron* > *autant fouciez se font monstrez* > *as moche thought had they to conferue* (Fol. 2). Die U. besteht in Umkehrung des Sinnes. — *por atreuido* > *pour entrepreneur & presumtueux* > *bycause he was wyfull and presumtuous* (Fol. 3). Die U. entspricht dem Sinne des Sp. nicht völlig. — *callado* > *tempere & modere* > *temperate and moderate* (Fol. 7). — *Canfados* > *cassez et rompus* > *olde and broken* (Fol. 16). Der frz. Parallelismus aus zwei Synonymen deutet eine Folgerung aus dem sp. Begriffe an.

Verben. — *se escorecen* > *sesclaircissent* > *is made bryghte* (Fol. 10). Bert.s mangelhafte Kenntniss des Sp. verleitet ihn zu einer U., die das gerade Gegenteil bedeutet. — *empozo* > *empoisonna* > *empysonned* (Fol. 8). — *inuerno* > *enuoyerent* > *was sent* (Fol. 2). In den letzten drei Fällen hat sich Bert. durch orthographische Ähnlichkeit zu fehlerhafter Übersetzung verleiten lassen. — *depende* > *de prēdre* > *shall be spente* (Fol. 26). — *paro* > *defaillit* > *fayled* (Fol. 23). — *apedreo* > *mourut et gela* > *freefeth and dyethe* (Fol. 9). „Apedreo“ wird auf eine Weinpflanzung bezogen. „Mourut“ ist eine begriffliche Folgerung aus „apedreo“, während „gela“ eine andere Ursache zu „mourut“ angibt. — *se despegasse* > *ie retirasse et despechasse* > *refrayne* (Fol. 6). Die Bildlichkeit der sp. Ausdrucksweise wird im Frz. vermieden. „Retirasse“ enthält einen mit „despegasse“ verwandten Begriff, von dem sich das — offenbar der äußeren Ähnlichkeit wegen gewählte — „despechasse“ vollständig entfernt. — *desplomando el juyzio de su señor* > *meprisant lentēde-ment de son seigneur* > *disprayinge theyr lordes vnderstandynge* (Fol. 29). Der bildliche Ausdruck des Sp. wird durch einen abstrakten abweichenden Sinnes ersetzt. — *visitado* > *visiter* > *to vyfite* (Fol. 27).

Partikeln. — *y por su policia* > *& par la pollice* > *and by their polycie* (Fol. 3). Bern. kehrt hier wieder zum Original zurück (!). — *mas por el merecimiento* >

mais pour le merciment > but the merytes (Fol. 1). Die U. ist durch orthographische Ähnlichkeit veranlaßt.

β) Umgestaltungen des Lord Berners.

Sätze. — Quiero dezir que las voluntades profundas de los profundos coraçones / a vnos con dones / a otros con palabras / a estos con promeßas / aquellos con fauores se las hemos de ganar. > *Je veulx dire q̄ les volūtez profōdes de cueurs profondz / aux vngs auecques dons / aux autres auec parolles / ceulx cy auecques promeßes & ceulx la auec faueurs no' les auons de gaigner.* > *I promise you the depeneße of good wylls ought to be wonne with the depeneße of the harte*, some with giftes, some with wordes, some with promyses, and some with fauours (Fol. 28). Die U. ändert den Sinn völlig und macht die das Ganze schließende Aufzählung aus vier Gliedern, die ohne rechten Zusammenhang mit dem Vorhergehenden bleibt, überflüssig. Da ferner jedes Glied der Aufzählung einen spezielleren Sinn hat als „with the depeneße of the harte“, so tritt eine Abschwächung der stilistischen Kraft ein. — / y muchos mas hemos visto que aunque eran rectos en sus oficios en breue tiempo por ser austeros en sus condiciones ... > *Et beaucoup plus auons veu que encores q̄lz fussent droictz en leurs offices / en brief temps pour estre austeres en leurs conditions* ... > *And many mo we haue sene, that in a shorte whyle after they were put in office, haue ben so proude and happy in their conditions* (Fol. 24). Sinn völlig verändert! — *Hazian muchas farfas los pantomimos: y muchos juegos los juglares.* > *faisant plusieurs farces les farceurs / et plusieurs ieux les ioueurs:* > ..., and made many playes of interludes, of gestes and iuglyng (Fol. 27). U. der Form und auch des Inhalts; der Sinn des Engl. entfernt sich durch die Hinzufügung des (mittelalterlichen) „interludes“ noch weiter vom Sp. — y se sentēcia por personas maduras > *et se sentencie par personnes meures* > and that we fynde moo sentences of

dyuers fadde perfonnes (Fol. 3). Der Sinn wird dadurch völlig verändert, daß bei der Umgestaltung des frz. Satzes für das reflexive Verb im Engl. das formell entsprechende Subst. (von gänzlich abweichender Bedeutung) eintritt. — *que mas facilmente ora ua en griego q̄ escreuia en latin* > *que plus facilement ie haranguoye en Grec que ie nescrisuoye en latin.* > *that I spake, and wrote greke more easily than latin* (Fol. 6). Willkürliche Änderung des Sinnes! — *El padre que muere dexando a su hijo pobre & sabio / piēse que le dexta mucho.* > *Le pere qui meurt laissant son filz poure et sage / pense q̄l luy laisse beaucoup.* > *ye maye thynke that the father that diethe and leauethe his sonne poore and wyfe, that he leaueth to hym moche* (Fol. 4).

Wortgruppen. — *A ley de bueno* > *A loy d'homme de bien* > *To the praise of a good man* (Fol. 11). Die sp. formelhafte Wendung wird vom Sprecher M. A. auf sich selbst bezogen: er will damit die Aufmerksamkeit und den Glauben seiner Zuhörer gewinnen. Die wörtliche frz. Übersetzung gibt das Sp. nicht genau wieder; ihr Sinn wirkt so unbestimmt, daß Bern. ihn fälschlich auf „Crifippus“ bezieht, von dem M. A. eben gesprochen hat.

Einzelne Wörter.

Substantive. — *las riēdas* > *les refnes et bride* > *the brydell and reygne* (Fol. 13). „Reygne“ ist von Bern. wegen der äußeren Ähnlichkeit mit „refnes“ an die Stelle des letzteren gesetzt. — *hijos propios* > *propres enfans* > *owne chylde* (Fol. 16). — *dar a sus hijas* > *baillant ses filles* > *orderynge and teachinge of his chyldren* (Fol. 18). — *campos* > *champs* > *campe* (Fol. 6). — *vnas conchas en los braços* > *vne conque en facon de croufible en leurs bras* > *a tonge in maner of a cruible on their armes* (Fol. 3). — *señuelo* > *enseigne* > *glasse* [= Spiegel] (Fol. 7). — *los flamines vestales* > *les sacrez prestres des Vestalles* > *the holy nunnes vestales* (Fol. 25). Ein Fall grober Untreue dem Original gegenüber und zugleich ein

Stilfehler! — *muchas paffiones de las entrañas* > *plusieurs paffions des entrailles* > *many greues frō the stomakes* (Fol. 30). Die engl. Entsprechung wirkt weniger ästhetisch; sie ist durch die häufig bei Bern. sich zeigende Ungeschicklichkeit in der Form hervorgerufen. — *Los censores muy justos* > *les censeurs fort iustes* / >: *the penalties right iuste*. (Fol. 4). *Nomen agentis* > *res acta*. — *Si las ystorias . . .* > *Si les hystoires . . .* > *If the hystorians* (Fol. 8). *Res acta* > *nomen agentis*. — *infultos* > *insultes* > *frayes and murders* (Fol. 6). Das sp.-frz. Subst. wird zu einem Wortparallelismus, dessen Teile mögliche Folgerungen aus „insultes“ darstellen. — *figlos* > *siecles* > *heuens* (Fol. 17). Bern. ist offenbar durch die orthographische und lautliche Ähnlichkeit von „siecles“ mit „ciel“ auf „heuens“ gekommen, das übrigens in dem betr. Zusammenhange nicht unpassend ist. — *muchas y muchas flaquezas* > *plusieurs flaqueffes et debilitez* > *many fautes and debilities* (Fol. 15). Der Nachdruck, den im Sp. die Wiederholung von „muchas“ hervorruft, wird im Frz. durch einen synonymischen Parallelismus wiedergegeben. Durch die engl. U. fällt das Synonymische fort. — *asperezas* > *aspretez* > *maners* (Fol. 1). Diese U. ist eine von jenen Verallgemeinerungen, die sonst häufiger bei Bert. als bei Bern. vorkommen. — *penfamientos* > *penfemens* > *magnifycence* (Fol. 2).

Mario > *Marius* > *Marcus* (Fol. 2). Diese (nicht ganz unpassende) U. ist vielleicht in Anlehnung an den Namen des Helden erfolgt. — *Euticio. Annio. Macriō. Caninio erodiatico* > *Euticio Anio Macrion* / *Caninio erodiatico* / > *Euticius, Anius Macrion, Caninius, Erodiaticus* (Fol. 8). Die U. durch mangelhafte Interpunktion hervorgerufen!

Verben. — *Pregũto vos* > *Je vo' demande* > *I ascertaine you* (Fol. 14). — *Porque el fabio / solo q̄ le den el pie . . .* > *Car le sage / encor que lon luy baille seulement le pied* / > *For if a wyse man haue but one fote . . .*

(Fol. 4). — *se tiene*. > *se maintient*. > *releueth hym selfe*.
 (Fol. 4). Diese U. durch den Sinn des Ganzen bestimmt. —
porque no se suf fre > *car ne se seuffre* > *I am abashed*
that... (Fol. 21). — *le duro* > *leur dura* > *endured* amonge
them (Fol. 29). — *se iatauan* > *se vantoient* > *they were*
accompted (Fol. 1). — *porque tiempo le queda harto* >
parce que luy demeurera assez temps > *if he see tyme*
 (Fol. 15). — *y el hōbre simple...* aun no tropecando
cae. > *Et l'homme simple...* / *encores non deualant trop en*
basses chet. > *The vnwitty perfone...* not greatly *decayed*,
falleth downe. (Fol. 4). — / *ni razon le encamina* / > *ni*
raison ne ladresse / > *nor reddressed by reafone* (Fol. 5).

F. Diktion des Lord Berners.

Die Prosa des G.B. ist erzählend und belehrend zugleich. Als Prosa eines biographischen Romanes ist sie erzählend, und in den vielen moralisierenden Reden und Briefen des Helden ist sie belehrend.

a) Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit zu erregen.

Antithese.

Sowohl im volkstümlichen wie im Kunststil ist die Antithese das wirkungsvollste Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit auf etwas zu lenken. Die Beliebtheit von G.s Stil im 16. Jhdt. ist vor allem seiner antithetischen Kraft zuzuschreiben. G.s Antithesen sind durch Bert.s Vermittlung von Bern. meist treu wiedergegeben worden. Sie sind im G.B. äußerst zahlreich und verleihen, in Verbindung mit den noch zahlreicheren Parallelismen, der ganzen Diktion ihr eigentümliches Gepräge.

„Amonge fooles wife men do fhyne“ (Fol. 10). — „What profyttethe, if her maystresse teache her sadeneffe and honestie with her wordes: and we entice her lewdeness with our workes and dedes“ (Fol. 18, 19). — „the vertuous perfone

stemeth not the glorie of his vertue so great, as the malicious person by his malice is shamed“ (Fol. 27). — „He was as happye in vertuouse sonnes in lawe, as greattely infortunate of dyfhonest doughters“ (Fol. 19). — „Fayninge ioye and myrthe outwardely kepyng the sorowe within“ (Fol. 9). — Die letzten vier Beispiele zeigen die Antithese im Parallelismus, wie sie im G.B. am häufigsten ist. — Auf M. A.s Wahl seiner Schwiegersöhne bezieht sich auch: „he chose none that were very ryche but fuche as were vertuous: nor fuche as were soone moued, but fuche as were quiete: not the hyghe mynded: but to the moderate that where no bosters but shamefaste: noo bablers, but small speakers: no qurellers, but suffrers: not to presumtuous, but to theym that were meke: not to hafty men but to theym that were pacient: not to theym that were esteemed amonge the commons, but unto theym that deserued laude amonge wise men“ (Fol. 19). Lehrreiches Beispiel für kunstvolle Verwendung der Antithese in einem längeren Satzparallelismus.

Die Antithese ist im G.B. besonders dadurch wichtig, daß sie, wie im Folgenden gezeigt werden wird, mit den anderen Diktionsmitteln im engsten Zusammenhange steht.

Inversion.

Die Invers. ist, im Gegensatze zur Antithese, ein rein formales Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit zu erregen. Sie kommt bei Bern. häufiger vor als bei G., da Bern. durch sein Streben nach getreuer Wiedergabe mancher eigentlich nur dem Sp. und Frz. eigentümlichen Wortstellung zu Inversionen gezwungen wird, z. B.: „o insignia imperial“ > „ou manteau imperial“ > „and mantelle imperial“ (Fol. 27). — Interessant ist folgender Fall: „Ya fabras como aqui fue capitan contra los barbaros por adriano mi señor / y Antonio mi suegro por espacio de quinze años“: > „Ja scaurais comme icy fut cappitaine contre les Barbares pour Adrian mon seigneur / et Anthoine mon beau pere par lespace de quinze ans.“ > „Here was capitayne agaynste

the Barbariens, to my lorde Adrian, *Antonye* my father in lawe, the space of XV yeres:“ (Fol. 1). Das Fehlen des pronominalen Subjekts (bezogen auf M.A.s Vater) im Frz. verleitete Bern. zu einer durch Auslassung von „et“ bewirkten Inversion, die einen vom Sp. und Frz. völlig abweichenden Sinn ergibt.

Frage.

Die Frage ist im G.B. sehr wichtig, um die durch Antithesen und Parallelismen andauernd in Anspruch genommene Aufmerksamkeit plötzlich wieder auf den Inhalt der langen Reden des M. A. zu lenken.

„What remedie for this?“ (Fol. 15). — „What wyll ye that I say more“ (Fol. 14). Solche Fragen kommen sehr häufig vor als rhetorischer Abschluß eines Teiles der moralisierenden Rede, die nach dieser Unterbrechung wieder aufgenommen wird. — „Do you not knowe what shame it is to make the disciples of foles maisters of princis?“ (Fol. 10). Dies ist das dritte Glied eines Parallelismus aus sechs Fragen: Wir haben hier ein typisches Beispiel für die im G.B. sehr wirkungsvolle Verbindung von Antithese und Frage.

Ausruf.

Der Ausruf gehört mehr dem erregten Stil an und ist daher im G.B. verhältnismäßig selten.

„Oh heuye and unhappy realme that abydeeth for theym, and ye cruell, that commaundeth theym.“ (Fol. 12). — „O howe often haue I sene in our tyme nowe and haue redde of the worlde paffed, the whiche as nowe by comandement of the goddis, at an other tyme by theyr yll workes haue deserued hit“ (Fol. 22). Die Wirkung des Ausrufs wird hier, wie oft im G.B., durch die langen Perioden, die sich anschließen, abgeschwächt.

Anrede.

Oft werden im G.B. andere Diktionsmittel durch eine Anrede eingeleitet, wodurch deren Wirkung abgeschwächt wird. Nicht selten sind Anreden wie die folgenden: „Tell me, I pray the“ (Fol. 79). — „Ryght dere lorde, I demaunde of you“ (Fol. 72). — „And fyrs reput it not smalle“ (Fol. 14). — „Tell me, why do ye dyffymule as a wyfe manne“ (Fol. 18).

b) Mittel, die Aufmerksamkeit zu befriedigen.

α) Mittel des Nachdrucks.

Parallelismus.

Zu den Parallelismen rechne ich alle Gedanken und Einzelbegriffe, die in der gleichen grammatischen Form aneinander gereiht werden. Neben der Antithese ist der Parallelismus das wichtigste Diktionsmittel des G.B. Er ist im G.B. von größter Bedeutung, um die besonders durch die vielen Antithesen erregte Aufmerksamkeit zu befriedigen. Dieses Verhältnis von Antithese und Parallelismus bildet in seiner konsequenten Durchführung den Kern der guevaristischen Diktion. — Der Parallelismus hat im G.B. den allgemeinsten Charakter, da er der Träger der anderen Stilmittel ist.

Die Wortparallelismen, welche bei G. bereits vorkommen, nehmen bei Bert. durch Neubildung beträchtlich zu, wodurch eine Schwellung der Diktion entsteht, welche die Hauptabweichung im Stil der frz. Übersetzung bildet.

Auf die Gefahren, die der Verkehr mit Frauen mit sich bringt, bezieht sich: „If a man loue theym not they count hym as a villayne: yf he loue them they thynke hym lyghte: yf he leaue theym, they reput hym for a cowarde: yf he folowe them, he is lofte, yf he serue theym he is not regarded, yf he serue them not, he shall be hated of theym, yf he wylle haue theym they wylle not haue hym: yf he defyre

theym not, they wylle feeke on hym: yf he haunte theym, he is ylle named: yf he haunte theym not they reken hym no man:" (Fol. 11). Typisches Beispiel dafür, wie der Parallelismus der Wirkung der erregenden Mittel entgegenarbeitet! — „O ye Romans, sayd this vyllayn, what action haue ye, that are brought vppe nygh to the ryuer of Thyber, agaynst vs, that are nygh to the ryuer of Danubie? Haue ye sene vs frendes to your ennemyes? or haue we declared vs your ennemyes? or haue ye harde say, that we haue lefte our owne lande, and inhabyted any straunge londes? or haue ye harde, that we haue rebelled ageynste our lordes, or haue troubled any straunge realmes? or haue yet sene vs any ambassadours, to delyre vs to be your frendes or hath any hoste of ours come to Rome to distroye you, as our enmies? or hath any kynge dyed in oure realme? that in his testamēt made you heys to our realme? or what antyke lawe haue ye founde, wherby we ought for te be youre subiectes?" (Fol. 15). Antithesen und zehn rhetorische Fragen erregen hier die Aufmerksamkeit, die durch Parallel. und anaphorische Wortwiederholungen befriedigt wird. — „The goddis to me and I to you do gyue hym mortall to be as a manne, and than you to me, and I to the goddis do render hym immortal to be wyse." (Fol. 14). Typischer Fall von einfacherem Satzparallelismus mit Wiederholung und Antithese. — „ye vndertoke to make a new warre agaynste the Parthes, to continue the enmitie agaynst the Peniens, and to marie .V. hundred matrones of Rome to .V. C. knyghtes of Mauritanie" (Fol. 21). Parallel. aus Satzteilen mit einfacher Allit., mit einer Wiederholung und ohne Mittel zur Erregung der Aufmerksamkeit. — „Greke, or latyn, . . . fame into shame, iustice into wrōg, ryght into tyranny, or trouth into lesynge, the certayne into vncertayne" (Fol. 53). Ein Parallelismus aus Antithesen (Reim!).

Aufzählung.

Die Aufzählung läßt sich betrachten als eine Art Parallelismus, aus mindestens drei Wörtern derselben Wortklasse oder aus mindestens drei dieselbe Wortklasse vertretenden Wortgruppen gebildet. — „vnto this Marcus Aurelius, haue passed .XVII. emperours which were Julius, Octavius, Tyberius, Caligula, Claudius, Nero, Galba, Othus, Vitellus, Vaspasianus, Titus, Domitianus, Nerua, Traianus, Adrianus, Anthonius and Aurelius.“ (Fol. 8). — „We haue not by any autentike histories, from whens, whan, or howe, in what maner, or in what exercyses, or with what perfons, or in what londe was spent and consumed the mooste parte of the lyfe of this good emperour.“ (Fol. 2). Dieses Beispiel zeigt den Übergang von der Aufzählung aus Wörtern zu der aus Wortgruppen, welche beide dieselbe grammatische Funktion haben.

Wiederholung.

Auch die Wiederholung kann als eine Art Parallelismus betrachtet werden. Im G.B. werden hauptsächlich wiederholt: Gedanken und Begriffe einerseits, Wortgruppen, Wörter und einzelne (Laute) Buchstaben andererseits.

Gedanken. — „it tourned the feaste to wepynges, the pleasures into sorowes.“ (Fol. 25). Satz wiederholung wenn auch formal nicht vollständig, da das Verbum das zweite Mal nur mitgedacht wird. — „La . . . falta . . . es ser cortos de verdades.“ > „La . . . faulte . . . cest destre espargneur de verite et *neestre veritable*.“ > „The . . . faute . . . is to spare the trouthe, and not to be veritable.“ (Fol. 15). Satz wiederholung: auch hier wird das Verbum mitgedacht.

Begriffe. — „coloffenfes“ > „Coloffenfes & *Rodiens*.“ > „Colloffences and Rodyans;“ (Fol. 2). — „famofos“ > „fameux et *renomez*.“ > „famous and renowmed.“ (Fol. 3).

Wortgruppen. — „at another tyme by theyr yll workes haue deserued hit, at another tyme by theyr sorrowfull destenies.“ (Fol. 22).

Wörter. — „the yll intentions of them that be ylle.“ (Fol. 24). — „The trace of vertu is as good in good thingis with them y be good as the vice & difhonestie of euyll folkes is in euyll thinges:“ (Fol. 25). Parallelismus aus zwei Sätzen, welche durch Wiederholung von „thinges“ stilistisch verbunden sind und von welchen jeder eine eigene adjektivische Wiederh. besitzt, die antithetisch zu der entsprechenden Wiederh. im anderen Gliede des Parallelismus gesetzt ist. Dies zeigt, mit welcher Kunst die Wortwiederholungen in engem Zusammenhang mit anderen Diktionsmitteln im G.B. verwendet werden. — „this good emperour was so ioyous of vifage, soo amyable in his customes, soo louynge in his conuerfation“ (Fol. 24). Auch die begriffliche Verwandtschaft von „ioyous“, „amyable“ und „louynge“ trägt dazu bei, die Aufmerksamkeit zu befriedigen.

Alliteration.

Eine Wiederholung ist auch die Allit. Sie ist dasjenige Diktionsmittel, das bei Bern. den stärksten Zuwachs erfährt. Bereits im Sp. kommen Alliterationen vor, im Frz. werden sie häufiger. Oft nimmt im Sp. und Frz. der Reim die Stelle der Allit. ein.

Spanische Alliterationen, die sich im Frz. und Engl. erhalten haben. — „si quereys en paz posseder lo vuestro“ > „si voulez en paix posseder le vostre propre“ > „yf that ye wylle in peace possesse your owne“ (Fol. 45). Die Erhaltung der sp. Allit. im Frz. und Engl. sowie das Schwinden des im Frz. hinzugefügten *p* von „propre“ sind durch wörtliche Übersetzung bedingt. — „A nuestro principe si la falto la fortuna: ne le falto la cordura“ > „A nostre prince se luy deffault la fortune ne luy deffault la vertu et vaillance.“ > „All though our prynce wāt good fortune, yet his worthy vertues fayle not:“ (Fol. 51). Die englische Allit. *f...f*, die hier die beiden Glieder des Parallelismus verbindet, ebenfalls durch wörtliche Übersetzung hervorgerufen! Bern.s Allit. *w...w* bildet nun

mit der aus dem Sp. und Frz. stammenden Reihe *f...f* die gekreuzte Allit. *w...f...w...f*.

Alliterationen, zu deren Bildung das Sp. nur den Anlaß gab. — „yo doy *gracias* a mis dioses de mis buenos hados:“ > „Je donne *graces* a mes dieux de mon bon heur“ > „I yelde and *gyue* great *graces* to my goddes of my good happe“ (Fol. 30). Der Allit. *d...d* im Sp. und Frz. entspricht die durch Übersetzung erzeugte Reihe *g...g...g...g...g* im Engl. Bern. fügte „great“ hinzu, um ein weiteres *g* für die alliterierende Reihe zu gewinnen. — „Al corazon lastimado pregonan los *sospiros* muy lastimosos: y a las entrañas dañadas las descubren palabras muy maliciosas.“ > „Les *soupires* tristes demōstrēt la bleceure du cu cueur / & les polles fort malicieuses descourēt la mauuaistie du cuer.“ > „The *forwfulle syghes* shewe the hurte of the harte, and the malicious wordes discouer the yll of the harte.“ (Fol. 26). — Die sp. alliterierende Reihe *l...p...l...d...d...p* und die frz. *d...c...m...d...m...c* weisen beide eine gewisse Regelmäßigkeit auf. Zieht man in der letzteren die durch Wortwiederholung hervorgerufene Allit. ab, so bleibt die Reihe *d...m...d...m*, die Landmann als Typus der gekreuzten Allit. angibt, welche für ihn ein Hauptzug des Guevarismus und des Euphuismus ist.¹⁾

Frz. Alliterationen, die im Engl. erhalten bleiben. — „pretor“ > „preuoft et preteur“ > „prouofte and pretour“ (Fol. 2). — „monstruosa“ > „merueilleuse & monstreuse“ > „meruaylous and monstrous“, (Fol. 3).

Alliterationen englischen Ursprungs. Einfache Allit. — „merescio con veynte y dos *puñaladas* perder la vida.“ > „merita auecques vingt et trois coups de *pognard* perdre la vie.“ > „he merited to lese his *lyfe* with XXIII strokes of *penkniues*.“ (Fol. 30). Bert. gibt durch wörtliche Übersetzung die sp. Allit. wieder, und Bern. kommt in gleicher Weise zu seiner *l...l* Allit. — „where my *bones*

¹⁾ Vgl. Landmann, S. XVII.

shall be brente“ (Fol. 17). — „if the daughter deserue chaastyfemente“ (Fol. 19). — „the desyre, whiche wyl not be despleased with his yl doinges“ (Fol. 22). — „Regarde well my frendes, and forgette nat“ (Fol. 15). — „Fauftine all fearefulle seing the father“ (Fol. 19). — „they muse . . . vppon a . . . fowle, made of fethers, than thoughe it were of fleffhe, and yet at the fyrste flyght“ (Fol. 7). — „The greattest goodnes off all goodnes“ (Fol. 25). — „by the grace and gyfte of god“ (Fol. 19). — „home to his howse.“ (Fol. 17). — „it leseth the lybertie“ (Fol. 7). — „in largesse of lyes“ (Fol. 15). — „multitude of men“ (Fol. 22). — „to couete goodes that be in the pourse, and not to examyne the persone“ (Fol. 19). — „not to suche as were presumtuious of the prowes and dedes of theyr predeceffours“ (Fol. 19). — „the reyne of reasone“ (Fol. 15) — „that ye send so simple psons“ (Fol. 54). — „yf his werkes be as your wordes“ (Fol. 22). — „the reporte of the wyse men, it was no lesse vertuous by tbe wysedome and worthynes of the emperour“ (Fol. 10).

Regelmäßig verteilte Allit. außer der einfachen Reihe. — „Aborrecia mucho a amas regaladas: y amaua las labradoras rusticas y sanas.“ > „abhoreffoit les nourriffes q̄ fussent delicates ny mignones & aymoît laboureuses rustiques & faines“ > „He hated delycate and gaye nourfes, and they that were laborous homely and holsome he loued“ (Fol. 17). Im Sp. haben wir die Allit. *r . . . r*; im Frz. fehlt Allit. Bern. übertrug „rustiques“ durch „homely“, um ein weiteres *h* für die durch wörtliche Übersetzung entstandene Reihe *h . . . l . . . h . . . l . . .* zu gewinnen. Es kommt ihm also mehr auf die Menge als auf die regelmäßige Verteilung der Alliterationen an. — „The garmente that to so many persons must weare, must be wysely cut“ (Fol. 23) — „the greatteste vyllanye in a vyllanye is to be gyuen in largesse of lyes.“ (Fol. 15). — „of the small grauitie of the mayster spryngeth great boldenes“ (Fol. 16); „amonge the chyl dren of vanitie, to chylde the vices of them that be

vycyous“ (Fol. 26). Diese beiden Fälle sind für die sogenannte gekreuzte Allit. bezeichnend. Diese kommt im G.B. zwar hie und da vor; ist jedoch kein typischer Zug des guevaristischen Stils, wie Landmann behauptet¹⁾. — „Of trouthe the *cheftain trees* bringe forth the *softe swete cheftnut* out of the *sharpe prickinge* and *hard hufke*“ (Fol. 16). — „as the *cooles canne* not be in the *embres* without *sparkis*, nor *corruption* of the *carion* without *stenche*: no more can he that *hath a hole* and *clere herte* be“ (Fol. 26).

Die Beispiele lassen zur Genüge erkennen, wie reichlich im G.B. die Allit. sowohl in einfachen wie in kunstvollen Reihen vertreten ist.

Reim.

Bei dem größeren Reichtum des Sp. und Frz. an vollen Endungen gegenüber dem Engl. ist es begreiflich, daß im G.B. die Reime an Zahl bedeutend geringer sind als bei Bert. und G., der den Reim außerordentlich häufig in seinen Satzparallelismen verwendet. Dafür tritt im Engl. an die Stelle des Reimes häufig die Alliteration. — „Ellos *callãdo & obrando* nos dexarõ *exẽplos* de *admiracion*: & los *fabios* de *ahora dezimos* en *publico*: y *escriuimos* en *secreto* *doctrinas* de *perdicion*.“ > „Eulx en *taifant* et *ouurant* nous ont *laiffe* *exemples* d*admiracion*: Et les *sages* de a *ceste* *heure* nous *difons* en *public* et *escriuons* en *secreto* *doctrines* de *perdition*.“ > „Theyr *fewe* *wordes* and *good werkes* haue *lefte* vs *example* of *great admyration*. And the *wyfe* *men* of this *tyme* *teache* vs *openly*, and *write* vs *secrete*ly *doctrines* of *pardition*.“ (Fol. 11). Von den Reimen des Sp. haben nur zwei im Frz. genaue Entsprechungen, während im Engl. nur die Reime am Ende der beiden Glieder des ganzen Parallelismus übrig bleiben; das andere frz. Reimpaar fehlt im Engl., welches aber dafür die Allit. *w...w* besitzt. Die wirkungsvollsten Reime in der guevaristischen Prosa sind die aus Gliedern eines Parallelismus, wie sie sich hier bis ins Engl. hinein erhalten haben. — „*fame* into *shame*“ (Fol. 53).

¹⁾ Landmann, S. XVII.

β) Mittel der Anschaulichkeit.

Die Befriedigung der Aufmerksamkeit durch Anschaulichkeit tritt im G. B. an stilistischer Bedeutung sehr hinter der durch Nachdruck zurück.

Apposition.

Sie dient gewöhnlich dazu, ein vorangehendes Nomen durch Ausmalung zu veranschaulichen, spielt aber im G. B. keine große Rolle. — „Verona linda dama“ > „Veronne belle dame“ > „Veronne a fayre lady“ (Fol. 67). — „mafiniffa noble cauallero numidano“ > „Mafiniffa noble cheualier de Numedie“ > „Mafiniffa a worthy knyght of Numedie.“ (Fol. 67). — „Anthonio pio el emperador fuegro que fue de Marco Aurelio.“ > „Anthoine le pitiable empereur beaupere de Marc Aurele“ > „Anthony the meke father in lawe to Marcus Aurelius.“ (Fol. 47).

Schmückendes Adjektiv.

Dieses für die Diktion so wichtige Veranschaulichungsmittel wird im G. B. oft verwendet. Am wirkungsvollsten ist es in antithetischer Verwendung, z. B.: „the cheftain trees bringe forth the softe fwete cheftnut out of the fharpe prickinge and harde hufke: ... among the fwete softe leaues is nourished the hard nutte“ (Fol. 16). Dieser Verwendung kommt an Wirkung am nächsten diejenige, wo das schmückende Adj. das eine Glied einer Antithese ausmalt: „Whã fomer cometh the cold wynter ceafeth:“ (Fol. 66). Der sonst am meisten übliche Gebrauch des schmückenden Adj. wie in: „he was vexed with hote feurs“ (Fol. 48); „the greuouse hurthe and damage“ (Fol. 63) ist im G. B. nicht so häufig wie im epischen Stile. Zahlreich und ebenso wirksam sind die schmückenden Adj. in Wortparallelismen neben einem sinnverwandten oder synonymischen determinierenden Adj., z. B.: „not to be more lyght and foolyshe, but to be more fadde and vertuous“ (Fol. 65); „the good and vertuous women“

(Fol. 63); „these yll and wycked women“ (Fol. 63); „they kepe themselfe clofe and secrete“ (Fol. 63); „wel loued and cheryshed with his mother“ (Fol. 15).

Gleichnis.

Das Gleichnis ist ein ausgeführter Vergleich; es deutet nicht nur an, wie dieser, sondern malt vollständig aus, ohne daß, wie bei der Metapher, eine Identifizierung des Vergleichungs- und des verglichenen Begriffes stattfände. Der einfache Vergleich ist im G.B. nicht so häufig wie das Gleichnis. Dieses wird in Verbindung mit dem Parallelismus im G.B. sehr wirkungsvoll benutzt. G.s Gleichnisse stammen aus der unbelebten Natur, aus dem Pflanzen- und Tierreich, aus dem Menschenleben. Es kommen auch Gleichnisse vor aus der unnatürlichen Naturkunde, die aber verhältnismäßig selten sind.

Unbelebte Natur. „Whan ye take the wood fro the fyre, it leueth brennyng. Whā fomer cometh, the cold wynter ceaffeth; whā thee see is caulme, the waues leaue theyr vehement mouyng: whan the sonne is sette, it fhyneth not the worlde. I wyl say that than, and not before, the fleshe wyll ceffe to peyn vs, when it is layd in the graue.“ (Fol. 66). G. veranschaulicht hier eine Behauptung über einen natürlichen Vorgang durch mehrere andere vorangestellte Naturvorgänge.

Pflanzenreich. Diese sind die häufigsten Gleichnisse des G.B.: „Frendes ougt to be as molberies that in fuche tyme produceth theyr beries, which is theyr fruite, that they feare not the frostes of Maye, as the vynes doo: nor the mystes of Octobre, as the peches and quinces doo.“ (Fol. 13)¹⁾. — „The vices in a womā is as a grene rede,

¹⁾ „Los amigos hã de ser como los morales: q̄ en tal tiẽpo dã las moras (q̄ son sus frutas) q̄ ni temẽ eladas de mayo como viñas: ni ventisq̄ros de otubre como mẽbrillos. > Les amys doiuent estre come les meuriers qui en telz tẽps produysent les meures qui est leur fruict qui ne craignent les geles de may comme les vignes (ne les bruyes doctobre) cõme les coings ou cognasses.“

that boweth euerye waye: but the libertie and difhoneftie is as a drye kyire that breaketh“ (Fol. 64). Parallelismus aus zwei zu einander in Antithese stehenden Gleichnissen. — „By the floures the frutes are knowen, and the vines in burgenyng: . . . and in the youthe the yonge man is knowen.“ (Fol. 77).

Tierreich. — „The emperour of Rome is lyke to a spyder that is in the myddes of her webbe. For yf the fayde coppe webbe be touched with the poynte of a nedell, forthwith the spyder feleth hit. I meane that all the werkes of the emperour in Rome benne streyghte waye knowen in all the erthe.“ (Fol. 30).

Menschenleben. — „Than this emperour as a fhypmayfter, faylyng in mooft fayre and calme wether, forecastethe, and is in great thoughte and feare of tempestes an ftormes to comme in the feastes.“ (Fol. 58). Regenten werden häufig im G.B. als Schiffssteuermänner dargestellt. — „there be some women so brittle, that as glasse with a fyllop¹⁾ wyll breke, and wyl flyp with a lytel myre.“ (Fol. 68). Dies ist eins der vielen Gleichnisse, die G. dem täglichen Leben entnahm.

Antike. — „Carthage was neuer so enuyronned with Scipions, as the howse of a faire woman is with lyghte perfones.“ (Fol. 70). — Die Vergleiche und Gleichnisse aus der antiken Geschichte sind im G.B. äußerst zahlreich. Häufig werden eine ganze Reihe von kurzen antiken Geschichten als Gleichnisse verwertet.

Metapher.

Die Metaphern des G.B. sind dem Meere, dem Pflanzen- und Tierreich, sowie dem Menschenleben entnommen.

Meer. — G.s Heimatsort liegt in der Nähe des Meeres, daher ist es nicht verwunderlich, wenn er so oft die See zur Veranschaulichung heranzieht. — M.A. sagt sterbend

¹⁾ de vn papirote > dune chiquenaude.

von seinem Tode: „scappyngè fro the see I se my selfe at a good fure porte“ (Fol. 83) und bedauert, daß er Commodus unter so großen Gefahren zurücklasse: „For as yet he knoweth not howe to aduenture to sayle on the see:“ (Fol. 83). Diese bildliche Darstellung des Lebens als eines Meeres ist bei G. außerordentlich beliebt. — In der Einleitung zu seiner Rede, in der er Panutius auseinandersetzt, warum er sterbend so traurig sei, sagt M. A.: „what turment ought to be in the see of my harte, whan fuche tremblynges and motions of erthe and reynes fet in the erthe of my body.“ (Fol. 77).

Pflanzenreich. — M. A. ist besorgt wegen seines Sohnes: „he shal goo out of the ryght waye, and wander in the buffhes and thornes of vices.“ (Fol. 77). — Nach der Rede des Donaubauern sagt M. A. zu seinen Freunden mit Bezug auf den Bauern: „what kernell of a nut . . . what grayne of strawe, what rose of thornes“ (Fol. 56).

Tierreich. — „The playe is fuche a vyce, that who so euer it bytethe, it is lyke the bytyng of a madde dogge.“ (Fol. 15). Dies gehört zu den Anweisungen, die M. A. den Erziehern des Commodus gibt. Besonders legt er ihnen nahe, Commodus vor der Fleischeslust zu bewahren: „Let not yet goo the reyne. For if he see the yonge mares he wyll neigh or braye if he see tyme.“ (Fol. 15). Diese metaphorische Bezeichnung eines jungen Mannes als eines Hengstes oder die eines Mannes als eines Pferdes ist im G. B. sehr beliebt.

Menschenleben. — Vom Leben sagt M. A.: „feruātes, whā they se the goyng out of the cādel of lyfe, care not for the clēfing of theyr lordes vyces“ (Fol. 76)¹⁾. — Auf die verschiedene Wertschätzung der geistigen Güter durch Weise und durch Toren bezieht sich: „that that is

¹⁾ „los criados quādo veen que se acaba la candela de la vida a sus señores: no curā de espauilar los vicios“ > „les seruiteurs quant voyēt q̄ se acheue la chandelle de la vie a leurs seign̄rs non cure de nottoyer les vices.“

meale with philosophers, is eaten but for branne and chaf with fimple folk: and contrarye wise the meale of the symple, is but branne & chaffe amonge wise men“ (Fol. 21). — Von ehrenwerten Frauen sagt M.A. zu Faustine „theyr shamefastnes and kepyng close, ben arowes in defence of our honestie.“ (Fol. 69). — Dem Commodus gibt der sterbende M.A. folgende Definition der Tugend: „Vertue is a strong castel, and can neuer be wonne: it is a riuer where nedeth no rowing, a see that moueth not, a fire that quencheth not, a treasure that neuer hath ende, an army neuer overcome, a burden that neuer werieth, a spie that euer retourneth, a syne that neuer deceyueth, a playne waye that neuer fayleth, a syrope that healeth forthwith: and a renoume that neuer perysheth“ (Fol. 88)¹⁾. Das Beispiel zeigt, wie reichlich dieser Tropus im G.B. vertreten ist, und vor allem, wie auch er vom Parallelismus getragen wird, wodurch die Aufmerksamkeit in noch höherem Maße befriedigt wird. Wir sehen ferner, wie die vom Sp. abweichenden Metaphern durch das Erz. sich im Englischen entwickelt haben. Diese und andere Reihen von Metaphern scheinen zufällig aneinandergereiht zu sein. Eine nähere Betrachtung zeigt aber, daß die Stellung ihrer Glieder vielfach durch begriffliche Verwandtschaft bedingt ist. — M.A. sagt: „yf I knewe that there were shops of sciēces, as there is of other marchaundise, I wol gyue al y I haue, only to lerne, that a wise man lerneth in one day.“ (Fol. 52). — G.s Vorliebe für den Sport, die ihn zu Jagdmetaphern veranlaßte, mag ihn dazu geführt haben, auch das Ballspiel metaphorisch zu verwenden: „there is nothing that more rechaceth the balle of

¹⁾ „La virtud es alcazar que nunca se toma, rio que no le vadean, mar que no se nauega, fuego que nunca se mata... atalaya que no se engaña, camino que no se fiente...“ > „La vertu cest vng chasteau fort qui jamais se peult prendre / vne riuiera qui ne se nauigue point / mer qui ne sesmeult / feu qui ne se tue ... vne enseigne qui ne trompe iamais / chemin qui est plain et ne peut faillir...“

the thought (in this playe) thanne the hande sette at worke therwith“ (Fol. 69).¹⁾ — Selbst dem boshaften Treiben der Kinder entnahm G. Metaphern: „atrauieffa el pie de malas costübres dôde todos tropieçẽ > gette en trauers le pied de mauuais exẽple ou tous trefbuchêt. > casteth backwarde his fote of euyll exaample, wherby all other euerthrowe.“ (Fol. 7).

Derartige Veränderungen wie auch Auslassungen und Hinzufügungen von Metaphern, sind bei Bern. nicht selten, ohne daß er dabei indes stilistische Gewandtheit bewiese. Bert. hingegen übernimmt gewöhnlich G.s Metaphern wörtlich; die Abweichungen, die man bei ihm findet, rühren meist von Übersetzungsfehlern her, z. B.: „La corte ... no es ... fino: ... vn mefon de vagabundos“ > „la court ... nest sinon vne *maison* de vagabondz“ > „The courte ... is nothing but ... a *house* of vacaboundes“ (Fol. 88): Bert. hat sich bei der Wiedergabe von „mefon“ durch „maison“ wieder von der äußeren Wortähnlichkeit verführen lassen und dadurch die sp. Metapher gänzlich verändert. — *q̄ en l p e fe bre del coracõ se ha de ceuar*“ > „qui en *linstestine* du cueur doit garder“ > „whiche is the *intestyne* of the harte“ (Fol. 13). Die frz.-engl. Umgestaltung der sp. Metapher wirkt unästhetisch. — Beseitigt ist die sp.-frz. Metapher in Fällen wie den folgenden: „todos ... fienten la herida: quando en el coraçon esta ya presa la yerua“ > „tous ... sentent la bleffeure quant dedans le cueur est defia la poison“ > „they wyll not beleue the poyson therof, tyll it be at theyr hartes“ (Fol. 88). — „ver q̄ se acaba la noche de mi vida“ > „veoir que se acheue la nuyct de ma vie“ > „to see the ende of this nyghte“ (Fol. 87); „Pero pues la passion de la carne en tal caso da de coces a la razõ“ > Mais puis q̄ la passion

¹⁾ „no ay cosa que mas rechace en este juego la pelota del pensamieto / que es la mano puesta en la obra“ > „il ny a chose que plus rechasse (en ce ioucq) la pelotte du pensement quest la main misse en loeure“.

dōne tant de coups de pied a la raison > but fyth that *passion repugneth* so moche at reason (Fol. 68). — Seltener ist es, daß Bern. eine Metapher bildet, wo er im Frz. keine fand, und wenn er dies tut, geschieht es mehr aus mangelndem Verständnis des Frz.

Allegorie.

Die Allegorie ist eine ausgedehnte Metapher. Ihr häufiges Vorkommen im G. B. ist auf die Neigung des G. zurückzuführen, seine Diktion möglichst reich zu gestalten. G.s Allegorien sind denselben Quellen entnommen wie seine Metaphern. Ihre veranschaulichende Wirkung überholt noch die der Metaphern, wenn auch die Ausmalung oft zu weit getrieben wird.

Die Allegorie ist im G. B. ein treffliches Mittel, die Abstufung einer oder mehrerer leidenschaftlicher Regungen zu veranschaulichen. Über die Liebe auf den ersten Blick von Masinissa und Sopharisa heißt es im G. B., daß beide „breakynge the oores of feare, and lyftyng vp the ankers of fhame, incontinent raifed the sayles of theyr hartes, and with the fhippes of theyr psons, they ioyned eche to other.“ (Fol. 67). Die Leidenschaft, welche die Liebenden einander zuführte, als Steuermann dargestellt! — „The vyce of the fleffhe in all tymes in all ages, and in all eftates holdeth his feafone or courfe, if it paffe not in the grene age of chyldehode, castynge of the reyne of reafone, and ftrykyng with the spurres of the flefhe, and blowynge with the trompe of sensualite: Takinge the bridell in the tethe, with a furious wyll rennyng through mountaynes and woddes after the mare. In leauynge her goinge but softelye and in the ouertakynge moche leffe.“ (Fol. 15). Der von der Sinnlichkeit getriebene Mensch wird in dem Bilde eines Reiters und eines Hengstes dargestellt. Die Beziehung auf die sinnliche Leidenschaft bildet die begriffliche Einheit dieses allegorischen Gedankenkomplexes.



Titelblatt.

(Verschiedene Zeichnungen in dieser Umrandung)

THE GOL
DEN
BOKE OF MARCVS
AVRELIVS EMPE
ROVR AND
ELO-
QVENT ORATOVV.

ANNO M. D. XXXV

THE TABVL.

(2. Blatt)



F the byrthe and lynage of Marke Aurelie Anthony emperour. Cap. i.

¶ What maysters Marke Aurelie had in his youthe. Cap. ii.

¶ What sciencis Marcus the emperour lerned, And of a merueylous letter that he sente to Polion. Cap. iii.

¶ Howe for the wyfedome of Marcus many wyfe men floryfhyd in his tyme. Capitu. iiii.

¶ Of the emperour Marcus fonne named Ueriffimus. Cap. v.

¶ What wife aunciente men Marcus chofe to instructe his fonne. Cap. vi.

¶ Howe it chaunced to fyue wife menne, wherfore they were put out of the emperours houle. capi. vii.

¶ Howe the emperour reasoned with the maysters that fhulde lerne his fonne. cap. viii. 15

Howe the maysters of princis oughte to kepe theym from vices. cap. ix.

¶ Howe themperour Marcus nouryfhed the princeffis his doughters. cap. x.

¶ Howe Marcus the emperour dyd chofe 7 proued his fonnes in lawe. cap. xi. 20

¶ What themperoure Marcus fayde to the father of a yonge man, that wolde mary one of his doughters. Capi. xii.

¶ How a fonne in lawe oughte to be well examined er he be accepted to his purpofe. Ca. xiii. 25

¶ Howe marc the emperour fauoured al noble exercyfes and hated trewandes and fooles. ca. xiiii.

¶ Of the good conuerfation of this emperour Marcus Aurelius. ca. xv.

(2. Blatt, Rück.)

Of the feaste that the Romaines kepte to the god Jano in Rome, and what chaunced to the fayd emperour there. cap. xvi. 30

Howe Marcus the emperour aunfwered a fenatour in the senate. Cap. xvii.

- 35 Howe the emperour Marcus deuyded the houres of the day
for the bufineffes of thempyre. cap. xviii.
- The aunfwere of Marke thempour, whan Fauftine his wyfe
demaunded the keye of his ftudy. cap. xix.
- The emperour reherfeth the perylles of them that haunte
40 women exceffyuelye. ca. xx.
- The emperours anfwere to Fauftine for that fhe fayd, fhe
was with chylde. cap. xxi.
- How tidynges was brought to thēperour, that the Mau-
ritaynes wolde conquere greate Brytayne. ca. xxii.
- 45 what the emperour fayd to them of his courte in efchew-
ing ydelnes. cap. xxiii.
- Of the peryllous lyuynges of them that haunte the courte
contynually. ca. xxiiii.
- Howe the emperour wold hauethē of his courte to liue. capit. xxv.
- 50 Of a meruaylous 7 fearefulle monfter that was feene in
Scicile, and of his wrytynges. ca. xxvi.
- What befelle to a citemen of Rome in the tyme of this em-
perour Marcus. ca. xxvii.
- Of a great peftilēce that was in Italy in this emperours
55 tyme. ca. xxviii.
- Howe Marcus answered his phifitions that wolde haue hym
leaue his ftudy. ca. xxix.
- How fciēce ought to be in pryncis. cap. xxx.
- What a villayne fayde to the fenatours of Rome in the
60 prefence of the emperour. ca. xxxi.
- Of dyuers other thynges that the villayne faid before the
fenate. ca. xxxii. (3. Blatt)
- Howe the emperour defyred the welth of his people, and
the people his welth. capi. xxxiii.
- 65 Howe the emperour gaue Lucilla his doughter licence to
fporte her at his palays. Ca. xxxiiii.
- What Marcus the emperour fayde to a fenatour as touchyng
triumphes. cap. xxxv.
- Of the great reproche that the emperour gaue to his wife
70 Fauftine and her doughter. Cap. xxxvi.

Howe the emperour counsayled Fauftine to efchewe ylle
occasions fro her doughter. ca. xxxvii.

what thoughte Marcus the emperour toke for the mariage
of his doughters. ca. xxxviii.

Of a fyknes, wherof the emperour dyed, of his aege, 7 where ⁷⁵
he dyed. ca. xxxix.

The wordes of Panutius, fecretary to the emperour, at the
houre of his deathe. ca. xl.

Howe the emperour demaunded to haue in wrytynge all
that the fecretary had fayde. cap. xli. 80

The anfwere of the emperour to Panutius. cap. xlii.

what the emperour fayd to the mayfters of his fon and to
the rulers of the mypyre. ca. xliii.

Howe the emperoure at the houre of his deathe, fente for
his fonne, and declared to him, who fhuld gouerne the ⁸⁵
empire. cap. xliiii.

what the emperour fayde to his fonne at the houre of his
deathe. ca. xlv.

Of other more perticuler counfels giuē by the emperour to
his fonne. ca. xlvi. 90

Of dyuers and pertycular recommendations, whiche the em-
perour commaunded his fonne. Capitulo. xlvii.

Of the laft wordes that the emperour fpake to his fonne,
and of a table that he gaue hym. ca. xlviii.

(3. Blatt, Rückf.) A letter fent by Marcus Aurelius to Pyramon his fpeciall ⁹⁵
frende. The fyrfte letter.

A letter fent by Marcus the emperour to Cornelius of the
trauayle of warre, 7 vanite of triumphe. The ii. letter.

To Torcatus beinge at Gayette in confolation of his ba-
nyfhement. The thyrde letter. 100

A letter of Domitius of Capue to comfort hym in his ba-
nyfhement. The fourth letter.

A letter fent fro the emperour to Claudius 7 Claudine his wife, bi-
caufe they beinge olde liued as yonge perfonne. The v. letter.


A letter fent fro Marcus the emperour to Labinia a Romaine ¹⁰⁵
widow for to cōfort her for the deathe of her houlebande.

The vi. letter.

- A letter sent by Marke the emperour to Cyncinatus his frend, bycause he beyng a gentilman became a marchant.
- 110 The feuenth letter.
- A letter sente from Marc the emperour to Catulus cenforius, that was sorowfull for the deathe of his sonne Uerissimus. The viii. letter.
- A letter sente by Marc the emperour to Marcurino, beyng
115 at Sanny nowe called Benaunte. The nynt letter.
- A letter sent by Marke themperour, to Antigonus, comfortynge hym in a sorowfulle case. The tenth letter.
- A nother letter sente by Marc the Emperour to the same Antigonus ageynste cruell iudges. The leuenth letter.
- 120 A letter sent by Marcus to Lambert gouernour of the yle of Helespont, whan he dyd banyfhe the vacaboundes from Rome. The .xii. letter.
- A letter sente by Marc themperour to Catulus his speciall frende of the nouelties of Rome. The .xiii. letter.
- 125 A letter sent by Marc thēperour to the amoureuse ladyes of Rome, bycause they made a play of him. The .xiiii. letter.
- (4. Blatt) A letter sent by Marc thēperour to Boemia a louer of his y wold haue gone with hym to the warres. The .xv. letter.
- The aunswere to the emperours letter sente by Boemia.
- 130 The fyxtenth letter.
- A letter sent by Marc thēperour to Matrine a yonge maiden of Rome, of whom he was enamoured, seenge her at a windowe. The feuententh letter.
- A nother letter sent by Marc themperour to the sayd gentyl woman Matrine. The eyghtenth letter.
- 135 A letter sente by Marc the emperour to Libia a fayre lady Romaine. The .xix. letter.

FINIS TABVLE.

*THE PROLOGVE.

(*A)  S the time is an inuentour of nouelties, and
a register certayne of thynges auncient, and
at the ende tyme gyueth ende to that suffreth
ende: The trouthe all onely amonge al thin-
ges is priuiledged, in fuche wyfe, that whan
the tyme semeth to haue broken her wynges, than as im-
mortall she taketh her force. There is nothyng so entier,
but it diminifheth, nor nothyng so hole, but that is wery,
nor nothyng so stronge, but that breaketh, nor nothyng
so well kepte, but that corrupteth. So all these thynges
tyme acheueth and burieth, but onely trouthe, the whiche
(of the tyme and of all thyng that is in the tyme) trium-
pheth, Neyther to be fauoured of the good, nor to be per-
secuted of the ylle, may be, that fomtyme trouthe may be
stopped and hydde, but whan it is displeased, and wyl dis-
please, than at the lafte she cometh to a good porte, and
taketh londe. The fruites in the fpryngynge tyme haue
not the vertue to gyue fustynaunce nor perfite fwetenes
to fatisfie the taſte of them that eateth therof: but than
paſſeth the ſeaſon of ſommer, and harueſt cometh, whi-
che tyme dothe better rype them, and than that that we
do eate dothe profyte vs, the profe therof is ryght faue-
ryneſſe, and gyueth the more force and vertue, and the
greater is the taſte. I wyll in theſe firſte wordes ſaye,
that in the fyrſte aeges men were more eſtemed by theyr
meke cuſtomes and delicatenes, than they were after re-
proued by their groſſe and rude vnderſtondynges. Cer-
taynely ſome of the auncient philoſophers, I ſpeake
of the mooste auncient, as welle Caldees as Grekes, who
fyrſte lyfted them ſelues to regarde the ſterres of the he-
uen, and ſurmounded the hyghe mounte of Olympius,
there to contemplate and regarde the influences of the
pla-

A

(*A, Rückss.) *planettes in the heuen: I dare well faye, that they haue rather meryted pardon by their ignoraunces, than pray-
 35 fyng or grace by their wyfedom. These were the fyrste that wolde ferche the trouthe of the elementes of the heuen, and yet they were the firste that dyd fowe errours in thyn-
 ges natural of the erthe. Homere in his Illiade said these wordes in speakyng of philosophers: I prayse nothyng
 40 the knowlege of myn auncesters, but I can them great thanke and prayse, in that they desyred knowlege. This was wel sayd of Homere. For if among the auncient men had not raygned suche ignorance, there had not ben
 so many sectis of parcialities in euerye scole. He that
 45 hath redde the auncient antiquities of the philosophers, shall not denaye me, the presumption of the knowledge and ignorance of that they desired to knowe, the whiche is chiefe cause, that science is not all one: There is great
 nombre of parcialities, Cynitiens, Catōiens, Peripati-
 50 ciens, Academyens, and Epicuriens, who were contrary in their opinions, as dyuers in their naturalities. I wylle not that my penne be so dismeasured to reprove so moche the auncient men, that the glorie all onely shoulde abyde
 with them that be present. Truely if he merite guardon
 55 and prayse, that sheweth me the way, wherby I thynke to passe: yet no lesse meryteth he that sheweth and aduise me of the way, wherby I may faye. The ignoraunce of the auncient men hath ben but as a guyde to aduise and
 aduertise all other, and bycause they erred, we haue foude
 60 sythe the way, to their great prayse, 7 to our great shame. I say that yf we that be now present had bene than, we had knowen lesse than they dydde. And yf they that were
 than were now at this houre, they shulde surmount vs in knowlege. And that this is trewe, it appereth wel. For
 65 the anciēt sages, with their diligence to know the trouthe,
 by

(*A. ii.) *by their clofe and ferme made the wayes: But we by our flouth folowe not the open wayes. Than to the purpofe that I wyll fay, we that be nowe prefent, we can not complayne of them that haue bene, but that the trouthe (the whiche accordynge to Aul. Gel. is doughter of the time) 70 In this tyme of the worlde declareth to vs the errours that we ought to flee, and the trouthe of the doctrine that we ought to folowe. But as nowe the humayne malyce is fo experte, and the vnderftondynge of mortall men is fo dulle, that in tyme of nede, in goodnes the wytte faylleth, 75 7 in all yll we knowe more than we ought to knowe. In fuche wife, that fome with one parte of the more, and fome with leffe, al prefume to wyn the game. And though this be true, yet it is but a fmalle thyng to that we abyde fore: There is fo moche that we oughte to knowe. For 80 the moſte that we knowe, is the leaſte parte of that we be ignorant of, as in thynges naturall, accordyng to the varietie of the tyme, lyke maner doth the operations of the elementes. In ſemblable wyſe in thynges mortall, as the ages hath ſucceded, fo are diſcouered the ſciēces. For cer- 85 tayne all the fruites cometh not togyder. Whan one fayleth an other begynneth to entre in ſeaſon. I wyll ſaye, that neyther all doctours amonge chryſten men, nor all the philoſophers amonge the gentylles were concurrant in one tyme, but after the deathe of one good an nother 90 came better. The hygh and ſupreme wyſedome, the whiche all meane thynges gouerneth by Juſtice, and departeth it accordynge to his bountie, wyll not that at oone tyme the worlde ſhulde want or be deſtitute of ſage men, nor at an other tyme want of ſymple perſones: ſome de- 95 fyringe the fruite, and ſome the leaues. In ſuch fort that they ſhuld haue enuy of that other were impeched. This auncient world that ranne in Saturnus dayes, the whiche

A. ii.

(*A. ii. Rückss.) *che otherwyse was called the golden worlde, the whiche
 100 was so esteemed of them that sawe it, and so moche prayed
 of theym that herde the writynge therof, and so moche
 desired of them that felt no part therof, was not gold
 by the fages that dyd gylte it, but bycause that there was
 none yll that did vngylt it. This our age now is of iron:
 105 yet it is not called of iron, for faut of fages, but bycause
 the malycious people surmount. I confesse one thyng,
 and I thynke I shall haue many wyll fauour me in the
 same, that there was neuer in the worlde so moche people
 teachynge vertue, and so fewe folowynge the same. Aul
 110 Gele sayth in his boke, that the ancient fages were holdē
 in reputation, bycause there were fewe teachers and many
 lerners: 7 at this houre it is contrary, there be but fewe
 lerners and many teachers. The smal esteeme that the fa-
 ges beinge [sic] at this tyme may be sene by great veneration,
 115 that the philosphers were holden in as than, the whiche
 thyng was true: Homer amonge the grekes, Salomon
 amonge the Hebrewes, Lygurge amonge the Lacedemo-
 nyens, Lyuie amonge the Romaines, Cicero amonge the
 Latines, Apolonius Thianeus amonge al the barbarike
 120 nations. I desyre to haue ben in all these ages, whan the
 worlde was so ryche of sage persons, and so pore of sim-
 ple persons whan they assembled out of ferre countreis,
 and of dyuers realmes and strange nations: not al one-
 ly to haue hard their doctrines, but also to haue sene their
 125 persons. I thynke I am not begyled in the histories, for
 whan Rome in his moste prosperitie was hyghest in tri-
 umphe, Titus Liuius doth write it in his historyes, and
 the glorious faynt Ierome affyrmeth it in the prologe of
 the byble, that mo people came to Rome to se the eloquen-
 130 tes of the bokes, more than to ioy any Romain triumph.
 Whan Olympias was delyuered of her childe the greate
 Alexander

(*A. iii.) *Alexander, Philip her hufbande and father to the yonge chylde wrote a letter to Ariftotle, wherin he fayd: I gyue great graces to the goddis, not all onely that they haue gyuen vnto me a fonne, but bicaufe they haue gyuen him ¹³⁵ to me in the tyme that thou mayft be his mayfter, and he thy difciple. Marc Aurele the emperour, of whom this prefent boke intreateth, he fpeakynge of hym selfe wrote to Polion thefe wordes: Frende I wyl thou knowe, that I am not made emperour by reafon of the blode of my pre- ¹⁴⁰ deceffours, nor yet for the fauour of my lineage nowe prefent, but it was bycaufe I haue ben always a frende, and loue of the fage people, and enmy to them that haue no good knowlege. Ryght happy was Rome to chofe fo valiant an emperour, and ryght fortunate was that empe- ¹⁴⁵ rour to come to fuche an empire, not by patrymonie but by fagenes. And if that aege was glourious in ioyinge of his perfone, no leffe it is to vs to ioye of his doctrines. I wyll intitule this boke the golden boke. It maye be called golden, by caufe in fo high eftimation it holdeth the ver- ¹⁵⁰ tuous difcoueringe in their tymes this boke with the fentences, as thefe princes holdeth their mynes of golde in their Indes. But I fay that at this houre there be moo hartes banyfhed into the Indes of golde, than to employ them to rede the werkes of this boke. Saluft fayth, that ¹⁵⁵ there ought great glory be gyuen to them that haue done thefe hygh and great actes: And that there ought no les fame and renowme be gyuen to them that in a good ftile haue writen them. In this cafe I confefse to deferue no merites for my traduction or any fame, but I demaunde ¹⁶⁰ pardon of all them that be fage, for the fawtes that they fhall fynde therein. For excepte the diuine letters, there is nothyng fo well written, but that there maye be founde neceffitie of correction, lyne, and censure. Semed this
to be

A. iii.

(*A. iii., 165 Rückss.) *to be trewe, by that Socrates was reproued of Plato, and Plato of Aristotile, Aristotile of Abenruyz, Scilio of Sulpice, Lelie of Uarro, Maring of Tomee, Enio of Horace, Senec of Aule Gele, Estratocles of Strabo, Tefato of Galene, Hermagore of Cicero, Origen of faint Jerom, 170 saynt Jerome of Ruffyn, and Ruffyn of Donate: Sythe that in them 7 in their werkes there hath bene correcti- on, who were men of hyghe knowlege, it is no reason that I fhulde be in their fraternitie, seinge that I knowe so ly- tel as I do, to the examynation of wise and vertuous men. 175 To them I submyt this present warke, and to them that haue ben suche, I them require to be content to be the re- ders, and not iuges therof. It were no pacience to suffre, nor lawe to permytte, that a thyng that a sage persone with great maturitie and deliberation hath written, to be 180 disprayed by a fymple persone. For ones redyng, often- tymes the auctours and wryters are dysprayed, not of them that can traduce and compose werkes: but of them that can not vnderstande them, and yet lesse rede them. I say further of aduantage, that dyuers haue written of 185 the tyme of the sayd Marke Aureleo emperour, as Hero- dian wrote lyttel, Eutropio lesse, Lampridio yet lesse, Ju- lius Capytolyn somewhat more. The writinges of them and of other semeth rather epytomes thanne hystories. There is dyfference betwene this writinge, and that they wrote 190 by herynge say: but they by whom I haue composed this present warke, they were wytnesse by fyght, and not by hering of other but they wrote what they saw them self: That is to say amonge the maysters, who lerned the said emperour their sciēces, there were thre, that is to say, 195 Junio Raftico, Cina Catule, and Sexto Cheronense, ne- uewe to the greatte Plutarke. These bene they that haue written this present historie, Sexto Cheronense in greke, and

(*A. iiii.) *and the other two in latyne. I thynke of this hiftorye is but
 fmall notyce, bycaufe vnto this houre it hathe not be fene
 imprinted. Whan I departed from the college of my ftu- 200
 dy, and went to preache in the palays, where I fawe fo
 many newe nouelties in the courtes, I delybered my felfe
 with greate defyre to knowe thynges, and gaue my felfe
 to ferche and knowe thynges auncient. And the case for-
 tuned on a daye, redynge an hiftorie, I founde therin mat- 205
 ter to be noted in a pistle, and it femed to me fo good, that
 I put all myn humayne forces to ferche farther. And af-
 ter in reuoluyng dyuers bokes, ferchyng in dyuers libra-
 ries, and alfo fpeakynge with diuers fages of dyuers re-
 almes, fynally I founde this tretife in Florence, amōge 210
 the bokes left there by Cofme de Medicis, a man of good
 memorie. I haue vfed in this writyng, the whiche is hu-
 mayne, the whiche dyuers tymes hath ben vfed in diuinitie,
 that is to reduce, not worde for worde, but fentence for fen-
 tence: We other interpretours are not bounde to gyue for 215
 the meane the wordes, it fuffifeth to gyue for the weyght
 the fentence: As the hiftoriographes, of whome there were
 dyuers, and the hiftorye that they made was all but one
 thyng: I will not deny, but I haue lefte out fome wordes,
 which were not mete, nor wel syttyng, rude, and left of 220
 valure, and I haue medled it with other more fwete and
 profitable. I thynke that euery wyfe man, after he hath
 redde this boke, wyll not faye that I am the principal au-
 ctour of this warke, nor yet to iuge me fo ignorant to ex-
 clude me cleane from it, for fo hygh sentences are not founde 225
 at this prefent tyme, nor to fo hygh a ftyle they of tyme
 paff neuer atteyned vnto.

Here endeth the
 prologue.

MARCVS AVRELIVS.

(*A. iiii.,
Rücks.)

¶ Here begynneth the boke of the lyfe of the noble
and eloquent Marke Aurele emperour,

¶ Of the byrthe and lygnage of Marke aurele
Anthony emperour. cap. primo.

IN the yere of the foundation of Rome. vi. C.
Lxxxxv. in the Olimpiade a. C. lxiii. Anthony
the meke, beinge deed, than consulles Fuluie
Catō, and Gnee Patrocle in the high capi-
tol, the iiii. daye of Octobre, at the demaunde
of al the people Romain, and consent of the sacred Se-
nate, was declared for emperour vniuerfall of all the mo-
narche of Rome, Marc Aurelee Anthony. This excellent
baron was naturally of Rome borne in the mounte Celie.
And accordyng as Julius Capitolyne sayth, he was born
the .vi. kalendes of May, the whyche accordynge to the
accompt of the latyns, was the .xxvi. daye of the moneth
of Apryl passed. His father was named Anio Uero. For
occasyon wherof the hystories dyuers tymes calle hym
Marc Anthony Uero. True it is, that Adriane the empe-
rour called hym Uerissimus, bycause in hym was neuer
founde no lyes, nor neuer fayled the trouthe. These Anius
Ueres was a lygnage, that auauenced them to be descēded
of Numa Pompilio, and of Quinto Curtius the famous
Romain: whiche for to delyuer the towne of Rome from
peryll, and to gyue his persone perpetuall memorye, of
his owne good free wylle he yelded hym selfe to the same
vorage, that as than was sene in Rome. The mother of
this emperour was called Domiciade, as Cyne historien
recounteth in the bokes of the lygnages of Rome. The
Camilles were persones in that tyme greatly esteemed, by
cause they were accompted to be descended of Camille y
famous

(*f. 1) *famous and auncient capitayne Romaine, whiche dely-
 uered Rome from the Gaulles that had wonne hit. The
 men that descended of that lygnage were called Camil- 30
 li, for the remembraunce of Camille, and the womenne were
 also calledde Camilles, in the remembraunce of a dought-
 er of the fayde Camille, that was called Camilla.
 There was an auncient lawe, that all Romainys shuld
 haue a particuler priuilege in the same place where their 35
 predeceffours had done to the Romaine people any great
 seruice. For this auncient custome they had priuylege, so
 that all they of the lynage of Camylle were kept and
 mayntayned in the high capitoll. And in case the variete
 of the tyme, the multitude of tyrantes, the ebulition and 40
 mouynge of ciuill warres were cause of the dymynysfhyng
 of the auncient Policye of Rome, and introduced in ma-
 ner a lyfe not verye good, yet for all that we rede not, that
 the preemynence of the Romaines were broken, but if
 it were in the tyme of Sylla, whā he made the vniuer- 45
 fall prescription agaynst the Marians. After the dethe
 of this cruell Sylla, in exaltynge of hym felfe, Julius
 Cesar the pitiefull, made dictatour of Rome, and chiefe of
 the Marians, adnulled and vndyd all that Silla had
 made, and brought agayn into the auncient estate the 50
 common welthe.

¶ What hath ben the condicions, the state, pouertie,
 rycheffe, fauour, or disfauour of the auncestours of this
 Marc Aurelee Emperour, we fynde not in the auncient
 histories, and yet it hath ben diligently ferched. The 55
 ancient Romaine hystoriens were not accustomed to write
 the lyues of the emperours fathers, namely whan they
 be made monarches, but the merytes and graces that
 their children had, as for the auctoritie that they had in-
 heritynge their fathers. Trouthe it is, as saythe Julius 60
 Capi-

B

(*f.1^b) *Capitolyn, the father of Marc Aurelee themperour had ben pretour in exercifes, and capitayne in the Frontiers, in the tyme of Traian the good, & Adrian the wyfe, & Anthony the meke, emperours. This is confirmed by that
 65 the fame Marc Aurelee wrote (being at Rodes) to a frēd of his called Polion, that was at Rome, fayinge thus: Many thinges haue I felte and knowen frende Polion, by the abfence of Rome, namely of that I fe my felfe here alone in this yle: but as vertue maketh a ftraunger na-
 70 turall, and vice tourneth naturalle to a ftraunger: And as I haue ben .X. yeres here at Rodes to rede philosophy, I therby repute my felfe as naturall of this lande, 7 that hath caufed me to forgette the pleafures of Rome, and it hath lerned me the maners of the yle. And here I haue
 75 founde many of my fathers frendes. Here was capitayn agaynst the Barbariens, to my lorde Adrian, Anthonye my father in lawe, the fpace of XV. yeres. I lette the to wyte, that the Rodyan people are curteis, and ful of good graces. I wolde haue redde philosophy as longe as my
 80 father had ben at Rodes in warre, but I may not: for Adrian my lorde commandeth me to go and kepe refidēce at Rome, howe be it euery man reioyseth to fee his naturall countrey.

¶ So by the wordes of this letter it is to be beleued, that
 85 Anio Uero, father to this emperour Marc, had applyed the mooste parte of his lyfe in warre. It was not the custome lyghtly to trufte a perfon to haue the office of a gouernour on the Frontiers, without he had ben well exercyfed in the feates of warre. And as all the glorye of the Ro-
 90 maynes was to leaue after theym good renowme, the fayd Marc certaynly was taken for the mooste vertuous, and had greateft frendes in the Senate, wherby he trusted on the conquest of the moft cruell enmyes: according
 as

(*f. 2) *as the fayd Sextus Cheronense historien sayth. The Romayns all though they had in their handes moſte peryl-⁹⁵ lous warres, yet they had in foure partes of the empire ſtronge and entier garnifons. That is to ſay in Byzance, the whiche is nowe Constantinoble, by reaſon of theym of the oriente: And Engades, the whiche nowe is calledde Calyx, a citie of Spayne, for loue of theym of the weſt: In the¹⁰⁰ ryuer of Rhodano, which is nowe y ryuer of Ryne, for the Germaynes: And in Colloſſe, whiche now is called the Rhodes, bycauſe of the Barbariens. In the kalendes of Januarie, whan the ſenate deuyded the offyces, beinge pourueyed of a dictatour, and of two conſulles yerely,¹⁰⁵ Incontinent in the thirde place they prouided for foure moſte excellent barons to defende the ſayde foure Frontiers: The whiche ſemeth to be trewe, for the moſte famous and renownmed barons in their yong dais were capitaynes in the ſaide Frontiers. The great Pompeius was ſente¹¹⁰ to the Byzaunces Constantinoble: The worthy Scipio was ſent to the Colloſſences and Rodyans: And the courageous Julius Cefar was ſente with the Gadytaines of Calyx of Spayne: And the ſtronge eſtemed Marcus [sic] was ſent to them of the ryuer of Ryne. This we ſay bycauſe¹¹⁵ that Anio Uero father to Marc Aurele emperour had ben prouoſt and pretour in the offices, and one of the capitaynes of the Frontiers, which ought to be in Rome one of the perſones moſte eſtemed.

¶ What mayſters Marke Aurelee hadde
in his youth. Cap. xii.

VUe haue not by any autentike histories, fro whens,¹²⁰ whan, or how, in what maner, or in what exercyſes or with what perſones, or in what londes was ſpent & cō-
fu-

B. ii.

(*f.2^b)*fumed the most parte of the lyfe of this good emperour.

But to be fhorte, Julius Capitolyn faith, that he had ben
 125 xxiii. yere vnder the commaundement of Adrian the emperour. Howe be it contrarie wife is founde by other hyftorians, accordynge as faithe Sexto Cheronenfe in his hiftorie. It was not the custome of the Romainys cronicles to write the thynges doone by these princes, before
 130 they were princes, but onely of yonge people, beinge in their yonge age, hauynge greate and hye magnificence, and doing gret enterprifes. This femeth to be of trouth: for Sueton Tranquill recounteth largely the fearefulle dedes and enterprifes doone by Caius Jule, done in his
 135 yonge age, to fhewe to princes to comme, howe it was a great ambition, that they had to atteyn to the monarchy, and but of fmall wytte and maturitie to kepe theym felfe therein. It is no newe thyng for men that gape for hye and frayle thinges. For the more higher the magnificēce
 140 is, the more lower they fele fortune. And when they were diligent to accomplyfhe their defire, as moche thoughte had they to conferue their quietnes and rest. In cafe thā that Anio Uero father to Marke the emperour, folowed the exercife of warres: yet he put his fonne in the way to
 145 lerne science. For there was a lawe fore vfed and accustomed, and well kepte in the Romaine policie, that euerye citifen, that enioyed the lybertie of Rome, and had accomplyfhed .x. yeres: their sonnes fhuldenot be fuffred to go by the ftretes as vacabondes, nor it fhulde not be fuffred
 150 by the Censure, who gouerned Rome, & dayly toke hede to the forfaytes done therein, to fuffre a chylde no lenger than .x. yeres of his age to play the childe. But fro thens forth the father of the childe fhulde be bounde to norifhe hym out of the circuite of Rome, or to laye a pledge that
 155 his fonne fhulde do no folyes. Whan Rome triumphed,
 and

(*f. 3) *and by their policie gouerned all the worlde, it was certaynly a meruaylous and monstruous thyng to se it thē, and no lesse fearefull vnto vs now to here therof. There was at that tyme in Rome .iiii. hūdred .M. inhabitantes amonge whom there was .ii. hūdred. M. yonge people, that were refreyned and brydled fro their yonge pleasures. The sonne of Cato was chaastyfed, bycause he was wylfull and presumptuous. And also the brother of good Cyna was banyshed, bycause he went ydelly as a vacabunde. Without that Cicero begyleth vs in his bokes of the Romaine lawes, no Romaine ought to stray abroad in the stretes of Rome, but if he bare in his hād the signe or token of the offyce, wherby he lyued. To thentent that euery man shuld knowe, that he lyued by his trauayle, & not by the sweate of other men. This lawe was kepte of euery person. The emperour hadde borne before hym a brennyng brande: The consulle an axe of armes: the priestes a hat in maner of a coyfe: the senatours a tonge in maner of a crufyble on their armes, the censure a lyttelle table: the tribunes a mace: the centurions a fygne or baner, the oratours a boke, the gladiatours a swerde, the tayllours sheares, the smythes a hammer, and in like wyse of all the other offices and craftes. We maye knowe than by this that is said, that after y Marc Aurelee was borne at Rome, his father in his youthe had taught hym good norture. And though it so were, that the begynnyng of his yonge aege shulde be hydde from vs: at the leaste waye we are certayne, that the myddell aege and ende of hym was ryghte glorious. His father Anio Uero wolde that his sonne Marcus Aurelius shulde leaue feates of armes, and folowe study. And surely it is to be thought, that it was done more by the valyauntnes of the father, than the cowardenes of the sonne, excepte the deedes of them

B. iii.

8*

(*f.3^b) *them that be deed begyle vs that ben alyue, and the caufe
 190 iudged by clere vnderstandynge, and that we fynde moo
 sentences of dyuers fadde perfonen, that there hath ben
 but fewe that ben lofte by writinges and lernynge, ye and
 a great meynie fewer that haue had auantage by armes.
 Reuolue all bokes, and ferche through all realmes, and
 195 finally they fhew vs, that very few in their realmes haue
 ben happy in armes, but there haue ben many famous &
 renowmed by fcripture and lernynge. Take here example
 and fe if it be true or not that I fay. Had the Affiriens mo
 than one kynge, that was Ninus, one Ligurge amonge
 200 the Lacedemonians, the Egyptiens one Ptholome, the
 Hebrewes one Machabee, the Grekes one Hercules, the
 Macedoniens one Alexāder: the Epirotiens one Pyrrhe,
 one Hanyball the Carthageniens, and one Julius Cefar
 amonge the Romainys? It is not thus of lerned men:
 205 for yf the grekes had one Homer, no leffe the Grekes vaun-
 teth them of the .vii. fages, of whom we beleue more in
 their philofophy, than Homer in the warres of Troy. For
 as difficile it is to fynde a trouthe in Homere, as a lye in
 thefe fages. Semblably the Romaines hadde not onely
 210 Cycero as ryght eloquent, but alfo they had Saluft, Lu-
 can, Titus Liuius, with a great company of noble men,
 and well approued, who haue left right great credence in
 their fcriptures in the fayinge of trouth. What loft Cice-
 ro in the fenate for vſing of inuectiues: And as we fay of
 215 fo ſmall nombre of Grekes and latynes, we may ſaye of
 the Affiriens, Perfians, Medes, Argiues, Acayens, Pe-
 niens, Frenchemen, Britons, Englyſhemēn, and Spa-
 nyardes. All the whiche nations withoute comparifon
 haue of them ſelfe lefte more memorie, and haue honou-
 220 red theyr londes and countreyes more by writinge, than
 they that hath lefte ſignes by armes. Than let vs leaue
 theſe

(*f. 4) *these straunge histories, and retourne to the pithe of our
emperour Marcus Aurelius, as Eutrope recountethe. According as this excellent baron lerned diuers sciences,
so he had dyuers maysters to teache hym. He studied grā- ²²⁵
mer with a mayster named Euphormion, musyke with an
other named Senio Comode, eloquence with Alexander
a greke, In naturall philosophy he had to his maysters
Comode Calcedonien an auncient baron, whiche expoun-
ded to hym Homer, and Sexto Cheronense neuw to the ²³⁰
great Plutarche. Also he studied in the lawes, and Volu-
fio Meciano was his mayster. This emperour esteemed
to haue the knowlege of payntyng, and to graue in wood
and metall, in erthe, and other sculptures, in whiche art
his maister was Diogenito, in his tyme a famous and re- ²³⁵
nowmed paynter. He traуayled also to knowe and ferche
what extended to the art of Nygromancye. By occasion
wherof he went openly to here Apolonio. And to thentēt
that there shulde be nothyng vnlearned of hym, he aboue
all sciences sette his mynde to Cosmography, in the whi- ²⁴⁰
che for his maysters, he toke Junio Rastico, that sythe
wrote his lyfe, and Cina Catule, the whiche wrote of his
dethe, and the lyfe of Comode his sonne. Of these noble
and excellent barons, that floueryffhed in those dayes, he
was taughte in vertues and sciences. Cicero lamentethe ²⁴⁵
the auncient policie of Rome, bycause that he sawe great
losse in the common welthe than present, sayinge in his
Retorike, that the auncient Romainys had alway regard
to that parte, where as they thought moste damage and pe-
ryll shulde growe. There were .v. thynges amonge all ²⁵⁰
other in Rome, whervnto they hadde euer a vigilant re-
specte, the whiche the senate neded not to care for, nor no
lawe dispensed for them: and these ben they, the priestes
were honest, and the virgines vestales righte chaste: the
penal-

(*f.4^b)²⁵⁵ *penalties right iust, the capitaynes full valyant: They that taught yonge chyldren were vertuous. It was not permytted in Rome, that he that was a mayster in scyences, shulde be discipule of vices.

¶ what sciences Marcus the emperour lerned.

And of a meruayllous letter that he
sent to Polion. Cap. iii.

²⁶⁰ **P**hiloftrate sayth, that it was demaunded of Polion, who was the richeste man of the worlde. He answered, It was he that had moſte wyſedome. He was demanded agayne, who was moſte poore. He answered, he that had, leſt wytte. Of trouth
²⁶⁵ it was a worthy ſentence of ſuche a perſone. The effecte thereof we ſe dayly by experience, the wyſe flydyng in diuers chances of fortune, releueth hym ſelfe: The vnwitty perſone, in very ſmall thynges touchyng his lyuyng not greatly decayed falleth downe. There is nothyng
²⁷⁰ that is loſt, but that there is hope of recouering, if it be in the handes of a wiſe man. And contrarie wiſe there is no thyng ſo affured, but the recouerance thereof ought to be feared, if a ſole haue the guidinge thereof. It was axed of Xenophon the philoſopher, whether he had rather to be
²⁷⁵ foolyſhe and a greate lorde, or to be wyſe and poore. He answered and ſayde, I haue pitie of a ryche foole, and I haue enuye of a wyſe man waxen poore. For if a wyſe man haue but one fote, yet wyll he ryſe and kepe hym ſelf from fallynge. And if ye gyue an abbay to a foole, yf by
²⁸⁰ fortune he fall, he wyll neuer releue agayn. ye may think that the father that dieth and leaueth his ſonne pore and wyſe, that he leaueth to hym moche. And he that leaueth his
his

(*f. 5) *his sonne riche and foolyshe, I thinke he hath lefté hym no-
 thyng. These thynges confidered, Anio Uero father of
 the emperour, as a father that loued his sonne hartily, was ²⁸⁵
 not contente to delyuer one mayster to his sonne to make
 hym vertuous, and to lerne one science, wherwith he myghte
 occupie his vnderstondynge, but he gaue hym many may-
 sters, that refreyned hym from vices, and cōmaunded
 that he shulde lerne many sciences, to thentent that he shulde ²⁹⁰
 be the more befily exercised. Whan & howe moche he tra-
 uayled to lerne, and what sciences, and with whom, and
 with what wyll he lerned, and what he knew, he wrote
 hym selfe, beinge at Agrippine, now called Coleyne, to a
 frende of his named Polyon, as it foloweth. 295

¶ Frende Polion thou meruaylest why that I leaue not
 to lerne newe thynges at the ende of my dayes. He that
 hath but one meate to eate, and can not eate therof, he le-
 ueth it, and peraduenture it was holsom for hym, and ea-
 teth other thinges that he seeth, whiche may be hurtefull ³⁰⁰
 to hym. It is a great magnificence to hym that seeth that he hath dy-
 uers fortes of meates, so that if he haue no lust to one that
 is good for hym, he may take of an other, that is better.
 He that is wyse may vnderstonde me withoute any more
 declarynge. As in all artes a man is contente at the last, ³⁰⁵
 so at the laste be they neuer so fwete, they torne to a wery-
 nesse. He that knoweth but one science, though he be wyse,
 yet he renneth in great daungier. For beinge annoyed ther-
 with, he wyll occupie his lyfe in other hurtfull thynges.
 The noble and worthy perſones, that caste flouth ³¹⁰
 fro them, haue lefté of them eternall memorie, not
 wyllynge to lerne all .onely one science to attempre their
 vnderstondynge with, but also trauaylle to lerne dyuers other,
 wherwith they ſharp their wittes, to thentent that they
 be not dulled and made blont. In all naturall thyn- ³¹⁵
 ges

C

(*f. 5^b) *ges, nature is with right lyttell content, but the spirite & vnderstandyng is not fatisfied with many thinges. And fithe the vnderstandyng is of fuche condicion, that it is lofte by libertie, and is lyghtly encombred, with subtilite
 320 it perceth, with quicknes it knoweth, & with ignorance it wasteth: it is necessarie bytime to remoūt to very hie thīges, lest it bow vnto lowe and yl thynges. All corporalle damages that chaunce to mortall men, are by medicines healed, or by reson remedied, or by length of tyme cured, or els by dethe ended. The onely vnderftondyng, which
 325 is dufked in errours, and depraued in malyces, can not be healed by medicines, nor redressed by reason, nor holpe by counsell. The auncient philosophers in the fayd happye golden worlde and golden age, dyd not all only lerne
 330 one thyng, wherby to fusteyne their lyfe, and to encrease good fame: But they trauaylled, to knowe all that was to be knowen, and yet euer foughte to knowe more. In the .lxxv. of the Olympiade, as dyuers perfones were assembled in the hygh mountayne Olympius to celebrat
 335 the playes, by fortune thyder came a philosopher of Thebes, whiche had made all that euer he brought with him. He made his showes, his cote, and sewed his fherte, and had written his bokes, and so of all other thinges. They that were there assembled, were abashed and meruaylled
 340 greatly that one man coude do it. He was dyuers tymes asked where he lerned so many thynges. And he aunswered and fayde, the flouthe of man is the cause, that one arte is deuided into dyuers artes. For he that knoweth al artes togyther, must nedes knowe one alone. This philosopher answered highly. And surely they that herd him,
 345 ought to haue ben as greatly afhamed of his wordes, as this philosopher was of the vainglory of his apparel. Let euery man remembre hym selfe, and let no man blame the
 fhort-

(*f. 6) *fhortnes of the time, nor wekenes of our nature. For ther is nothyng fo harde, but it is made soft: nor fo high, but it ³⁵⁰ may be raught: nor kept fo close, but it may be fene: nor fo subtyl, but it may be felt: nor fo dark, but it may be lygh- ted: nor fo profounde, but it may be discouered: nor fo dif- ceuered, but it may be gathred to gyther: nor fo loft, but it may be found: nor fo impossible, but it may be conferued, ³⁵⁵ if with al our hartes we occupie our powers in good exer- cises, and applye our vnderstandynge in highe thynges. I deny not, but our nature is lyttell worth: But I knowlege that lesse worth is our flouthfulnes. I wold demāde of euyll men, the whiche praye vs to be good, and axeth ³⁶⁰ counfelle of vs for their sensualitie, sayenge, that they be weake and frayle, al though they haue vnderstondynge to inuent euyls, and haue strengthe inough to put them in ef- fecte, and to perceuer therin, they neuer lacke constaunce. The cause is we calle it naturall for to doo and commytte vi- ³⁶⁵ ces and miseries. And flouth in vertue we cālle straunge and weake bycause of the werkes.

Lette no man infame our nature for beyng weake and faynt: nor laye not to the goddes, that they be cruell: for we haue no lesse ablenes to do well than redynesse to do ³⁷⁰ yll. Let none say, I wyll, and I can not withdrawe me from vice. It is better sayd I maye, but I wyll not folowe vertue. I wyll not defame strange realmes, but I wyll speake of vs that be latynes, and by them shall be fene howe they haue bene full of malyce, and that they ³⁷⁵ myght haue done well. I wolde wyte of the dedes, that Marcus Anthonius dyd with Cleopatra. The proscrip- tion that Scilla made of the nobles of Rome. The coniuration that Catilina inuented agaynste his countreye, The bloudde that was shedde for the cause of Pompeye ³⁸⁰ in the campe of Pharsale, and the great thefte that Ju- lius

C. ii.

(*f. 6b) *lius Cefar made of the treasour, the cruelties that Nero
 dyd to his mother, the fhames that Caligula commytted
 with his fifters, the trefon that Brutus dyd to his father
 385 Gaius, the fhrewdenes and cruelties that Domician dyd
 to the virgins vestales, the treafons that Julius Patro-
 clus vfed with the Sylitiens and Syculians, the frays
 & murders that Ulpio the maryner made in the temples
 and churches of Champayne. I wolde knowe of fuch as
 390 I haue rehersed, and dyuers other that I haue left,
 that applyed them to fo many fhrewde turnes, who letted thē
 (if they had wolde) to haue applied them in doinge other
 good dedes? All this I haue fayde my frende Polyon, to
 aunfwere to that ye haue demaunded of me. That is, in
 395 what sciences I haue wafted and confumed my tyme.
 Wherefore it pleafeth me to telle it to the. Anio Uero my
 father suffred me but .viii. yeres in my chylhdhode: than
 tyl I was .x. yere of age I went to fchole for to wryte and
 rede: and than fro .x. to .xiii. I went to ftudy with Eufor-
 400 mion, and lerned grammer: fro .xiii. to .xvii. I lerned
 eloquence with Alexander y greke, a famous oratour: thā
 after that tyme to .xxii. I was with Sexto Calcedon ler-
 nynge naturall philosophy. Thofe yeres paffed, I was at
 Rhodes and ftudied humanitie tyll I was .xxxii. yere of
 405 age. And thā I wēt to Naples, whereas I was thre yere
 with Fonton a greke, lernynge greke letters. And I
 put my good wylle foo moche thereto, that I fpake and wrote
 greke more eafily than latin. Than I retorned to Rome,
 where the warre of Dace arofe, to the whiche Adrian my
 410 lorde fent me in perfone: And bycaufe that in armes and tyme of
 warre I coude carye no bokes of fcience, I determyned
 me to lerne the fcience of mufike with Hieronime Como-
 de, to thentent that I myght with fwetenes of instrumen-
 (*f. 7) tes refstreyne my body fro certayne vices whi*che as than in
 my

my house began to take force. All the reest of my lyfe thou ⁴¹⁵
 knowest it hath ben in berynge of offyces in Rome, vnto
 the tyme that the weyghte of the monarchy was brought into
 my handes. Hytherto the emperour spake. Thā by this
 letter that he wrote to his frēd, it semeth wel, y without
 fleuth he passed his tyme. It is reason to beleue it holly, ⁴²⁰
 in that he hath sayd. For so excellent workes y he made,
 & so high sentences as he wrote myght not procede but
 of a prudent man, and a very wyse spirite.

¶ Howe for the wysedome of Marcus many wise
 men flouryshed in his tyme. Cap. iiii.



AS the lyfe of the prince is but as a whyte for
 al other to shote at, and as a glasse wherin al ⁴²⁵
 the worlde dothe beholde, we se by experience
 that wherevnto a prince is inclyned, the peo-
 ple trauayllynge to folowe the same, haue no
 vulgare discretion to eschewe the euyll and folowe the good.
 Certaynly they muse no lesse vpon a counterfayte foule, ⁴³⁰
 made of fethers, than though it were of fleshe, and yet
 atte the fyrste flyghte hit leese the lybertye, and yet his hun-
 ger is not therby quenched. Whereby all the wynges of
 lybertie are tourned to payne of seruage. It is a great
 offence, and an immortall infamy to a prince, that in ⁴³⁵
 the stede to gyue his hande of good lyuynge to re-
 leue other, casteth backwarde his fote of euyll example,
 wherby al other ouerthroweth. Than without cōparison
 greatter is the wyckednesse of the people, than the negli-
 gence of the prince. For if one lyueth yl, and an other fo- ⁴⁴⁰
 loweth hym, it is no meruaylle: and yet thoughe there be but
 fewe that folowe hym, hit is no newe thyng. Nor in case,
 that many folowe hym, is no fearefull thyng: but al
 the


C. iiii.

(*f. 7^b) *the hole to folowe him is a great sclander. If the people
 445 were fuche as they ought to be, one fhulde rather tourne from
 yll to good for many, than many for one fhuld torne
 from good to yll. Certaynly euery man knoweth, that yf
 we be bounde to honest commaundementes of our
 princes: yet we be not bounde to folowe theyr ylle lyuyng.
 450 What fhall we faye nowe than, feyng that nowe adayes the
 delytes of men are of fo greate price, and the rygour of
 their empire in fo pore eftimation, that without fhame
 fome difprayfe their iuft commaundementes, and folowe
 their euyll werkes. O if the princes had fuche nombre of
 455 good folke, that wolde fulfyll theyr commaundement, as
 they haue greate nombre of fuche wretches, that folowe their
 doinges, I fwere that there fhulde be no nede of any pri-
 fon for the myfdoers, or carcans [sic] for blaſphemers, chaines
 for ſclaues, or heddyng blocks for traytours, nor kny-
 460 ues for aduoutrers, nor galowes for theues. I wyll gyue
 you example of all this, wherby ye fhall ſe, that it is trewe
 that I ſay. If the kyng be inclyned to hunt, all wyll be
 hunters: yf he be a player, all wyll playe: yf he vſe armes,
 all wyll tourney: if he be an aduoutrer, other wyl vſe the
 465 ſame: yf he be, other wyl be fyers: yf he be vertu-
 ous, all wyll be vertuous and valyant, if he be tempe-
 rate and moderate, all wyll abſteyne, if he be hardye, all
 wyll be bolde, yf he be pitiefull, all wyll haue pitie, if he be
 wiſe, all wyll lerne. And to thentent that we blame not
 470 allonely the princis of our days, lette vs call to memory
 the princis of tymes paſt. Who that hath redde Sextus
 Cheronenſe in his boke called the dyuers inclynations
 that princis haue had, fhall fynde that Romulus founda-
 tour of Rome, honoured greatly grauers in ſtone. Numa
 475 Pompilius his ſucceſſour honoured priſtes, Paulus
 Emilius mariners: Caius Cefar goldſmythes: Scipio,
 the

*f. 8) *the capitaynes: Auguftus Octaviu tennys players: Cal-
 ligula ruffyens: Tyberius baudes: cruell Neron fwerd
 players: Claudius wryters: Scilla armorers, Marius
 his compaygnion grauers of images: Uafpafian good ⁴⁸⁰
 paynters: Titus his eldeft fonne mynftrelles: Domician
 his myghty brother crossebowe makers. And aboue all
 other our Marcus Aurelius emperour wyfe men. The
 dyuers inclynations that princis had in dyuers thynges
 hath made to varie the fauour & diffauour of many prin- ⁴⁸⁵
 cis with their people. And as the common people regar-
 deth more fauour than Iuftice, fuche officers are moofte
 faoured, to whom princes doth moofte inclyne. All this
 we fay to fhewe howe that in the tyme of this good empe-
 rour wife men were faoured. If the hiftorians doo not ⁴⁹⁰
 lye, lythe the tyme of Mecena the Romaine, whiche was
 the moofte happieft to haue wyfe menne to his frendes,
 than to inuente newe maner of meates and bankettes, Un-
 to this Marcus Aureli, haue paffed .xvii. emperors,
 whiche were Julius, octauus, Tyberius, Caligula, Clau- ⁴⁹⁵
 dius, Nero, Galba, Othus, Uitellus, Vafpafianus, Ti-
 tus, Domitianus, Nerua, Traianus, Adrianus, Antho-
 nius, and Aurelius. And of all thefe we can fynde al on-
 ly but two, that faoured wyfe men, that is to fay, Nerua
 and Traian. All the other emperours were not onely disci- ⁵⁰⁰
 ples of lyers, but alfo were perfecutours of the trouth.
 This femeth to be true, for Julius perfecuted Cicero:
 Octavius banifhed Ouide: Tyberiu enpoyfoned Calui-
 tio, Caligula caufed to cutte the throtes of .iiii. oratours
 to gyther: Nero flewe his mayfter Senec: Claudius fet ⁵⁰⁵
 his vncle Lucan in prifon: Othus hāged vp Patroclus:
 Domitian banyfhed all the oratours of Rome: And the
 more to fhew his curfednes, whā the wyfe men y were ba-
 nyfhed went out at one gate, there entred at an other gate
 al

(*f. 8^b) 510 *al vnthriftes, the whiche by Titus his brother, had ben banyffhed and expelled. And as I faye of thefe fewe in nombre, I myght fay of many other. For certaynely the wyfe men were not thus intreted in the tyme of this good emperour Marcus: and that this is true it femeth by diuers
 515 excellent barons, well lerned in diuers fciences, that flourifhed in his time: Julig Capitolin recoūteth of them as foloweth. Alexāder a greke, Trafion, Polion, Eutici9, Anius Macrion, Caninius, Crodiaticus, Fornius, Cornelius, Apoloni9, Nius, Sextus Cheronēfe, Juni-
 520 us Rafticus, Claudi9 Maximus, Cina Catulus, Claudius Seuerus, and the renowmed Diogenitus paynter, & the wel lerned lawyer Uolufius Mecianus. Al thefe were in this emperours palays, and refident in his prefence: And yet for all that he had dyuers other wife per-
 525 fons in Rome, & abroad in Italy. It was no meruayle to fe in thofe dais, the multitude of menne that flouryfhed in wyfedome. There was no father, but yf he had two fonnes, he wold fette one of them to ftudye, and the other accordynge to the Romaine lawe, fhulde be fette to the warres. And yf
 530 this emperour wyfte of any wyfe yonge man, aboue all other he wolde fauour hym.

¶ Of the emperour Marcus fonne named
 Ueriffimus. capit. v.

535  His emperour Marcus Aurelius had onely two fonnes, as Herodian fayth. The great-
 535 test and eldeft was called Comode, and the yongeft was named Ueriffimus. He was a fayre chylde of perfone, and right vertuous of lyuyng. With his beautie he drewe to hym the eies of many, and with his good inclinations he robbed the hartes of all
 men

(*f. 9) *men. He was the hope of the people, and the glorie of his fathers age. And though the eldest was prince, yet them- 540 perour determyned, that he [sic] laste borne, for his vertues shulde enherite as the eldest: And he that was fyrst borne for his demerites shulde be disherited. And as good defyes in the best tyme fayle often by vnhappy chance, this emperour being of .lii. yeres of age, and the sonne of .xvi. 545 the glorie of Rome, and hope of the father, the lyfe of the sonne toke an ende. And as moche was the dethe bewayled, as the lyfe defyred. It was great pitie, for the senate by reason therof sawe not themperour, nor the olde emperour for sorowe sawe not the senate of a long space. 550 Rome was ryght heuy, and the senate withdrewe them to the height of the capitoll dyuers dayes. And as the mystes and wyndes cause the leaues to fall that were grene in sommer, and the dedes of honour confreyne vs to forget the myshappes of fortune, as a man of high lygnage 555 and of stronge courage, though that sorowe remayne in their hartes, and abyde locked therin, determynethe to clenfe the braunches of sorowes that is outwarde, faynyng ioy and myrth outwardly kepyng the sorow within. Thus Marcus the emperour, as a man whose vyne fre- 560 feth and dyeth, wherin he had all his hope, contented hym with that was lefte behynde. Whan his dere sonne Uerissimus was deed, he sent for the prince Comode his onely enheritour, whiche fyth the chylde his brother was deed, entred not into the Palays. And the emperour seing the 565 proude and outragious porte of his sonne Comode, bedewed his eien with salt water, remembring the shame of the one, and the dethe of the other. The whiche perceyued by Fauptyne his mother, whiche loued hym most entierly, commaunded to haue her sonne awaye fro the presence of 570 his father.

What

D

(*f. 9b)

*¶ What wyfe auncient men Marcus chofe to
instructe his fonne. Capit. vi.

Though that the harte of this emperour was
occupied with the dethe of his chylde, yet for
all that he reysed his vnderftondyng, to haue
the prince his heire right well brought vppe.
For certaynely princis bene fuche, whan they
come to mans eftate, as they be broughte vp in their ten-
der youth. The father than knowynge the frayle inclina-
tions of his chylde, not correfpondent to the good gouer-
naunce of the empire, as a good emperour fente ouer all I-
taly for the moft wyfelyft perfones in lernynge, the moft
famous of renowme, and the moofte vertuous in dedes.
And as in dyuers thynges the infamy is greatter in the
yll doynge by malyce, than the faute of the trespaffour by
weakenes: fo in dyuers other thynges, the cōmon voyce
is more than the secrete vertue. For the whiche occafion
after the affemblynge of thefe wyfe men, the emperour
commaunded to examyne them, and to be informed of the
bloudde of their predeceffours, of the appoyntment in al
their thinges, and of the treatie of their busines, and of
the credence amonge their neighbours, and of the pure-
nes of their lyues, and grauitee of their persons, and fi-
nally of their fciences, what they coude doo, and this to be
done in an order. The aftrologiens in aftronomie, the mu-
fitiens in mufike, the oratours in their art of retorike:
and fome in other fciences. And this not in one day, but
in many, and not onely by information of other, but he
wolde knowe hit by his owne propre experience. Thus
they were all examyned, fo that there was none lefte be-
hynde. And as for perfyfte knowlege of thynges, wherin
we haue great affection, it behoueth to haue ftrange ad-
uife

(*f. 10) *uyfe, clere vnderstandynge, and propre experience: fo the emperour commaunded to chose out of dyuers a fewe, 7 out of the fewe the wyfest, and of the wyfest the most expert, moste worthy, and moste auncient. And accordyng to the ⁶⁰⁵ .vii. artes lyberal there was assigned to euery science two maysters: fo that the prince was one, and the maysters .xiii. This renowme that the Emperour sente ouer all to haue maysters for his sonne the prince, caused to come to hym mo wyfe men from straunge countreys, than of the ⁶¹⁰ marches and neybours of Rome. The good emperour confideringe that it was no reason that fuche as came to his seruice shulde returne myfcontented, some with ioyful wordes, some vpon certayn hope, and some with giftes and presentes were dispatched, fo that they were all ⁶¹⁵ pleased. And if this doinge was renowned by the report of the wise men, it was no lesse vertuous by the wysdom and worthynes of the emperour to sende them home soo well content. For he sent them away as wel satisfied that were ouercom, as they were contēted that ouercam them. ⁶²⁰ And certaynly they had all reason, for some bare the swete wordes and satisfienge of the father: and some aboode there charged with the enterpryse of the sonne. Yet the good emperour not beinge contented with this, commāded that these maysters shulde be lodged in his palays, ⁶²⁵ 7 to eate in his presence, and to accompany his persone, to se if theyr lyfe were conformable to their science, and yf their plesant 7 well couched wordes agreed in effect with their warkes. It was a meruaylous thyng to se the studye and thought that the emperour had to regarde them, ⁶³⁰ as well in goynge as fedyng.

Howe

D. ii.

(*f. 10^b) *¶ Howe it chaunced to fyue wyle men, wherfore they were put out of the emperours houle. Cap. vii.

IN the month of Septembre, the .xi. day therof, in halowyng the feaste of the Emperours natiuitie, in the same houle where as he was borne, in the place of mounte Cellio, As a trewande and
 635 fole doth lyke hym selfe, and semblably as he is accustomed to do: Then lyke as one dothe the semblable thynges and customes, that he is wonte to do: soo the emperour set more his intention on wyle mē, than his
 640 eies on foles. He sawe .v. of them satte betynge the paue-ment with their feete, and arose from their places, clappinge their hondes, speakyng lowde, and laughyng excedyngely, the whiche was no lesse marked of the emperour than beholden. whan the feaste was done, he called
 645 them alyde, and sayde: Frendes, lette abyde with me the pitiefull goddes, and lette the good dedes goo with you. I haue cholen you to thentent that foles shuld be conuerted to wyse men, but I se wyle men become foles. Do ye not knowe that with the fyre of myxture golde is drawē,
 650 and by the lyghtnes of foles wyle men are proued? Certaynly the fyne golde defendeth his qualites in the quyckournayes: and lykewise the wyle man sheweth his vertues amonge fooles. wote ye not that a foole can not be knowen amonge fooles, nor a wyle manne amonge sage folke?
 655 Amonge wyle men, the fole is made bright, and amonge foles wyle men do shyne. Do ye not knowe, what shame it is to make disciples of foles, maysters of princes? Know ye not that of the couragious vnderstanding procedeth the composition of the bodye, the reste of the
 660 person to be the temperance of the tonge? What profyteth it you

(*f.11) *it you to haue an experte tonge, a quicke memorie, a clere vnderstondynge, great science, profounde eloquence, or a swete style, yf with al these graces ye haue a wycked wil? Wherefore wyl wyse men haue their wordes so distincte & moderate, if their workes be lyght? And to thentent that ⁶⁶⁵ it shoulde not seme to you that I speake of pleasure, I wyl brynge to you an antike lawe of Rome. In the .vii. table of the lawes of our fathers was written these wordes: We commaunde that a more greuous chaastyfement be gyuen to the wyse man for a lyghte dede done openly, ⁶⁷⁰ than to a secrete murderer. O iust lawe and iust men that ordeyned it. For the symple labourer fleeth but one with his knyfe in his angre, but he y is wyse fleeth many with the euill example of his lyuynge. Curiously I haue regarded, that Rome begynneth to declyne, whā our senate ⁶⁷⁵ faylleth of meke and wyse senatours, and multiplyeth with wise serpētines. The holy senate was adorned with olde prudent persons: And not without teares, I saye at this houre it is full of ianglers and lyers. Aunciently in the scoles of Grece was taught only wordes, leauynge ⁶⁸⁰ the werkes: and than in Rome was taught to do werkes and leaue wordes. But nowe it is contrarye, for nowe in grece the lyers and ianglers are banyshed, and hath sent them to Rome: and Rome hathe banyshed and sente the good wyse men in to Grece: and in this maner I desyre ra- ⁶⁸⁵ ther to be banyshed into Grece with wyse men, than to abyde in Rome with fooles. To the prayse of a good mā (I sweare to you my frendes) that whyles I was yonge, I sawe in the senate the philosopher Crisippus (brought vp with good Traian) speake oftentimes: and he was so ⁶⁹⁰ swete in his wordes, that many tymes he was harde more than .iii. houres togyther: And he neuer spake word but it was of eternall memorie. And whan so euer he wēt out


D. iii.

(*f. 11^b) *out of the senate, I neuer saw hym do dede wherby he de-
 695 serued to haue greuous peyn. Certainly it was a meruail-
 lous thinge to se 7 here the estimation of his eloquence, 7
 the infamie of his person. All Rome was abashed of his
 high eloquence: and al Rome and Italy were sclanderred
 with his wycked werkes. The prosperite of Rome dured
 700 CCC. yere. And so longe Rome was Rome as it had sim-
 plicite in wordes, and grauitie in workes. One thyng
 I shal shew you, which is great confusion to them alyue,
 and great admyration to them that be deed, that of al the
 ancient men I neuer redde a lyght word that they spake,
 705 nor an yuell dede that they dyd. What thyng was sene
 than in that glorious world, but to reioyce in so glorious
 wyse men? And now at this daye the worlde is so corrup-
 ted, bycause there is so many yong corrupt, surely I haue
 greater enuie of their dedes than of our writynges.
 710 Their fewe wordes and good werkes haue lefte vs exam-
 ple of great admyration. And the wyse men of this tyme
 teache vs openly, and write vs secretly doctrines of par-
 dicion. Than by this that I haue sayde, and by other ex-
 amples that I shall say, ye maye knowe, what I meane.
 715 Whan the realme of Acaye submytted his peryllous hor-
 nes and his proude heed to the swete obeyfance of the em-
 pire, they drewe theym to the condicion that they wolde
 haue bene the hooftes of the garnyson of all Asye, and
 not disciples of the oratours of Rome. At a season there
 720 was in Rome a great lorde ambassadour of Acaye, tem-
 perate in wordes, and honeste of lyuynge, with a whyte
 heed: He was enquired of the senate, why he was so cruel
 to leade into his countrey for men of warre poore and co-
 uetous squires, and leaue wyse men of great harte. He
 725 aunswered with such loue as he had to his countrey, and
 with suche grauitie as longed to suche a person, and also
 with

(*f.12)*with luche hardynesse as his office required. O fathers conscriptes, O happy people, It is .ii. dayes lyth I eate any thyng, and .ii. dayes lythe I slept, curlynge the fall destenies of fortune, that hath brought me into Italy, and lyghyng vnto the goddis that kepeth me in this lyfe, bycause my spirite is betwene the harde anuelde 7 the importunate hammer, where as I fe all is harde as the anuelde, wheron the hammer often strykethe. The thyng moſte peryllous amonge all perylles is to make 735 election; ye conſtrayne me to choſe, and myne vnderſtondyng can not attayne therto: and the goddes doo not ſhewe me what I haue to chuſe. If I leade garyſons of menne of armes, it ſhall be very noyfulle to the families: yf I bryng aduocates, it ſhall be peryllous for the 740 common welth. Sorowfull that I am, what ſhall I do? and heuy and vnhappye realme, that abydeſh for theym, and ye cruell that commaundeth them. Than lythe it is thus, I determyne me to leade them that ſhall waſte our goodes, and ſpende them, rather than they that ſhoulde 745 corrupte and breake our cuſtomes. For a legion and an army by neceſſitie may put to affliction and ſorowe only a people: But an oratour or an aduocate by his malyce may corrupt a hole realme. Than ſayd the emperour to theſe wyſe men: Frendes howe greatte is the credence of 750 ignorant people and loſſe of lerned men? Wherefore ſhuld they of Acaye rather gyue meate to poore ſowdiars men of armes, than to haue for their neyghbours oratours 7 wyſe ſpeakyng aduocates? So whan this communication of the emperour was ended, the .v. greatte mayſters 755 went away with greatte ſhame, and the .ix. other taryed with great feare. In al this whyle it paſſed not two monethes after, that the prince Comode was come from his norces, where as he had lerned the doctrine of ſuckyng
of

(*f. 12^b) 760 *of brestes. Also he was but of tender age, and not of gret delicate vnderstonding. This prince Comode was borne in Rome on the mount Cellio, and nourished at the gate of Hostie. He was more welbeloued of Faustina his mother, thē hated of Marcus Aurelius his father. And to 765 speake with all due honour amonge theym, the mother helde her for certayne to be the chylde's mother: and the chylde accordynge to his customes was moche lyke his mother: and the father was in doubte, whether he were his sonne, bycause he resembled but lyttell in vertues to the father.

¶ Howe the emperour reasoned with the maysters
that shulde lerne his sonne. Ca. viii.

770 L these matters beinge paste, the good emperour for to esteeme the thyng that he had done, and to puruey for that he had to do, he called asyde the nyne wyse men and sayde to them. There is great fame in Rome of that 775 I haue done in thempire to do suche dilygence as to discover all the wyse men, and of the curiositie that I haue shewed as in retaynyng of the beste. If of trouthe ye be wyse, ye can not be sclaundered of any thyng. The annoyance of yll thynges cometh of wysedome and vertue, 780 but the admyration of good thynges procedeth of small vnderstondyng or lesse experience. The wyse person wyll suffre none admyration. To shewe at the fyrste bront motion in euery thyng, sheweth to be constant in nothyng. I haue made strait examinatio among you, for so ought 785 suche to passe as shulde be admytted to strait amities. New amities is wery in thre dayes, and euer haue I sene it, and proued it by experience, that frendes lyghtly takē,
are

(*f.13)*are lyghtly lefte agayne. I chaunced in cumpanye of an auncient Romaine, whiche was all whyte for aege: and bycause he merited it, I called hym father, and he for loue and nurture called me sonne: the whiche in case of aduventure enquired many thynges of me, but I wolde make hym none answere. Than he sayde those wordes to me: Son beholde, In the lawe of frendshyp it is written, that the frend in all thynges trusteth to his frende, first regardyng who is his frende. Surely this councel was good. The curious man of armes (if he wyl bye a horse) fyrst he wyl se hym renne and assayed, or he speake of the sale of hym: if he please hym not thoughe he myght haue hym for a lesse price; he wyl not haue hym: if he please hym, what so euer the price is set, he wyl not leaue hym. Than it is a lefull thyng, that the beaste be examyned and felter he be had into the stable. In lyke wise a man shulde be examyned, er he be receyued in to the house. And yf the horse that eateth but hey, strawe and otes, be lefte for one yll tache, moche more the frende, whiche is the intestyne of the harte, and oughte to kepe our secretes and affections, for dyuers fautes ought not to be receyued in to the same. There was a philosopher named Arispo, the firste that was in the tyme of Silla and Marius, who sayde, that frendes ought to be lyke good horses: That is to say that they ought to haue a lyttell heed by humble conuersation: quicke of herynge, to the entent that they be redy whan they are called: a softe mouth, to thende that their tongue be temperate: The houe of the fote harde, to suffer trauayl: and theyr handes open to doo good dedes: their fete sure to perceuer in amitie: a baye colour for his good renoume: And finally the hors retourneth, that is the manuall frende: And thereto is ioyned these wordes: That is, that he be without curbes or byttes: and that he maye

E.

(*f. 13^b) *maye go where as any fatall deftenyes tourneth the bridell and reyne of fortune. The goddes vnderstande me, though that men can not atteyne therto or comprise it. Returnynge than to the purpose, I wyll ye knowe, bicause
 825 I haue taken you for frendes, not to putte you awaye at length, and though that cherytrees produceth their floures in Februarie, we abyde not to haue the cheryes but in Maye. Frendes ought to be as molberies, that in luche tyme produceth their beryes, whiche is their fruyte, that
 830 they feare not the frostes of Maye, as the vynes doo, nor the mystes of Octobre, as the peches and quinces do. I wyl say that they com whan the prosperite is good, and go away whan the fortune is nought. Of trouth it is not so of true frendes, As the lyes of wyne causeth drō-
 835 kardes to vomyt in the tauernes, lyke wife aduersitie driueth away faynt frendes out of the house, bycause the seruice is not acceptable without the wyll be knowen of him that dothe it. Than holde you sure of my contentation, lyth that I haue it of your warkes. I come nowe to the
 840 effecte of our pourpose. I haue taken you for to be maysters of this chylde: and regarde that I haue taken you fewe amonge many, to thende that my sonne shuld be noted amonge fewe. His nurles at the gate of Hostie haue gyuen hym two yeres lucke of their mylke, and his mother Fauptyne hath gyuen hym other two yeres to spote
 845 hym in the Palays. And I lyke a good father wyll gyue hym .xx. yeres of chaftisement. It fore displeaseth Fauptyne his mother to leaue hym so sone, and I am sory that I toke hym so late. It is no meruayle, for these womenne
 850 with their lyghtnes, and these chyltern with theyr smalle knowlege occupie them selfe in thinges present. But worthy wyle men ought to thynke on that is passed, and also to ordeyne for that that is present, and with great study to pro-

(*f.14)*prouyde for the tyme to come. I thinke on euery daye in the yere, and of the daye, that the goddis haue gyuen me, ⁸⁵⁵ and of the day that I gyue unto you. The goddes to me and I to you doo gyue hym mortalle to be as a man, and than you to me and I to god do render hym immortal to be wyfe. What wylle ye that I saye more? Certaynly god hath made hym man amonge men by the soule: and ⁸⁶⁰ I haue engendred hym a beaste amonge beastes by the fleshe, ye shall make hym a god among goddis by shape. I demaunde of you a thyng, whyche is, I haue not gyuen to my childe but mortalle fleshe, wherwith he shall take an ende of his lyfe, but ye shall gyue hym doctrine, ⁸⁶⁵ wherwith his memorie shall neuer perishe. If his youthe knew the weke and faynt fleshe that I haue gyuen hym, and that his dulle vnderstandynge maye reache to the wisdom that ye may gyue hym, he wolde calle you fathers, and me an yl stepfather. And though he say not so, ⁸⁷⁰ yet I confesse it, that is, that the naturall fathers of the fleshe are stepfathers of noblenes, lythe that we gyue the naturalitie of them subiecte to so many mutabilities, and bonde and capitue to so many miseries. For certayne ye shall be iuste fathers to hym, yf as nowe ye can enable ⁸⁷⁵ his fleshe in good custommes, and to brynge his vnderstandynge to be occupied with high sciences. And lys, repute it not smalle, that I commytte to your charge and abytrement, that thyng whiche princis ought moſte to regarde, that is, to ſe to whom they commytte the nouryſhynge of their chylderne. To be mayſters of princis in erthe is to haue the offyce of goddis that bene in heuen. For they gouern him that hath cure to gouerne vs: They endoctryne hym that ſhoulde teache vs, they ſhewe vnto hym that ought, to ſhewe vs: Chaſtiſe hym that oughte ⁸⁸⁵ to chaſtiſe vs: and fynally they commaunde one, the whiche

E. ii.

(*f. 14^b) *che afterwarde alone maye commaunde all the worlde.

What wyll ye that I shall say more? For certayn he that
 hathe the charge of a prince, is the gouernall of the shyp,
 890 The standerde of an army, the gouernance of people, the
 guyde of wayes, the shelde of Kynges, the treasour of al,
 bycause they haue amonge theyr handes hym that after-
 warde ought to gouerne all the worlde. And furthermore •
 to the entent that ye haue hym in more estimation, I wyl
 895 tell you, that in gyuyng my sonne vnto you, I do gyue
 you more than if I had gyuen you a realme. The pure
 clene lyuyng of the sonne aliue, is the glorious fame of
 his father that is deade. For of hym, that the sonne tru-
 stethe in his lyfe, dependethe the renowme of the father that
 900 is deade. Thus haue ye hadde the goddis atte wylle, and the
 bryttell destenies of fortune happy to you, as vnto this
 houre ye haue not watched with chyldren of straungers.
 Fro hensforth wake ye with the prince, whiche is the pro-
 fite of al other. And take good hede, my frēdes, that there
 905 is greater difference in bringyng vp of princis chyldren,
 than to teache yonge boyes of the common people. The
 moste parte of them, that come to scoles come for to lerne
 to speake: but I delyuer not my son Comode to you
 to lerne hym to speke many wordes, but for to sette him
 910 in the waye to do good dedes. The glorie of folyfhe fathers
 is to se their chyldren vainquishe other in disputyng: but
 my glorie and ioy is to se my sonne surmount other in
 vertue: bycause the glorie of the Grekes was to speake moche
 and to do lyttell, And the glorie of the Romaynes was to do
 915 moche and to speake but lytell.

¶ Howe the maysters of princis oughte
 to kepe them from vices.

Capitulo. ix.

Mar-

(*f. 15) ***M**arcus Aurelius folowyng his pourpofe,

ioyned to his forefayde wordes, and fayde: Regarde well my frendes, and forgette not, that I truſte you in myne honour, who am my ſonnes father, and of the ſtudy of Comode my ſonne, and of the glorie of Rome my⁹²⁰ naturall countreye, And of the ſolace and reſte of Rome, whiche is my ſubiect: Of the gouernance of Italy, whiche is your countreye: and aboue al thynges of the peace and tranquillitie of our common welth. Than he that is put in truſte with ſuche adminiſtration of other, hath no⁹²⁵ cauſe to ſlepe. Nowe lette vs come to more particular thynges. Regarde as nowe, what thyng is moofte conuenable for my ſonne, whiche as a yonge colte wolde goo play in the grene medowes, and noyſome ſhall be the keper to hym, & a thyng paynfull to kepe hym therfro. The⁹³⁰ firſt thyng, wherof I pray you, is to gyue hym a ſtronge bridel, and a ſharpe bytte, to thentent that he be well mouthed, ſo that none take hym with lyes. The greateſt faut that can be in men of honeſtie is to ſpare the trouthe, and not to be veritable: And the greateſte vilanye in a vil-⁹³⁵ layne is to be gyuen in largeſſe of lyes. Sette good order vppon hym. Take hede to his handes, to the entente that he accuſtome hym not to demaunde to play at the tables and dyce with ſuche as be loſte and noughte.

The greateſt token that a prince woll loſe and diſtroye⁹⁴⁰ the empire, is whan in his yonge age he is knowen to be vicious in play. The playe is ſuche a vice, that who ſoo euer it byteth, it is like the bytyng of a madde dogge, the whiche rage endureth vnto dethe. I recomende to you my chyld, though he be yonge make hym ſad and mo-⁹⁴⁵ derate. Certaynly it is not ſo great a glorye vnto a prince

(*f. 15^b) *to haue the crowne on his heed, nor a chayn of gold about
his

E. iii.

his shulders, nor the scepter in his hande, nor the greate
 company and garde that he hath about hym, as to shewe
 950 sadnesse from his youthe. The open honestie supplieth
 many fautes and debilities. Spare not to caste on hym a
 stronge chayne, and to tye hym faste, that he go not to de-
 lytes and vanyties. For an effeminate person neuer hath
 spirite to any hye or noble dedes. I am greatly satisfied
 955 with that the techer of Nero sayd to his disciple: Though
 I wyft that god wolde pardone me, and that men knewe no
 myffe of me, for the vilanye of the fleshe, I wolde not
 synne in the fleshe. Surely they were good wordes, and yll
 borne a way of Nero. Let not yet go the reyne. For if he
 960 se the yonge mares, he wyl neygh or bray yf he se tyme.
 The vyce of the fleshe in all tymes, in all ages, and in al
 estates holdeth his season or course, if it passe not in the
 grene age of chyldehoode, castynge out the reyne of reason,
 & stryken with the spurres of the fleshe, and blowing
 965 with the trompe of sensualitie: Takyng the bridell in the
 tethe with a furious will, rennyng through mountayns
 and woddes after the mare: In leauynge her goinge but
 softly, and in the ouertakyng moche lesse. And than af-
 terward being therin delyberat, yf body remayneth im-
 970 potent, the vnderstandynge acloyed and blynded, the reason
 troubled, the good name lost, and yet neuertheles at the
 laste the fleshe remayneth fleshe. What remedy for this?
 I fynde none other but that a great quycke fyre couered
 and laden with erth dieth. And whan the vicious man is
 975 layde in his graue, he maketh an ende and may neuer cor-
 recte hym selfe. Wherfore I aduise you to gyue no place
 to this yonge chylde to be vicious. And in the chaustifinge
 of hym, gyue no respyte, thoughe he be yonge, and my
 child, and well loued and cheryshed with his mother, and
 (*f.16) 980 *though he be the only heire of thempire. With chyl dren of
 a stran-

a stranger crueltie is tyranny, but with a mans own child pite is the occasion of his losse in time to come. It is shewed vs by trees, how we ought to norishe our childrē. Of trouth the chestain trees brynge forth the soft swete chestnutte out of the sharpe pricking & hard huske. And on the ⁹⁸⁵ nut trees amonge the swete softe leafes, is nourished the harde nutte. Applieng this to our purpose, we haue sene a pyteful father, bringe forth a cruell son, and a cruel father a piteful sonne. He that was lerned amonge al other lerned, and renoumed among al other renoumed, Lygur- ⁹⁹⁰ gus king of the Lacedemoniens, in giuing his lawes in his realme, I remembre to haue red therin these wordes: We commande as kynges, & pray as men, that al thinge be forgiuen to them that be olde and broken: and to them that be yong and lusty, to diffimule for a tyme: 7 nothyng ⁹⁹⁵ to be forgiuen to very yonge chyl dren. In good soth these were good wordes spoken of suche a persone, and semeth reasone. For it is reason that the hors that hathe rounne and passed his course of cariage, shoulde reste hym. And who that hath passed rightously, it is Justice that he be ¹⁰⁰⁰ suffered in reste. And the chylde that wyll passe reason, ought to be reformed. Cause hym to be always occupied in vertuous actes. For if the vnderstondynge be dulled, and the bodye slouthfull in suche aage, with great difficultie wylle they drawe to thynges that be straunge to ¹⁰⁰⁵ their delectations, bycause that the lyghtenesse is in the heed, and reason vnder the eyes. His youthe wylle demaunde you some recreation, whiche ye shall confyder, so it be not often nor to seldome. Fyrste that it be by reason: Secondely that they be taken in noble exercyses. Take ¹⁰¹⁰ hede, for I gyue not my sonne vnto you, that ye shulde gyue hym recreation, but onely for to teache hym.

The

(*f. 16^b) *The henne hauynge her egges vnder her wynges, in that
 leason goth not abroad in the yarde, and though the eg-
 1015 ges be not her owne, yet she hatcheth theym, as yf they
 were her owne. For this cause at this tyme in Rome of a
 C. disciples, .lxxx. cometh forth without doctryne, for yf
 their maysters wast two houres of doctrine with thē, they
 lese with thē .xx. houres in mockery. And therof it is, that
 1020 of the smal grautie of the mayster, springeth great bold-
 nes and lyttell shame in the disciple. Beleue me frendes,
 that the teachers to princes, and maysters to disciples, pro-
 fite more in one daye with good examples, than in a yere
 with many lessens. My sonne seinge you drawe to ver-
 1025 tues, wyll drawe to the same, if he se you studie, he wyll
 study, if he se you peafible, he wyll be styll: he seinge you
 temperate in fedinge, wyll eate but lytel: seing you sham-
 faste, he wyll feare you, seinge you restefull, he wyll reste,
 and yf ye do contrarie, he wyll do contrarie. This surely
 1030 is true, for the auncient men onely with the euill that they
 se, eyther do they corrupte their bodies, or sclaunder their
 owne iugementes, as chyldren do, that can say nothyng
 but that they here, nor do nothyng but that they se. I wyl
 also that the prince my sonne lerne the .vii. artes lyberall.
 1035 For I haue taken many of you, to thentent that ye shulde
 teache hym moche. And yf at the last we shulde be sorow-
 full, bycause he hath not lerned all, we shall not be sorie, if
 he knowe moche, nor thynke his tyme yll spent, nor be be-
 gyled, in saying, that he knoweth inough, of that so yōge
 1040 a chylde shulde haue to gouerne and rule thempire. A ve-
 ry philosopher after the lawe of lygnage oughte to haue
 speche at place and tyme conuenient, to fyght in the felde,
 and to speake in the senate. If my owne remembrance be-
 gyle me not, amonge myn antiquities I haue brought a
 1045 stōne out of Grece, the which Pythagoras the philosopher
 held

(*f.17)*helde at the gates of his schole, wherin was written with his owne handes these wordes: He that knoweth not that he ought to know, is a brute beast amonge men: He that knoweth no more than he hath nede of, is a man amonge brute beastes: He that knoweth all that may be known, ¹⁰⁵⁰ is a god amonge men. O moſte high wordes, Glorious is the hande that wrote them, the which not at the gates, as they were than, ought to be written, but within mens breſtis they ought to be paynted and grauen. Our forefathers toke the laſte ſentence of this philoſopher, and ¹⁰⁵⁵ the firſte rebuke abydeſt to vs their laſt chyldren. For certayne amonge the Grekes and Lacedemoniens was attained as moche fame by their philoſophers and conquiſtes, as by their writings, which they haue leſte vs. And our former emperours gatte no leſſe loue in their empire ¹⁰⁶⁰ by their profounde eloquence, then they feared all the worlde by their noble triumphes. For a profe wherof behold Julius Ceſar, whiche beinge in the myddell of his campe, with his lyfte hande wolde holde his ſpeare, and his penne in his ryght hande. Ne he neuer leſte of his ar- ¹⁰⁶⁵ mour, but forthewith he toke his bokes. We muſt not lay excuſes, ſayinge with them that be ignorante, that the lyberall artes are to hye, and the tyme that we haue verye ſhorte. For certayne the diligence of men in tymes paſte, reproueth our ſlouth at this day. One thyng I do ſe, that ¹⁰⁷⁰ in a ſhorte whyle we lerne all yll, but in a longe ſeaſon we can not lerne goodneſſe. Wyll ye ſe, what is our fortunes and deſtenies, and in what thought the goddes doo kepe vs, that for to do one good dede we lacke tyme, and for to do many ſhrewde tournes we haue to moche tyme. I wyll ¹⁰⁷⁵ ſay no more, but that I wolde my chyld ſhulde be nourished in ſuche wiſe, that he ſhoulde lerne the feare of god, the ſcience of philoſophers, the vertues of auncient Romanys,

(*f. 17^b) *mayns, the quietnes of you his maysters, and the good-
 1080 nesse of all them that be good, as he hath taken of me to
 be the heire of the empire. I protest to the immortal god-
 dis, to whom I trust for to go: and protest to the high ca-
 pitoll, where my bones shall be brent, that neyther Rome
 now in my lyfe, nor the heuens in tyme to com shal curse
 1085 me after my dethe, yf by yll lyuyng my sonne shuld lese
 hte [sic] common welth, if by your small chaftisement ye shal
 be cause of the losse of the empire.

¶ How themperour Marcus nourished the prin-
 cesses his doughters. Cap. x.

MArcus Aurelius emperour hadde but two sonnes,
 that is to wytte, the prince Comode and Verissime
 1090 He hadde foure doughters by Fauстыne his wyfe legitti-
 mate, and heires of thempire. This emperour was exce-
 dyng diligent for to nourshe his doughters: As soone as
 any of them were borne, forthwith they were putte to nurse
 into some ferme withoute Rome: He wolde neuer suffre a-
 1095 ny of his childrē, sonnes nor doughters, to be noryf-
 shed within the walles of Rome: Nor consente, that they
 shulde sucke the brestes of delycate women. He hated
 delicate and gay nurfes: and they that were laborous
 homely and holfome he loued, 7 to them and none other
 1100 he betoke his children to nourishe, and he wolde neuer a-
 gree, that they shoulde be brought home to his house.
 He was wont to saye in his sportyng: I haue more adoo
 to content these nourisses, than to mary my doughters.
 Homer sheweth, that in Grece there died Arthemio,
 1105 that was kynge of Argiue, withoute any sonne to inhe-
 rite: and the nurse that hadde nourished hym, with all
 her

(*f.18) *her myght demaunded the realme for a son of hers, whiche hadde sucked of the same mylke that the sayde kyng had done, allegynge, that lyth they were both nourished togyder, & sucked one mylke, that they both shulde enherite one realme. Thus said Homer, to reprove the nourses of Grece, whiche toke more presumption for noursyng of princis, than quenes dyd in bearynge of them. Therefore this noble Marcus Aurelius emperour wolde not that his daughters alonely shoulde sucke grosse and rude mylke, but he wolde not agree, that any reuerence honour or seruice shulde be done vnto them, as it belongeth to the chyldren of so high princis to be done, and as the custome is to be doone. On a day as the sayde emperour was at supper a fole named Galyndo, at whose wordes the emperour often toke pleasure, sayd: Syr yesterdaye I came fro Salon and fro the gate of Hostie, and there I sawe the emperours chyldren go lyke labourers, and I se here in thy hous labourers chyldren go lyke emperours: Telle me, why do ye diffimule as a wyfe man, for I that am but a foole vnderstondeth hit not. The emperour aunswered: O Galyndo, bycause that yet at this tyme Rome is not Rome, all thoughe thoroughe all the worlde hit be renowned Rome. In my selfe I fynde farre more assuraunce, that my children begyn lyke poore labourers, and ende as ryche emperours, thanne to begynne as ryche emperours, and ende as poore squiers. Doeft thou not know why Italy is nowe lost? They wolde haue their children to be wantonly and delicately noursysshed, and suffre theym not to lyue in trauaylle, and to leaue their heires poore and nedye, and them selfe to ende in greatte peryll. This answere was so excellent in fame, that it was euer taken for a prouerbe in Rome. Whan this emperours daughters were twoo yere olde,

incon-

F. ii.

(*f. 18^b) 1140 *incontinent he prouided women and maystresses for to teche theym. Sextus Cheronense saithe, that he serched amonge the ancient matrones of Rome, whiche were cleaneft of lyfe, mooste esteemed of good fame, of nobleffe of bloudde, of sadde witte, and that had ben mooste vfed in
 1145 bringyng vp of princis chyldren. This emperour was so thoughtfull in the orderynge and teachynge of his children, that he wolde haue no woman, but yf she were of .l. yeres of age at the leaste, and .x. yere a wydowe, and that she had nourished a .C. chyldren doughters of senatours:
 1150 Imagining that she that had medled in so many thyngis of other mens, shulde not be ignorant in her owne. After that he hadde prouyded these maystresses, he caused his doughters to be brought to their howses, and there gaue thē their charge. And from the byrth of any of his doughters
 1155 he wold neuer consent, that they shuld come in to his palays, tyll they shuld haue husbandes. It chanced that Faustine the empreffe chylded a doughter, and she beinge certified, that it was like her and very faire, moued with a softe herte of womanheed, and with a motherly herte,
 1160 prayed theemperour, that the sayd chylde myght be nourished in her presence, sith euery man sayde the chylde was so fayre and so lyke vnto them. The emperour answered and sayd: Faustyne for those thynges that all other haue sayde to you, dothe it beseme you to demande this of me?
 1165 But I that haue red in this case, and in other cases haue sene, in no maner ought to condiscende therto. Do you not knowe, that the tyme that the doughter is nourished in the house, the father is charged with thought, the mother with wanton flatterynges, enuy in the brethern, boldnes
 1170 in the doughter, and foly in the nouryce. I wold wite of you, if she were nourished in the house, what profyteth it if her maystres teache her saddenesse and honestie
 with

(*f. 19) *with her wordes, and we entice her to lewdnes with our workes or dedes? what profyteth it, if the doughter deserue chaftisement, that the mother flatter and make her wanton? More reason it were, that your doughter shuld folowe the good doinges of you that are her mother, thā the wordes of the straunge wydowe that is her maystres. Marke well Fauptyne, if ye oughte to reioyce at her chyl-dishe toys. Remēbre that the plesure of yong chyldren, is but chyldyshe and tryfles. But if you nouryshe them not well, as the pleasures were ioyful whan they were yonge, so whan they be olde to refreyne them shal be greater displeasure. Therefore if you be vertuous, withdrawe their iapynges trifles as nowe, for them that shal be vertuous. I wyll tell you one thyng. I wold rather my doughters in myn absence shulde be disciples to vertues, than to be maystresses in lewdenesse. And sythe it is so, I do desyre you, require it not of me. And I desire you that it be not so. I am importune on you, that ye be not importunate on me. I pray you that you pray not me. Or elles I commaunde you that you demaunde it no more of me. This harde aunswere of the father ceassed the importunitie and pitiefulle requeste of the mother. Thus Faustine all fearefull, seinge the father within the walles of Rome, durste not go se her doughter without, but as priuely as she myght.

¶ Howe Marcus themperour dyd chose and pro-
ued his sonnes in lawe. Cap. .xi.

Like wife as Marcus Aur. the emperour surmounted in vertues al mortal men that died, for certayne in marienge of his doughters he seemed to be kin to the goddis, y euer lyue: 7 by the

F. iii.


10*

(*f. 19b) *the grace and gyfte of god, or by his fortune, he was as happy in vertuous sonnes in lawe, as greatly fortunate of dyshoneste daughters. After the dethe of the good olde
 1205 man, with the smalle thoughte of the prince his sonne in his gouernance, and vngoodly fame of his daughters in their lyuing, it semed to haue made an ende of the glorious memorie of the father, but if it were by the souerayne goodnes of his sonnes in lawe, that he had chose by his
 1210 lyfe tyme. It is dayly sene, that the losse of the father by euyll childerne, is wonne by vertuous sonnes in lawe. Than Marcus Aurelius confideryng husbandes for his daughters, toke not of dyuers that the vanitie of the worlde offered hym: but of a fewe that of many folkes
 1215 were esteemed to be of good behauour, and that to his semynge were suche in dede: and as in mariages all the error is to couete goodes that be in the purse, and not to examyne the persone that is brought to the house: He regardynge this, married not his daughters to strange kin-
 1220 ges, but to naturall borne senatours: and not to such as descended fro hygh lygnage, as were the Scipions, Fabricions, and Torquates: but to such that with their vertues reysed newly good lygnages: Nor he married them not to suche as were presumptuous of the prowes and
 1225 dedes of their predeceffours: but to them that resplendished by the dedes of their owne persons. Nor of trouthe he chose none that were very ryche, but suche as were vertuous: nor suche as were soone moued, but such as were quiete: not to the high mynded, but to the moderate, that
 1230 were no bosters, but shamefast, no bablers, but smal speakers: no quarellers, but sufferers: not to presumptuous, but to them that were meke: not to hafty men, but to thē that were pacient: not to them that were esteemed among the commons, but vnto them that deserued laude among
 wyle

(*f.20)*wyle men. In this maner he trusted no perlon, for he ma- 1235
 ried not his doughter to luche as were prayfed a farre of:
 but to them that of long tyme had ben proued nerehand.
 In good faythe herein his reafon was good. For in the
 thyng that toucheth a mannes honour, he that is wyle
 ought not to trust in the onely information of ftrangers: 1240
 Nor he is not wyle, that is fo hardy to do all thynges by
 his owne femyng and opinion. And he is but a fymple
 perfone, that wyll do all thyng after the opinion of ftran-
 gers. And in thefe poyntes the emperour Marcus had a
 good refpecte to kepe them: In walkyng good reft: In 1245
 fpeakinge great eloquence: in eatyng good temperance:
 In aunfweryng greate subtiltie: In his sentences and
 determinations great grauitie. And therefore in this cafe
 of mariage he was ful of grauite tyl he was therin deter-
 mined. And this only came not of hym, but of other, whā 1250
 they came to pray hym. It befell that in a feaft of the god
 Janus the emperour goyng to the campe of Mars vp-
 pon a lufte horfe fyers and flyngyng, he mette fo rudely
 with a trūpettour, that courfed as a knyght vpon a hors,
 that with the froke of metyng the trumpetour was ouer 1255
 throwen with his horfe, fo that he was flayne, and them-
 perours hors legge broken, and his owne fote hurte, and
 his arme out of ioynt. So greatly encreafed his hurte,
 that he was in perylle, Italye in heuynes, and all Rome
 was in doubte of his lyfe. And bycaufe a fewe days afore 1260
 that he had communication of a mariage for his thyrde
 doughter, named Matrina for the determination that he
 fhulde haue made the fame day, greate fuite was made to
 hym. But he for the great peyn of his arme, and the blud
 that was congeled in his bodye, and the anguyfhe that 1265
 was at his harte, as for the demaunde that was offered
 hym, he deferred the aunfwere tyll an nother daye. The
 whiche

(*f. 20^b) *whiche daye comen, in open prefence he sayde in this manier.

¶ What the emperour Marcus sayde to the father of a yonge man that wolde marye one of his doughters. Cap. .xii.

1270 ftentimes I haue sene in other, and haue proved by experience, that the smalle consideration passed, and the gret acceleration in busynesses nowe present, maketh great inconueniences in tyme to come, onles that at that point
 1275 the thyng be commytted to the vertue of some wyse person, rather than to his owne sole opinion. Neuer the les in the case of mariage though the father be wise, yet without the opinion of an other, he ought not to determyn him lightly, for enuious fortune, though she shewe her selfe
 1280 somewhat frowarde in all thinges, yet in this case of mariage, she ouerthroweth more than in al the other. He that wyll speake of mariage, ought to entre into his owne secretenes, and to thinke profoundly thereon, as of a thinge that all his welth lyeth in, his credence, his lyfe, his honour,
 1285 his good fame, the reste of his owne person, and his fleshe, whiche is his chylde. I am of opinion, that if all wyse men were molten in a founaynes, they coude not gyue one good counsell to make a mariage. And wolde ye that I, whiche am simple, shulde do it lightly by my self?
 1290 Truly therein behoueth ripe and sad counsell. For ones fallen in to the perill therof, none may haue remedy without greater perylle. The renowned Marcus Portius, whose lyuynge was a myrrour in his days, and his wordes and counsels remayne for a remembrance, sayd openly
 1295 in the senate: O noble fathers and happy people, by the decrees

(*f.21)*decrees openly proclaimed in places accustomed, I know that in a counfel and fenate ye ordeyned thre thinges, that is, ye vndertoke to make a newe warre againfte the Parthes, to continue the enmitie againft the Peniens, and to marie .v. hundred matrones of Rome, to .v. C. knygh-¹³⁰⁰tes of Mauritanie. And certaynly I am abafhed, that amonge wyfe men fo high affaires fhulde be fo loone and fodainly concluded and determyned. To fatisfie myn vnderftandyng, and for the good wyll that I owe to the countrey, I fhall fay one worde, that is, To begyn warre¹³⁰⁵ and to purfue hatred and yll wyll, and to conclude mariages, In thefe caufes a man ought to afke counsell of all the men of the worlde, and al the goddis ought to correct and amende it. And .x. M. counfaylynges wolde be holden vpon eche of thefe thynges. Thefe wordes were wor-¹³¹⁰thy of great recommendation. For one thyng by dyuers opinions ought to be determyned: But many thinges by one opinion oughte not to be determyned. And if this be for al thinges, it ferueth than moft fpecially in mariages. My frēdes, ye fay that he that offreth hym to be my fonne¹³¹⁵ in lawe, is greatly defired loued and wel named amonge the common people. To fell fuche marchandyfe, fet it not in fo yll a fhewe. The credence of an honeft manne lyeth not amonge the common voyce of the people, but among philofophers: not amonge many, but amonge fewe: not¹³²⁰ amonge howe many, but what they be. ye know your felf that at this houre all that the commons thynke is but a vayne thyng: that they prayfe is falfe: that they condempne is good: that they approue, is nought: that they alowe is fhamefull: and finally al that they lawde, is but¹³²⁵ folye. Their praiſinge begynneth with lyghtnes, their followinge without order, and it endeth with furie. O how many haue I ſene in Italy lyke the lyes of wyne caſt out of the

(*f. 21^b) *of the fenate, and after put as fyre brondes of tauernes in
 1330 Rome, by whose opinions the cōmon welth is gouerned,
 and with great lyghtnes men put downe, and with no les
 lyghtnes exalted agayne. Beholde here, that the werkes
 of the people are holden in mockage with wise men: and
 that that is agreed amonge theym, is esteemed but for va-
 1335 nities with wise men: For that that is meale with philoso-
 phers, is eaten but for brāne and chaffe with symple folk:
 and contrary wise the meale of the symple, is but branne
 7 chaffe among wyse men: Of all that our predeceffours
 haue lyfted, in these dayes the children of vanitie worke
 1340 thereafter, for they wylle be desyred, and hate to be hated.
 All suche holdeth a generall rule, that euery man that de-
 fireth to be beloued of euery man openly, can not escape
 fro dyuers secreete fautes. Shall I tell you who is best be-
 loued nowe adayes? Than harken to me, and I wyll tell
 1345 you, as moch as it toucheth, to whom it may touche, hurt
 who [sic] it may hurte, fele it who that may fele it. The people
 loueth hym, that can diffimule with them, that be nought
 and enuious of them that be good, and suche as fauour
 lyers, and setteth trouthe aside, and suche as accompani-
 1350 eth with mankyllers and murtherers, and to be serued of
 theues, and fauoureth quarellers, and pursueth such as
 be peasible: delyuereth offenders and fleeth innocentes,
 renoumeth them that be shamefull, and shameth them that
 be of good fame: Finally he is most set by, y putteth them
 1355 that be good fro hym, and is the most wayne among them
 that be wayne. Certainly there is great suspection to sette
 hym amonge wise men, that is allowed of all foles. And
 the reason therof is, that the commons lightly loue none
 but men that with malice refreyneth them that be vertu-
 1360 ous, and letteth the reyne slyppe to them that be vicious.
 Truly wise men haue hym as suspect that the commons
 desyre,

(*1.22)*defyre, whiche wyll not be displeased with his yl. doinges.

O howe often tymes doth the goddis permytte the ambitious man in honours, that procureth to do yl many dais without Justice, and dothe not be holde [sic] the sodayne hole ¹³⁶⁵ losse therof with shame? Than take this word of me, that in the multitude of men there are fewe to be prayfed, and many to be repreued.

¶ Howe a sonne in lawe ought to be wel examined
er he be accepted to his purpose. Cap. xiii.

NOwe to come to our particular purpose, ye amonge you do prayse this yonge man, and yf ¹³⁷⁰ his werkes be as your wordes, he shulde not onely say, that he hath merited to be my sonne in lawe, but rather meriteth to be onely enheritour of the hole empire. And therefore I wolde witte of you, wherof you can prayse this your kynseman, that ther ¹³⁷⁵ be no contrarietie betwene his werkes and your wordes. If he be rusticall, it abateth hym fore: if he be of hyghe blode, he wyll be presumptuous: if he be ryche, he wylle giue him to vicioufnes: if he be pore, he wyl be couetous: if he be valyant, he wyll be ouerbolde: yf he be a coward ¹³⁸⁰ he is defamed: if he be a great speaker, he shall be a lyer: if he be to lyttell a speaker, he shall be noted as vnwise: yf he be faire, he wyll be coueted: if he be fowle, he wyll be ielous. Than if he be quite of all these, I swere to you that I wyll gyue hym my doughter Matrine with al my ¹³⁸⁵ hart. I do not say this vnto you, bicause I suppose any yl in your kynsman: but to thentent that ye shulde thynke, that I say it accordynge to my naturalitie. And than sith I say it not agaynst your credence, for the knowlege that ye haue of him, mystake not my suspection, sith that I am ¹³⁹⁰ hole

G. ii.

(*f. 22^b) *hole ignorant of this yonge mans lyuyng. And I wyll
 not, that ye shulde thynke, that the chylde my doughter,
 that hath ben brought vp in so great vertu in my palays,
 shulde be maried to this yong man for the only fame that
 1395 he hath amonge the people. O howe often haue I sene in
 our tyme nowe, and haue redde of the worlde passed, the
 whiche as nowe by commandement of the goddis, at an
 other tyme by their yll workes hath deserued hit, at an o-
 ther tyme by their sorowfull destenies haue permitted it,
 1400 wenyng for to bryng sonnes in lawe in to their howse,
 haue brought in a hell: In stede of wyfe and faire dought-
 ers, haue recouered adders: In sekynge sonnes, haue
 founde basylicke serpentis: In byenge of bloudde, poy-
 son delyuered: In sekynge frendes, they haue founde en-
 1405 nemies: In demaundyng honour, shame hath be giuen:
 and finally in marienge their children, wenyng to haue
 lyued merily, the sorowfull fathers haue had an euyl life
 and a wors dethe. And in case that such ought to be mo-
 ned more of them that be ioyous, than they that ben sorye
 1410 of them that ben ioyous: as well oughte we to approue
 the iuste chastisement of the iuste goddes, by the vniuste
 workes done to iust men. For he deserueth great chastise-
 ment, that with ferefull hardynes as a foole determineth
 hym selfe in high and difficult thinges with sodayn coun-
 1415 sell. And therefore my frendes, if ye be vertuous, be not a-
 bashed of that that I saye, nor take the examination that
 I make in a sclander: If I take this yonge man to be
 my sonne, to be sonne in lawe to Faustyne my wyfe, huf-
 bande to my doughter Matrine, broder [sic] to Comodus the
 1420 prince, felawe to them of the senate, kinsman to my kins-
 folke, and lorde of my seruantes: It is reason, that such
 a robe ought well to be regarded, sythe that so many per-
 sones must weare the lyueray therof. The garment that
 so

(*f.23) *fo many perloncs muft weare, muft be wifely cut, to content them all. We fe naturally many thynges .noyfull to ¹⁴²⁵ vs, if it be nere vs, and yet not damageable to vs ferre of. The fonne with his fhynyngc beames dothe parche the fleffhe of the people of Ethiope, bycaufe it is nere vnto theym: and contrarye wife it dothe no grefe to their perloncs that inhabite in the ende of Europe: for bycaufe it ¹⁴³⁰ toucheth theym a ferre of. There haue bene dyuers fonnes of Rome, whiche beinge in ftraunge countreys, haue done great profite to the common welth, and no leffe famed throughout the worlde, which after they were returned to their owne houfes, haue fpilte more bloudde of in- ¹⁴³⁵ nocentes, than they had done before of the Barbariens. And that it is fothe demaunde of Julius Cefar, of Pompeius, of Sylla, of Marius, of Cafius, of Catilina, and of Lipulus, of Octavius, and Marcus Anthonius, of Caligula and of Nero, of Othus and Domitianus. ¹⁴⁴⁰

And as I fay of fo fmall a noumbre of bafarde chyldren that helde Rome, I maye faye of dyuers other tyrauntes broughte vppe in Italye. Beleue me in one thyngc, All that is agreable to vs abroode, agreeth not to vs yf we bringe them into the howfe. For there goth many thin- ¹⁴⁴⁵ ges betwene the entreatinge of a man in wordes, and to be longe conuerfant with hym in workes. Lyttell nedeth humayne ignorance for to begyle an other, and yet leffe to be begyled of many an other. With a meke viſage, fwete wordes in the tongue, good delyberation in the perfone, ¹⁴⁵⁰ temperance in the worde, euery one may begyle an other nowe adayes: and by fhrewdenes and malyce, is begiled hym felfe. I fay to you, I beinge a yonge man knew the famous oratour Tauryn propole dyuers tymes in the ſenate: And on a day he fpake for a Romain matron, which ¹⁴⁵⁵ ſhulde haue married an honeſt doughter of hers to a mayſter

G. iii.

(*f. 23^b) *fter of horfes, by femyng a Romaine, and not very well appoynted: And amonge other wordes he layde: O noble fathers, O happy people, Commande not that thinge
 1460 that afterwarde ye wolde were not commaunded: An yll mariage is lyke as he that fhoteth a pellet of duft, it hurteth hym that it toucheth, and blyndeth them that ftande nexte. Sothely thefe were hie wordes, and the comparyfon well vnderftonden, conteyneth in it fentences of grauitie. It is manifelt to all men, that an ylle fonne in lawe
 1465 is the deathe of the wyfe that hath hym, fhame to the frenedes that procured it, and at the lafte an yll ende for hym felfe, and for his father that offered it. Than by all thefe thynges that I haue layde, ye may vnderftande what I
 1470 thynke in this mariage. His sayinges thus ended, the Senate was greatly edified therwith, and the knyghtes, kynsfolke to this yonge man, greatly abafhed: and Fauftin the empreffe fore confused: for by her introduction, the matter was moued: 7 how this mariage fayled, the hiftoriens write not, whom we haue folowed in this werke.
 1475

¶ Howe Marke the emperour fauoured all noble exerycyfes, and hated trewandes and fooles. Cap. xiiii.



He vertues of this good emperour, and the knowlege of fciēces, the worthines in armes, and the purenes of his lyuyng, caufed hym to be named among the famous mē of Rome:
 1480 The gentyll conuerfation that he had with euerye man, made hym to be renowned amonge the worthyest of all the worlde, the thyng moſte agreable without reprehencion of the greateſt, meane, and leaſte is, that a lorde and prince of many to be communicable and conuerfant with
 1485 many. All the good werkes of good men may be condemned
 ned

(*f. 24) *ned with the yll intentions of theym that be ylle: But the good condicions haue such a priuilege, that of yl the good is prayfed, and the god approueth the yll. In a mans lyuyng there is none fo great a vice, but by good conuerfation it is couered and hyd: And contrary wife no crime is ¹⁴⁹⁰ fo fecrete, but with yl conuerfation, at the tyme that it hurteth it is more openly knowen. Of two extremities it is not fo greuous to the common welthe, a man to be weke and faynt in fecretenes, 7 of gentyl conuerfation abroad, as it is of hym that is fecrete, and is rude and of yll con- ¹⁴⁹⁵ uerfation opely. Dyuers not being of good order 7 polycie, we haue fene cōuerfant a gret whyle in Rome, only for beinge wel condicioned. And many mo we haue fene, that in a fhort while after they were put in office haue bene fo proude and hafty in their condicions, that they haue bene ¹⁵⁰⁰ depriued from their offices. And this we fay bycaufe this good emperour was fo ioyous of vyfage, foo amyable in his cultomes, fo louyng in his conuerfacion, that lyghtly he wolde cafte his armes aboute the necke and on the fhulders of them, and take them by the handes, that had ¹⁵⁰⁵ any thyng to do with hym. The porters fhulde not lette them that wolde accompany hym in the palays: Nor his garde was not fo hardy to put abacke fuch as wold fpeke with hym in the felde. In all his aeges he applyed to that that euery age gaue hym by nature: He was a childe ¹⁵¹⁰ amonge chyldren: yonge amonge yong folkes: worldly with them that were worldly: good felawe with good felawes: A baron among barons: Hardy with hardy men: and fynally olde with olde menne. He was wont to faye, whan any in his prefence that were yonge and not welle ¹⁵¹⁵ taught in their language, gefted at the debilytie of age, or olde mē at the foly of youth: Leaue them fith they leue you. Many tymes of wyfe yonge men cometh olde foles: And

(*f. 24^b) *And of yonge fooles customably cometh wyse olde men.

1520 Naturalitie at the last maketh al thyng in kynde. As of
 greatte debilitie we can drawe but smalle strengthe, by
 our naturalitie we may for a tyme resiste it, but not vtter-
 ly maister it. I am fore abashed that some that wyll be soo
 lordely and valiant in vertues and so high mynded, that
 1525 they wyll make vs beleue, that they luyng in the fleshe,
 7 being of fleshe, only fele not the fleshe. I can not tell,
 yf nature hath made other of an other nature than I am
 of, or me of an other nature thanne other be, for I beinge
 neuer so faste inclosed in the swete conuerlation of philo-
 1530 sophye, ye in the beste tyme, this false fleshe wolde calle
 atte the gate with his noughtye fleshe. The more that
 we reyse and exalte vs with science and gette lyberties,
 the more lower we do putte the fleshe with her myse-
 ries. Beleue me one thyng, that if a tree beareth not in
 1535 Prymetyme his floures, we hope not to haue the fruite
 in harueste ripe: and a yonge man that hath not passed
 his youthe with yonge people, we haue no hope that he
 shulde passe his age with olde men. And as we may resist
 our naturalitie and not cleane to fordoo it, those fathers
 1540 erre, that are so extremely affectioned, to haue their chil-
 dren to begynne as olde men, whervpon it foloweth, that
 they ende as yonge. This emperour was so wyse in all
 thynges, that amonge theym that were mery, he was of
 great myrthe: And in verities he was very veritable: In
 1545 his pastimes he was greattely temperate, and a louer of
 musike, specially in good voyce and instrumentes, and
 soore displeased, yf he harde any discorde therin. He pas-
 sed most of his youthe in lernynge of sciences. Whan he
 came to mans state, he exercised feates of knyghthode:
 1550 he loued discipline and not of adulation. He was apt and
 happye in armes, but yet in rydinge of horses he hadde
 ofte

(*f.25)*ofte tymes yll happe. In his yonge age he delyted to play at the tennys, and at the cheffe in his aege. He loued not these counterfaityng players of farces and mummeries, and yet lesse trewandes that ben naturall fooles, iuglers ¹⁵⁵⁵ and gesters for pleasure. The players and gesters suffred great varietie in the empire, accordynge to the diuerfitie of emperours. Julius Cefar susteyned them, Octavian his neuewe droue them awaye, Caligula called theym agayne, Cruell Nero banyshed them, Nerua made theym ¹⁵⁶⁰ come agayne, Good Traian banyshed them out of all Italy, Anthony pius brought them in ageyne: And by the handes of this good emperour Marcus Aurelius, they ended. And the occasion was, the Romayns dyd celebrate with great ioye the .iiii. daye of Maye the great feaste of ¹⁵⁶⁵ the mother Berecynthe, mother of all the goddis. The sacred priestes flamines diales, wold haue brought thither these minstrelles iuglers and iesters for to reioyce y^e feast, and contrary wise the holy nunnes vestales, wolde haue done the same, so that variance felle betwene them, some ¹⁵⁷⁰ with force, and some with resistence, and many ranne thider in fauouringe of both parties, and not a fewer to departe them. The cruell and greatte noyse of slaughter amonge them was such, that it tourned the feaste to wepynges, the pleasures into sorowes, and their songes in- ¹⁵⁷⁵ to wayllynges. This good emperour laboured to pease this furie of the people, and to sette peace among the neybouris of Rome. Whan al was done he made curious diligence to serche out all the players, iuglers, and iestours of Rome, and in al the circuite of Italy, that they might ¹⁵⁸⁰ be chaftised, and Rome delyuered of them. And for example of all the worlde he sente theym to the gate of Hostie, and commaunded to set theym in Galies, and to banysshe them for euer into the yles of Hillespont: whiche was accom-

H.

(*f.25^b) 1585 *complyed as the emperour commaunded. And fro that daye was neuer sene at Rome iugler nor gester, as longe as themperour lyued. But hit passed not two yeres after his deathe, but they retourned, whan his sonne had the rule. And excepte the bokes doo lye, there was in Rome 1590 greater nombre of fooles than of wyle men.

¶ Of the good conuerlation of this emperour
 Marcus Aurelius. Cap. xv.

WE haue sayd of the hatred that this emperour had to trewandes, reuelers, getters, iuglers, gesters, and suche other: Now will we speke of his laudable exercises of them that came 1595 to hym. To be welle condicioned the malyce of mankynde is so great, that as good men are bounde to regarde the yll, so do they that be yl regard to distroye the good. The trace of vertu is as good in good thingis with them y^e be good, as the vice 7 dishonestie of euyl folkes is 1600 in euyl thynges. What greater corruption in this worlde may be, than a vertuous persone for one worke of vertue can not fynde one to helpe hym to worke it, and whan he alone hathe wroughte it, there cometh tenne thousande to gaynelaye hym? The greattest goodnesse of all good- 1605 nesses is whan tyrannies ar put vnder by vertues acquyred: or to fynde remedy agaynste accustomed vices with good inclynations. And the greattest euyll of all euylles is whan a persone forgetteth that he is a man, puttynge reson vnder fote, straining his hand ageynste vertue, and 1610 letteth vice rule the bridle. This emperour M. Aurel. susteyned in his lyfe great glorie in the eschewinge the villany of vyllaynes: no les merited he immortall memory in sufferynge dyuers dishonestyes in the execution of his
 ver-

(*f.26)*vertues. An vnfallible reule it is amonge the chylderne of vanitie, to chylde the vices of theym that be vicious. ¹⁶¹⁵ And the vertues welle incorporate nouryssh the many enuyous. They that be ylle, bene alwayes double ylle, bycause they beare armour defensiue to defende their owne yuelles: and armes offensiue to assaylle the good manners of other. The trowthe is, yf good menne be dily- ¹⁶²⁰ gente to seeke other that be good, no lesse oughte they for to hyde theym from theym that be ylle: for a good manne with one fynger hathe power ouer all theym that be vertuous, but for to withstonde one ylle personne, he hathe nede of handes feete and frendes. And thoughe fortune ¹⁶²⁵ be ylle to good menne, their owne propre fame shall be spente as of straungiers. This good emperoure was stronge in vertue, meeke in wordes, attemperate in his exercyses, homely with euerye man, sadde amonge sadde men, hafty amonge hafty men, Mery with mery men, and ¹⁶³⁰ wife amonge wife men, as it is conuenable for a curious prince to be. And whan these are approued in the lawe of good men by clere vnderstandynge, as well shall they be condempned by theym that haue ylle intencions. Than as the cooles can not be in the embres without sparkis, ¹⁶³⁵ nor corruption of caryon withoute stench: no more can he that hath a hole and clere herte be, without inforcyng hym to vtter louynge wordes: And he that hath an ylle harte, alwayes ouercommeth other with wordes of malyce. For it is certayne, for a smalle season the louer may ¹⁶⁴⁰ absteyne his loue, and yet lesse tyme the payne of hym, that is payned with loue hydde. The sorowfulle syghes shewe the hurte of the herte, and the malicious wordes discouer the yll of the harte. We haue sayd all this bycause that the bountie of this good Emperour Marcus Au- ¹⁶⁴⁵ relius set all his ioy and gladnes in them that were good, and

H. ii.

(*f. 26^b) *and bewayled them that were ylle. And as in semblable
 thynges the worthy men shewe their worthynes, and wife
 men their wisedome, beinge vertuous in workynge and
 1450 wife in knowlegynge, were very wise in diffimulyng. One
 of the vertues that a wise man ought to haue (wherin he
 shall be knowen as wyse) is that he can suffre welle. For a
 mā that can suffre wel, was neuer but wise & wel manerd,
 and therewith to suffre the vertue of yll busines is a thyng
 1455 reasonable of all reasonables bestes [sic], and of them that be
 good very good. And by contrary wise the man that can
 not well suffre, though it be in very iuste thinges, hopeth
 not to be well treated. And lykewyse as this emperour
 Marcus in all vertues hath ben egall with all the empe-
 1460 rours of Rome that haue bene, In this vertue of suffe-
 raunce he hath surmounted all them of the world. He was
 wont to say many tymes: I haue not attayned to the em-
 pire by the sciēces that I haue lernid of the philosophers,
 but by the pacience that I haue had with them that were
 1465 frowarde and not lerned. And this semeth to be true: for
 oftentimes this emperour beyng with the Senate at
 Collisee, or the Senate with hym in the hyghe Capitoll,
 he seyng in his presence dyuers that praysed hym, and
 other that in his absence amonge the people blamed hym
 1470 and rebuked hym, his attemperaunce yet was so greatte,
 and shewed hym selfe so iust with one and other, that ney-
 ther his frendes that agreed with hym were sorowfulle,
 nor his ennemies for any diffauour went away complay-
 nyng and angrie.

¶ Of the feaste that the Romaines kept to the god
 Jano in Rome, and what chaunced to the
 fayde emperour there. Cap. xvi.

Amonge

(*f.27)



Monge the solempne feastes, that the aunci-¹⁴⁷⁵
 ente Romaynes hadde inuented, was one of
 the god Janus, kepte the firste daye of the
 yere, whiche as nowe is the fyrste day of Ja-
 nyer: He was paynted with two faces, to
 shewe that it was the laste day of the yere passed, and the¹⁴⁸⁰
 begynnyng of the newe yere. To this god was dedicate
 a sumptuous temple in Rome, whiche Temple Numa
 Pompilius called the temple of peace. And except the tem-
 ple of Jupiter, it was holden in moste reuerence of all o-
 ther. Whanne the Romayne emperours went or came to¹⁴⁸⁵
 Rome to visite the high capitoll, and the vestall virgins,
 forthwith they went to pray, worshyp, and to offre at the
 temple of Janus. The day of celebration of the layd feast
 all Rome reioyced, and put on them the beste clothes that
 they had, brennyng greatte lyghtes in euery hous, and¹⁴⁹⁰
 made many plays of interludes, of gestes and iuglyng, 7
 watched al nyght in the temples, 7 delyuered al the priso-
 ners that were in prison for debt, 7 the debtes paide with
 the common treasour. They had tables with meate before
 their doores in suche habundance, that more was lefte thā¹⁴⁹⁵
 eaten, wherwith all the poore folkes in Rome were rele-
 ued. The Romayns thought, that what so euer they spēt
 that day, that the god Jano (whiche was god of tymes)
 wolde rewarde them double. The Romaynes saide, that
 this god Janus was not vnkynde and a nygarde, for¹⁵⁰⁰
 if they spent a lyttell, he wolde recompence theym with a
 great deale. At this feaste was made great proceffions,
 euery sorte of people by them selfe, the senate went a part,
 the priestes aparte, The Cenfores a parte, the plebeyens
 a parte, The matrones and yonge maydens by them self,¹⁵⁰⁵
 and the ambassadours went in proceffion with al the cap-
 tiues and prifoners. Thus they went euer two and two:
 the

H. iii.

(*f. 27^b) *the ende of one company was the beginnyng of an other.

And thus out of the temple of Janus, they went aboute
 1510 all the temples of Rome, and so out of Porte latine into
 the felde, and rounde aboute the walles of Rome. And
 bycause the circuite of Rome was greate, the proceffions
 went but from one gate to an other, so that towarde night
 all the proceffions of Rome had gone euerychone in their
 1515 company aboute: And that done they retourned all into
 the temple that they came out of, and there offred echeone
 as they myght. And in the sayde proceffions it was of cu-
 stome, that the emperours went accompanied with the se-
 natours: but this good emperour was so familiar, that
 1520 he wolde honour and accompany euery man. It was ac-
 customed in Rome, that the sayde day themperour shulde
 weare on his robe, and mantell imperiall. And all priso-
 ners and captiues that myght touch hym with their hād,
 were delyuerd, 7 al trespaffours were pardoned, and bani-
 1525 shed folke were forgiuen, and callyd agayn. And this em-
 perour to vse his clemency, and to leaue after hym perpe-
 tuall memorie, lefte the proceffion of senatours, and with-
 out any gard went the proceffion with prifoners and cap-
 tiues. The whiche doinge was occasion to leaue behynde
 1530 hym perpetuall memorie of him selfe, and great example
 of clemencie and lowlynes to princes for to come. Howe
 be it there is nothyng so well done of them that be good,
 but forthwith it shalbe contraried of them that be yll: And
 therefore this example was as moche dispraised of theym
 1535 that were yll, as prayfed and allowed of them that were
 good. And in likewise as among them that be good there
 is one noted to be pure good, so amonge them that be ylle,
 there is one noted to be right ylle. And that worfe is, that
 the vertuous persone este meth not the glorie of his vertu
 1540 so gret, as the malicious person by his malyce is shamid.
 This

(*f.28)*This is sayde bycause there was a senatour in the senate named Fuluius, whiche was as blacke by his malyce, as white by his heares. He laboured fore in the dayes of Adrian to haue ben emperour, and had Marcus alwayes as competitour. And as it is a natural thyng to them that haue yll hartes to shewe theyr malice in small thynges, so this emperour dyd neuer good thyng openly, but this Fuluius wolde grudge therat secretely. And though this emperour was greatly prayfed for the delyueringe of prisoners, yet the sayd senatour coude not haue the prudence for to luffre it, and so parte in mockerie, and parte in earnest he sayde these wordes to the emperour in the senate: Why gyuest thou thy selfe to all men?

¶ Howe Marcus the emperour aunswered a senatour in the senate. Cap. xvi. [sic].

He emperour Marcus Aur. heringe what the senator had sayd to hym in the presence of the senators, that is to witte, Wherfore he gaue hym to all men, He answered: Frende I giue me to all men, bycause all men gyue them to me, and are glad of me. Beleue me, that ouer great rigour in a prince causeth hatred of the people, the goddis will not, nor the lawes permit not, nor the agrement of the cōmon welthe wyl not luffre, y princes be lordis ouer many, 7 to accompany but with a fewe. I haue redde in bokes, 7 haue proued it by my selfe, that the loue of subiectes, the suretie of the prince, the dignite of thempire, and the honour of the Senate, do conferue the prince, not with rigour, but with gentyl conuersation. The fysher goth not to take dyuers fylshes of the riuer with one baite, nor y mariner with one nette entreth in to the see. I promyse you the depenes of
good

(*f. 28^b) 1570 *good wylles oughte to be wonne with the depenes of the harte, some with giftes, some with wordes, some with promyses, and some with fauours. The infaciate couetous men are neuer content, nor wyl open their affections, but locke vp their treasours. And suche as serueth for loue, ar
 1575 lesse content with openyng of their treasure, than locking vp their wylles. It is an olde prouerbe of Pythagoras: Loue is payd with other loue. O how yl fortune it is to a prince, 7 how vnhappy it is to a cōmon welth, whā the people serue not their lordes but for rewardes, 7 the lordes to
 1580 kepe 7 mainteyne them, but for their seruice. With diuers stones 7 one cymment buylding is reyled, and of dyuers mē and one lorde is composed a common welthe. And if geometrie begyle me not, the mortar that ioyneth one stone with an other, ought to be medled with sande and flecked
 1585 lyme by reson. Separate the stones, and the wall openeth, and let the cymment fayle, and the edifice falleth. He that is wise, may well vnderstonde me. Loue betwene neybouris suffereth to be mytigate with water: but it is requisite, that the loue of the prince and his people be pure. Dy-
 1590 uers trowbles, and at dyuers tymes I haue seene amonge the common people of Rome in one day moued 7 appeased: but one discorde reyled betwene the lorde and the common welthe, vnto the dethe is neuer accorded. It is a difficile thyng to make appoyntment of many with
 1595 many, and more difficile to accorde one with an other. But without comparison more harder it is to appoynt diuers with one, than one with dyuers. And in this case I wyl not saue the prince nor leue the people vncondēpned. Fro whens (as ye think) cometh it now a days, that lordis
 1600 with annoyance commaunde vniust thynges, and in iuste thynges the subiectes are vnobedient? Nowe here me 7 I shall tell you. The prince doinge a thinge in dede, and
 no

(*f.29) *not of righte, will confounde the wille of euery man, and beleue his owne vnderstandynge, and drawe of hym selfe and all other his only wyll. Contrary wise, the multitude ¹⁶⁰⁵ of the people disprayinge their lordis vnderstandynge, do as they wyll: not as all wyll, but as euery man defyreth hym selfe. Of trouthe it is a greuous thing (although it be greatly accustomed) to wyll that all gownes shulde be mete for one man, and that one mans harnes shulde be ¹⁶¹⁰ mete to arme all men. Than what shall we do, that our fathers haue left thus in the worlde, 7 also we hold that we be their children, and that wors is, we leaue the same to our heires? O howe many princes of my predeceffours, that I haue redde of, haue bene losse, in shewynge theym ¹⁶¹⁵ selfe ouer straunge, and beloued of none? I wyll tel you of some of them for examples, that I haue redde in my bokes, to thintent that princes may see what they wyne by amiable conuersation, and what they lose by ouermuch straungenes. In the realme of Affiens gretter in armes ¹⁶²⁰ than the Caldeens, and lesse in aduantage and antiquite than the Affiriens: One maner forme of kyngis endured amonge them .CC. and .xx. yeres, by reason they were of lowable conuersation. And an nother fourme and maner (as Homer saith) lasted but .xl. yeres bycause their kyngis ¹⁶²⁵ were of an yll condicion. And the .ix. Epiphanes of the Egypciens was vnnombred and put down, bycause there was a lawe that echone shulde be bare legged in the temples vpon the holy days. And this kynge on a day riding came before the god Apis, god of the Egypciens, the whi- ¹⁶³⁰ che thinge was not suffred, for beside that he was put out of his realme, he was chaftised. Also the .vi. Arfacidauell the inuincible kynge of Parthes, not only was depriued, but also banyshed out of his realme, bycause he dyned at a knyghtes bridale, and wolde not eate at the bridale of a ¹⁶³⁵ comuner.

I.

(*f. 29^b) *cōmuner. yet also though the realme of Italy was scant, their hartis were greatte: for bycause one of their Mar-
 ranes, for so were their kynges called, had shette his ga-
 tes by nyght for to slepe the surelyer, he was depriued of
 1640 his realme: bycause a lawe was made, that no prince
 shulde shette his gates nyght nor day: for they sayd, they
 hadde made hym kyng for to driue away their ennemies,
 and not to be daintily nourished. Tarquine the laste king
 of the Romyans was vnkinde to his father in lawe, dif-
 1645 famed his blode and kynrede, was traytour to his coun-
 trey, cruell of his persone, and aduoutrer with Lucrece:
 but for all that he was not called vngentyll, nor infamed,
 nor traytre, nor cruell, nor aduoutrer, but he was named
 Tarquine the proude, bycause he was of ylle condicions
 1650 and complexions. And yet by the lawe of good men, I
 fwere to you, that yf the sayde vnhappy Tarquine hadde
 had good wyll in Rome, for the aduoutrie of Lucrece he
 had not be put oute of his realme, In as moche as other
 greater and more greuous harmes hadde bene done be-
 1655 fore his tyme, and also moche wors sithen by aged empe-
 rours in the empire, the whiche crimes by them commit-
 ted, were luche, that the offence of this fraile yonge man,
 was but smal in estimation. For thing certayne these prin-
 ces holde, that if they gyue dyuers occasions for their yll
 1660 wyll, yet a lyttell thing suffiseth yf he shewe that the hate
 that he hath is for none yl wyll: but the hate that the sub-
 iecte hath to the lorde, is bycause he hath no power.

¶ Julius Cesar, the laste dictatour and firste emperour,
 bycause he forgate to be a man among men, but thinking
 1665 to be a god amonge goddis, beinge a laudable custome,
 that the senate shulde salute the emperour on their knees,
 and the emperour to ryse courtelyfly ageynste them: by-
 cause of a presūptuous mynd, he wolde not kepe the cere-
 monie

(*f.30) *monie, he merited to lese his lyfe with .xxiii. strokes of pen kniues. And as I say of these so fewe a nombre, I maye ¹⁶⁷⁰ say of many other. The phisitians with a lytell Rubarbe purge many humours of the body, and the emperor with a lytell beneuolence take many greues fro the stomakes of his subiectis. The people owe obedience to the prince, and to do his persone great reuerence, and fulfyll his cō- ¹⁶⁷⁵ maundementis, and the prince oweth egall iustice to eue-ry man, and meke conuerfation to all men.

¶ Marcus Portius saide dyuers tymes in Rome: That the publycke welthe is there perpetuall and without any sodayne falle, where the prynce fyndeth obedience, and ¹⁶⁸⁰ all the people fyndethe loue with the prince. For of the loue of the lorde bredeth the good obedience of the subiecte. And of the obedience of the subiect bredeth the good loue of the lorde. The emperour in Rome is lyke to a spider that is in the myddes of her webbe. For if the layde ¹⁶⁸⁵ coppe webbe be touched with the poynt of a nedell, forthwith the spider feleth it. I meane that all the werkes of the Emperour in Rome bene streyghte waye knowen in all the erthe. I beleue that this daye I haue ben iudged of humayne malyce, for accompanyenge the proceffyon ¹⁶⁹⁰ of the captiues, and that I suffredde theym to towche me, that they myghte enioye the priuilege of lybertie.

I yelde and gyue great graces to my goddis of my good happe, bycause they haue made me pytefull for to delyuer prifoners, and not cruell as a tyraunt for to make theym ¹⁶⁹⁵ bonde that be free. The prouerbe sayth: One snare maye take two byrdes: So it hath ben this daye: for the benefyte redounded onely to the myferable prifoners, but the fauour to all their nations. And doo ye not knowe, that by takynge awaye their yrons I haue drawn to me ¹⁷⁰⁰ the hartes of all their realmes and countreyes? Finally
it is

I. ii.

(*f. 30^b) *it is more sure to a prince to be serued with free hartes and loue of them that be at libertie, than of subiectes constrained with feare.

¶ Howe themperour Marcus diuided the houres of the day for the busynesses of thempire. Capi. xviii.


1705 **H**ere before we haue shewid how this good emperour had great hatred of men that were of yll lyuyng, and that passed their tyme in ylle exercise, It suffiseth not the philosopher to re-
 1710 ceffari that he do the werkes that he requirith other to do: It is reason nowe to shewe, howe this emperour by his great prudence compassed 7 dispatched the great 7 huge busynesses of the empire, the particularities of his householde, the recreation of his persone, the exercise of his studies, the infinite reasonyng with one and other, with such
 1715 che payne takyng, and in so shorte tyme. He was so apte and wel aduyfed, that by him there was no tyme yll spent. Nor neuer faylled to dispatche the besynes of the empire. And bycause the time is glorious of him that gloriously
 1720 spendeth it, and the time is accursed that to our damage, and without profyte to other passeth, leauing vs ignorāt as brute beastis: He departed the tyme by times, the ordre wherof was thus. Seuen houres he slepte in the nyght, and rested one houre on the day: At dyner and supper he
 1725 wasted but onely two howres: he deputed two houres for the matters of Asie: Other two howres for the busynesse of Europe and Affrike: and in conuersation of his hous and with his wife and chyldren seruantes and frēdes that came to se hym, he spent other two houres: And for the
 1730 outwarde besynesses, as to here the complayntes of them that

(*f.31)*that were greued, The suites of poore men wanting Iustice, the widowes, the robberies of pyckers, of mychers, and vacabundes he deputed an other houre. All the reste of the day and night in redyng of bokes, to write workis, to make metres, to studye antiquities, to practyse with ¹⁷³⁵ wife men, to dispute among philosophers, he passed thus ordinarily in wynter: And in sommer if cruel warres letted hym not, or that he were troubled with great and hainous matters, he went euer to bed at .ix. of the clocke, and awoke at .iiii. It was of custome that emperours hadde ¹⁷⁴⁰ euer lyghtes brennyng in their chaumbre. And therefore whan he awoke, bycause he wold not be ydle, he had euer a boke at his beddis heed. And thus in redynge he spent the rest of the nyght, tyll it was day. He rose at .vi. of the clocke, and made hym redy openly, not angrely, but me- ¹⁷⁴⁵ rily: he wold demande of theym that were present, howe they had spent all the nyght tyme. And there he wolde reherse, what he hadde redde that nyght. Whan he was redye, he wolde washe his handes with very well smellyng waters: for he was a greate louer of al swete odours. He ¹⁷⁵⁰ had a good and a quicke smellyng. Than in the morning before euery man, he wolde take .iii. or .iiii. morcelles of electuarie of sticados, and two draughts [sic] of Aqua vite. After that in sommer he wolde go forthwith a fote to the riuer side, and there passe the tyme the space of two hou- ¹⁷⁵⁵ res. And as sone as the heate came, he wolde go to the hie capitoll to the senate. That done he wente to the college, where as all the procurours and ambassadours of all prouinces were, and there be wolde be a greatte parte of the day, and there here euery nacyon by it selfe, accordynge to ¹⁷⁶⁰ the tyme that was deputed by order. And towarde theeuynge, he wolde go to the temple of the virgins vestales. He eate but ones a daye, and that was somewhat late, and

I. iii.

(*f. 31^b) *and than he wolde make a good meale, and but of fewe
 1765 meates. He had a custome euery weke in Rome, or other
 cities, where as he was, that two dayes late in the euen-
 nyng he wolde walke in the stretes without his garde or
 knyghtis, onely with .x. or .xii. pages, to se yf any person
 wolde speke with hym, or complayne of any officer of his
 1770 courte and howse, and this he caused to be demaunded of
 other men. This good emperour wolde oftentimes say:
 A good prince that wyll rule and gouerne well, and not to
 to [sic] be a tyrant, ought to doo thus: That is, that he be not
 couetous of tributes, nor proude in his commaundemen-
 1775 tes, nor vnkynde to seruices, nor bolde in the temples, nor
 defe to here complayntes. In fulfyllinge hereof he shal
 haue the goddis in his handes, and the hartis of menne
 shalbe [sic] his. All the whyle that this Marke was emperour
 he had neuer porter at his chaumbre doore, but if it were
 1780 the two houres that he was with Faustin his wyfe. This
 good emperour had in his howse a secrete clofette locked
 with a key that he bare hym selfe. And neuer trusted none
 other therwith to the houre of his deathe. And than he cō-
 maunded to delyuer it to Pompeyano, a prudent ancient
 1785 baron that was married to his doughter: In the which clo-
 set he had dyuers bokes writen in al langages, as Greke,
 hebrewe, latyne, and Caldee, and other antike histories.

¶ The answere of M. themperour, whan Faustine his
 wife demaunded the key of his study. Cap. xix.

1790  S it is natural to womē to dispise that thing
 that is giuen them vnasked, so it is deathe to
 them to be denayed [sic] of that they do demande.
 This emperour had the study or clofet of his
 howse in the mooste secrete place of his palays, wherin he
 neyther

(*f.32) *neyther suffred his wife, seruant, nor frende to entre. On a day it chanced, that Faustin the empresse desired importunately to see that study, sayinge these wordes: My lorde, let me see your secreete chaumbre, beholde, I am greatte with chylde, and shall dye if I see it not. And ye knowe welle, that the lawe of the Romaines is, that nothyng shall be denied to womenne with chylde of that they desyre. And yf ye doo otherwise, ye doo it in dede, but not of ryghte. For I shall dye with the chylde in my body. And more ouer I thynke in my mynde, that ye haue some other loue within your study. Therefore to put away the peryl of my trauaylynge, and to assure my harte fro Jelousie, hit is no greatte thyng to lette me entre into your studye. The emperour seinge that Faustines wordis were of trouthe bycause he sawe her wordes washed with weping, answered her on this wise: It is a thyng certayne, whan one is contented, he sayth more with his tongue, than he thynketh with his hart. And contrary wyse whan one is heuy, the eien wepe not so moche, nor the tongue can not declare that is locked in the harte. Uayne men with vayne wordes shewe and declare their vayne plesures: And the wise men with prudente wordes, dissemble their cruelle passions. Among wise men he is wysest that knoweth moche, 7 sheweth to knowe but lyttelle: And amonge the symple he is mooste symple, that knoweth but lyttel, and sheweth hym selfe to knowe moche. They that ar prudent, though they are demaunded, saye nothyng: but symple folke wyll speake inough without askynge of any question. This I say Faustyne, bycause thy wepyng hath so hurte me, and thy vayne speche so turmented me, that I can not declare that I fele, nor thou canst not fele y that I say. Dyuers aduertisementes haue they writen, that haue wryten of mariage, yet haue they not writē, how many trauailes that

(*f. 32^b) *that one womanne causeth her husbände to suffre in one daye. Of a suretie, it is a ioyfull thyng to reioyce in the chyldehode of chylde, but it is a ryght cruel thing to suffre the importunities of their mothers. The chylde do
 1830 nowe and than a thyng that tourneth vs to pleasure: but ye women do nothyng but gyue vs displeasure. I shall agree with all married men to pardon theyr chylde's pleasures, for the annoyance that the mothers gyue to them. One thyng I haue sene, the whiche neuer begyled me,
 1835 that the iust goddes do gyue to the vniuste menne, that all the euylles that they doo in this worlde, shall be remytted to the furies of the other worlde. But yf they doo commytte any synne for the pleasure of any woman, the goddis commaunde, that by the handes of the same wo-
 1840 manne, we shall receyue payne in this worlde, and not in the other. There is not so fyers or peryllous an ennemy to a man, as is his wyfe. And thoughe a manne can not lyue with her as a man, I neuer sawe none so lyghte, beinge with a vicious woman, in doinge vice, but that by
 1845 the same woman at the laste he receyued shame and chastisement. Of one thyng I am sure, and I saye it not because I haue seene it, but experimented in my selfe, that though the husbände do all that his wyfe wylle, yet wylle she do nothyng that her husband wold haue done. Great
 1850 crueltie is amonge the barbariēs to holde their wyues as sclauens: And no lesse madnes is it of Romaines, to kepe them as ladies. Flefhe ought not to be so leane, that hit abhorre: nor so fatte that it cloye the stomacke: but mene and enterlarded, to the ende that hit be sauourye. I saye
 1855 that a wyfe manne canne not gyue so stronge a brydell to his wyfe, that she wylle obeye as a handemayden, nor gyue her so lyttell of the brydell, but she wylle exalte herselfe as maystresse and reuler. Beholde Faustyne howe
 ye

(*f.33)*ye womenne are so extreme in all heedlonge extremities, that with a lyttell fauour ye wylle exalte, augment, and ¹⁸⁶⁰ growe in to great pride: and with a lyttell disfauour, ye recouer great hatred. There is no parfite loue, where is no egalitie betwene the louers. And as ye and other are vnperfite, so is your loue vnperfite. I wote well ye vnderstonde me not. Therefore vnderstonde Fauistine that ¹⁸⁶⁵ I say more than ye wene. There is no woman, that with her wille wolde suffre any greater than her selfe: nor to be content to haue an other egall with her. For thoughe she haue a. M. li. rent, yeth she hath .x. M. folyes in her heed. And that worse is, though it chaunce her husbände ¹⁸⁷⁰ to dye, and she lese all her rent, yet endeth not her folyshenes. Herken to me, and I shall tell you more. All women wolde speake, and haue all other to be styll: they wolde gouerne and be gouerned of none other. One thyng they desire, that is to see, and to be sene. And such as be lyght ¹⁸⁷⁵ in folowyng their lyghtnes, they holde as their subiectes and sclauers: and suche as be wyse, and reprove their appetites, they pursue as enmies. In the annales Pompeyens I haue founde a thyng worthy for to be knowen, and that is: Whan Gnee Pompeie passed into the Orient ¹⁸⁸⁰ on the mountaynes Rifees he founde a maner of people called Mafagetes, whiche had a lawe, that euery inhabitant or dweller shuld haue two tonnes or fattes, bicause there was lacke of howses in the laide mountaynes: In one was the husbände, the sonnes and men seruauntes: ¹⁸⁸⁵ and in the other the wyfe the daughters and maydens. On the holy dayes they dyd eate to gyther, and ones in the weke they lay togyther. Whan great Pompeye had questioned the cause of their lyuyng in that maner, for that he neuer sawe nor knewe a more extreme thyng in ¹⁸⁹⁰ all the worlde. One of them answered: Pompey behold, the

K.

(*f. 33^b) *the goddis haue gyuen vs but a short lyfe, for none of vs may lyue aboue .lx. yere at the moſte, and thoſe yeres we trauayle to lyue in peace. And in hauyng our wyues with
 1895 vs ſtyll in companye, we ſhulde lyue euer dyenge: for we ſhulde paſſe the nyghtes in herynge their complayntes: and the dayes in ſuffryng their brawlynges 7 chydinges. In kepynge them this wiſe from vs apart, they nourifhe theyr chyldren more peaſibly, eſchewyng the noyſes that
 1900 fleeth the fathers.

¶ I tell the Fauſtine, that though we cal the Malagetes barbariens, in this caſe they be wiſer than the Romainys. One thinge I wyll tell you Fauſtin, 7 I pray you marke it wel. If the beaſtly mouyng of the fleſſhe enforced not
 1905 the wyll of man to do his luſte, and that he wolde not deſire women, I doubte whether women wolde ſuffre it or loue it the leſſe. Of trouth yf the goddis hadde made this loue voluntarie, as it is naturall that is as we wolde we myght, and not as we wold and may not, with great payn
 1910 a man myght be ſatiſfied, though he ſhulde loſe him ſelfe for any woman. It is a great ſecrete of the goddis, and a great myſerie to man, that the faynt and weke fleſhe doth force the herte whiche ſhulde be free, to loue that it abhorreth, and to alowe that that domageth. This is a greatte
 1915 ſecrete, that men can fele it euery houre as men: and yet by diſcretion may not remedy it. I enuie not the lyuinge goddes, nor the men that be deed, but for two thynges, and they ben theſe: The goddis lyue without feare of thē that be malicious, and they that be deed are in peace with
 1920 out nede of women. The ayre is ſo corrupt, that it corrup-
 teth euery man with two peſtilent plagues ſo deadely that the fleſhe and the herte endeth. O Fauſtine, is the loue of the fleſhe ſo natural that whā the fleſhe fleeth ſcornfully, that we ſhulde leue the true hart as captiue? And the reſon

as

(*f.34)*as reason put her to flyght, the fleffhe as flefhe forthwith ¹⁹²⁵
yeldeth her to you as ouercome.

¶ The emperour reherfeth the perilles of them that
haunt women exceffiuey. Cap. xx.



Hemperour folowinge his purpofe declareth
the vniuerfall damages, that come to man by
ouermoch conuerfation and hauntinge of
women. And after he had tolde fome particu- ¹⁹³⁰
lar cafes that he had fuffred with Fauftin his
wyfe, he fayd: I am wel remēbred, that in my yonge age I
folowed the flefhe to moch, with purpofe neuer to return:
And therefore I cōfesse, y if I had good defires in one day,
in ftede therof a. M. days I wrought yll. It is reason y ¹⁹³⁵
ye women fle from them that flee from you, to hyde you
from them that hyde them fro you: to leue them that leue
you: to feperate [sic] you fro them, that feperate them fro you:
to forgette them that forget you. For fome fcape fro your
handes yl famed and effeminate: and other are hurt with ¹⁹⁴⁰
your tonges, many ben perfecuted with your werkes, and
the better to fcape free, they come away abhorred of your
hartes and bounde to your lyghtneffes. Than who that
feleth this, what getteth he by the atteynyng therof? O
to howe many perylles offereth he hym felfe, that with ¹⁹⁴⁵
women is greatly conuerfant? If a man loue theym not,
they count hym as a villeyne: yf he loue them, they think
hym lyghte: if he leaue theym, they repute hym for a co-
warde: if he folowe them, he is loft: yf he ferue them, he
is not regarded: yf he ferue theym not, he is hated of ¹⁹⁵⁰
theym: yf he wylle haue theym, they wyl nat haue him:
yf he defyre theym not, they wylle feeke on hym: yf he
haunt theym, he is ylle named: yf he haunt theym not,
they

I. ii.

(*f. 34^b) *they reckon hym no man. What shall the vnhappy man
 1955 do? Let men take this for certayne, that though the huf-
 bande do for his wyfe al that he can do as a mǎ, and that
 he ought to do as a hufbande, and with his weakenes
 do the best that he can, for to fynd remedy agaynst pouer-
 tie with his trauayle, and putte hym selfe in daunger for
 1960 her euery houre, all this shal not plese his wyfe, nor make
 her the better: but she wyll say, that the traytre loueth o-
 ther: and that all that he dothe, is onely to accomplysse
 his pleasure on them. Many dayes ago Faustin I haue
 wylled to tell the this, but I haue differred it tyll now, ho
 1965 pynges that thou woldest gyue me occasion to telle it the:
 the whiche longe ago thou haste caused me to feele. It is
 no poynt of wyle men, that for euerye tyme they are an-
 noyed with their wyues, forthewith to hurte theym with
 wordes. For amonge wise men the saide wordes are most
 1970 esteemed when they are well appropriated and sayd to good
 purpose. I do bethynke me, that it is .vi. yere sith Antho-
 ny pie thy father did chuse me to be his sonne in lawe, and
 thou me to be thy hufbande, and I the for my wyfe: this
 my fatall destenie dyd permytte, at the commaundement
 1975 of Adrian my lorde. My father in law gaue the his faire
 doughter to me for wyfe, and the very sadde and ponde-
 rous empire in maryage. I trowe we were all begyled:
 He to take me for his sonne, and I to chuse the for my
 wife. He was named Anthonie Pius, bycause he was pi-
 1980 tiefull in al thynges, saue vnto me, to whom he was cru-
 ell, for in a lyttell flesshe he gaue me many bones: and, to
 say the trouthe, I haue no tethe to gnawe it, nor no heate
 in my stomacke to digeste hit: and many tymes I haue
 thought my selfe losse with it. For thy beautie thou were
 1985 desyred of many, but for thyne yll conditions thou were
 abhorred of al. O howe vnhappy ben thy destenies Fau-
 styne,

(*f. 35) *ftyn, and howe yl haue the goddis prouided for the. They haue gyuen the beautie, and rycheffe for to vndo the: And they haue denied and refused to the the beste, that is good condicions, qualitie, and wysedome to maynteyne them. ¹⁹⁹⁰ I say to the agayne, that the goddis haue ben very cruell to the, lyth they adressed the to the whirlepole, where as all yll folke peryshe, and haue taken from the, the sayles and oores, wherby all good folke escape. The .xxxviii. yeres, that I was without wyfe, semed not to me .xxxviii. ¹⁹⁹⁵ dayes: and the .vi. yeres that I haue bene married, seme to me .vi. hundred yeres. I wyl assure the one thyng, that if I had knowen before, that I knowe now, and had felt than that I fele at this houre, I wold say an other thing: and though the goddis wolde commande me, and Adrian ²⁰⁰⁰ my mayster wolde commaunde me, I wolde not chaunge my pouertie and quietnes, for the mariage of the 7 thempire. But I haue desired the in .thy good fortune, and my selfe to myn yll fortune. I haue sayde but a lyttelle, and haue suffred a greate deale, I haue fayned a great while, ²⁰⁰⁵ but I can fayne no longer. No man suffreth his wyfe so moche, but he is bounde to suffre more. Let a man, that is a man confider, and lyke wise a woman that is a woman confyder, what boldenes she is of that quarelleth with her husbände, and that he is a foole that brawleth openly ²⁰¹⁰ with his wife. For if she be good, he oughte to fauour her that she may be the better: yf she be a shrewe, he must suffre her, that she waxe not wors. Euery man knoweth, that all thyngis suffereth chastisement saue a woman, whiche (as a woman) wyl be desired and prayed. Faustine beleue ²⁰¹⁵ me, yf feare of the goddis, the shame of her persone, and speche of the people withdrawe not a woman from euyll, all the chastisement of the worlde wyll not ouercome her. The harte of man is very noble, and the harte of a woman

K. iii.

(*f. 35^b) 2020 *man is deyntie, and wyll haue great hyre for a lyttel good
 nes, and for moche euyll no chaftifement. A wife man wil
 knowe what he hath to do or he marie. Than if he deter-
 myne hym to take the company of a wife, he ought to en-
 large his harte to receyue all that may come with her. It
 2025 is but a small wytte in a man to sette by the smalle fanta-
 lies of his wyfe, or for to chaftise openly that may be righ-
 ted betwene them secretly. He that is wise and wyll lyue
 quietly with his wife, ought to kepe this rule: Admonishe
 her often, and reprove her but seldom, and lay no handis
 2030 on her. For by other meanes he getteth no fidelitie in her,
 nor good entreatynge of her, nor good bryngynge vp of
 their chyldren, nor seruice to the goddis, nor any hope of
 proufite of her. And thus Faustine I wyll say no more to
 the, but that thou confider, that I do confider, and know
 2035 that I do se, and that my suffrance vnknownen to the, may
 suffyse to amende thy lyfe.

¶ The emperours answere to Faustine for that she
 sayde, she was with chylde. Cap. xxi.

2040 **N**owe that I haue openid and put out the olde
 venym, I wyll answere to thy present questiō
 or demaunde. To thentent that medicins may
 profite them that be lyke, it is necessarie to di-
 spoyle the opilations 7 lettes of the stomake:
 Lyke wyfe none can counsayle his frende conuenientely,
 but if he shewe first his grefe. Thou demaundest of me
 the key of my study, and thou thretenest me, that yf I giue
 2045 it the not, thou shalte be losse, and hurte with thy fruyte.
 ye women with chylde haue a good hostage or pledge, for
 vnder colour of trauaylynge before your tyme, ye wolde
 haue vs fulfyllle all your fonde appetytes. Whanne the
 holy

(*f.36)*holy senate in that happy tyme made a lawe in fauour of Romaine matrones, they were not so desirous. Nowe I ²⁰⁵⁰ wote not howe it is, but ye all are anoyed and wery of all goodnes. And all ye in all yll are desyrous and couetous. As farre as I can remembre, whanne Camylle made his vowe to Cybille the mother of goddis, to send hym victorie in a battayle, whan he had wonne the victorie, Rome ²⁰⁵⁵ was so poore that it hadde neyther golde nor syluer for to make the statue of promesse, the matrones than being, seeing that theyr husbandes dyd offre their lyues in the said warre, they granted to present their iewels to the holy senate. It was a meruayllous thyng to see, that withoute ²⁰⁶⁰ any speakyng to them, or without any mans entysenment they determyned all to gither to go to the hye capitol, and there in the presence of euery man presented their owches hanginge at their eares, The ringes of their fingers, the bracelettes of their armes, the perles fro their attires of ²⁰⁶⁵ their heades, the collers from their neckes, The broches of their brestes, the girdelles aboute their middels, and borders of their gownes. And though that their gift was esteemed to a great value, yet their good wylls was esteemed a great deale more. The rycheffes that they offered ²⁰⁷⁰ there was so greatte, that not allonely there was inough to perfourme the vowe of the statue, but to pursewe the warre. And as than the custome of Rome was, y none dyd them any plesure, but he was shortly recōpenced: the same day that the matrons dyd offre their ryche and fayre iewelles in the Capitolle, there was graunted unto theym ²⁰⁷⁵ fyue maner of thynges in the Senate: The fyrste, that at their deathes the oratours shulde preche, publyshe and shewe their good liuinge: The seconde that they shulde sit in the temple, where as before they were wont to stand: ²⁰⁸⁰ The thirde, that they shuld were furred 7 lyned gownes, where

(*f. 36^b) *where as before they ware none but syngle: The .iiii. that in their difeses they myght drinke wyne, where as before on their lyues they durst drinke none, but water: The .v. that the matrones of Rome great with chylde, shulde not be refused of any thyng that they desyred. These fyue thynges for certayne were iustly and wyllingly graunted by the senate: And why this lawe that commaundeth to denaye nothyng to a woman with chylde was made, I wyl tell the the occasion that moued the senate so to do. Fuluius Torquate beinge confull in the warre againste the Uolseos [sic], the knyghtes of Mauritayne broughte to Rome a wylde man, that had but one eye, that they hadde taken in huntynge in the desertes of Egypt. And the matrones of Rome were at that tyme as sad and honeste, as they be nowe bolde and lyght: so was the wyfe of the said Torquate, that was nygh the tyme of her delyueraunce great with chylde, of trouth a woman so honeste, that for the sobre solytarynes that she kepte in Rome, she hadde no lesse glorye than hadde her husbände in the warres for his worthynes, the whiche was welle proued. For in the .xiiii. yere that Torquate her husbände was in Asye a warre fare, the fyrste tyme that he went thyder, she was neuer sene at the wyndowe lokynge out, and she was not all onely regarded for that, but in all the sayde .xiiii. yeres neuer manchylde nor man aboue the age of .viii. yeres came within her gates. And not content with this, that she dyd to gyue example to all Rome, and to attayne perpetuall memorie, where as she had lefte with her thre sonnes, the eldest of whom was but thre yeres of age: and as soone as they came to .viii. yere, she sente them out of her house to their grauntefathers. And thus dydde this excellent Romaine lady, to the entent that vnder colour of her owne chyl dren there shulde none other yonge chyl dren enter

(*f.37)*entre into her howse. Those yeres passed, after that the ²¹¹⁵
 good olde man Torquate was retourned fro the warres
 of the Uolseos, the sayde wylde man with one eye wente
 by the doore of the saide Torquate, and one of her may-
 dens tolde her, that it was a meruaylous thyng to se: and
 the good lady hadde great desyre to see hym, and bycause ²¹²⁰
 there was none to bringe hym to her, that she myghte see
 hym, she dyed for sorowe. And for certayne thoughe he
 came often inough by her doore, yet she wolde neuer goo
 nor loke out at her wyndowe to se hym. Her deathe was
 gretly bewayled in Rome, for she was in Rome most dere- ²¹²⁵
 ly beloued, and good reason: for many dayes afore was
 no suche woman brought vp in Rome. And by the com-
 maundement of the senate, the tenour of this writing in
 verles were set vpon her sepulchre,

¶ Here lyeth the glorious matron wife of Torquate, that ²¹³⁰
 wolde aduenture her lyfe to assure her good fame.

¶ Beholde Faustine, this lawe was not made to remedy
 the dethe of this matrone, but to the ende that to such as
 ye be, and to all the worlde it shulde be a perpetual exam-
 ple of her lyfe and memorie of her deathe. It was welle ²¹³⁵
 done to ordeine that law for an honest woman being with
 chylde, that it shuld be kepte to all vertuous women. And
 vnto women that wold, that the law of them that be with
 chylde shulde be kept, by the same lawe it is requisite to
 require that they be honest. In the .vii. table of our lawe ²¹⁴⁰
 it is sayde: we commaunde, that where there is corruption
 of customes, there lyberties shal not be kepte.

¶ Howe tydynges was brought to the emperour,
 that the Mauritaynes wolde conquere
 greatte Britayne. Cap. xxii.

In

L

(*f. 37^b) * **I**N the .liiii. yere of Marcus the emperours
 aege, and the tenthe yere of his election to
 2145 thempire, In the month of July as he was
 in the citie of Naples, and not in verye per-
 fite helthe, for he was loore payned with the
 gowte in his foote: there came a Centurion in maner of
 a meffager with great haft laying, that in great Britayn
 2150 was fodaynly arryued a great nauie of warre, to the nō-
 bre of .C. 7 .xxx. fhyps of the realme of Maurитайn, and the
 quantitie of .xx. M. men on foote, and .ii. M. men of ar-
 mes: and that the kyng of Maurитайns brother was their
 capitayne, named Afclipio, the whiche had taken lande
 2155 at a hauen of the yle called Arpine, and that, to refyfte fo
 great a power, there were but a fewe people in the layde
 yle. The good emperour herynge thefe tidynges, though
 he felte it inwardely as a man, yet he feyned it outwardly
 as a dylcrete man with a fadde countenance and made
 2160 fewe wordes. Than feinge that bufines myght not be de-
 layed, he fayde thefe wordes: I wyll go with a fewe peo-
 ple, and do what I can. For better it were with a fewe to
 go betymes, than to tary for many and goo to late. And
 forthwith the good emperour pourueyed that all they of
 2165 his palays fhulde departe to go to Brytayne, and none to
 tarie behynde to do hym feruyce. The custome was that
 the emperours fhulde haue alwaye in theyr houfes fuche
 men as were mete to be fent forthe in any befynesses that
 fhulde happen for warre. And after that they were fhyp-
 2170 ped, there ariued one of Britayne, that fhewed, howe the
 Maurитайns were retourned, fo that none of them was
 lefte in the ile. Than this emperour kepte his houle in a
 good poynt. Lyttell occafion fuffifeth to them that be na-
 turally of yll inclinations, to departe and fprede through
 2175 countreys to do harme: therefore he fent them of his hous
 to

(*f.38)*the entent, that by occasyon of the warre, they shulde not leade an yll lyfe. Than the emperour fearing the diffolution of his courte, and boldenes of his officers, to the intent they shulde not leaue vertue and growe in vice, he determyned on a day to call them to hym secretly, and to say ²¹⁸⁰ these wordes to them.

¶ What themperour sayd to them of his courte in eschewynge ydelnesse. Cap. xxiii.



He greattest sygne in a vertuous man is to do vertuous werkes, and vertuously to spēd and occupie his tyme: and the greattest signe of a losse man is to lese his tyme in naughty ²¹⁸⁵ warkes. The greattest happe of all, and the greattest desire of men is to lyue longe. For diuers chances that falle in short tyme may be suffered and remedied by longe space. Plato sayd: A man that passeth his lyfe without profite, as one vnworthy to liue, oughte to haue ²¹⁹⁰ the reste of his lyfe taken fro hym. The fylthe of secrete chambres, the stynche of the pompe in shyppes, nor the ordures of cities do not corrupt the ayre so moche, as ydell folke do the people. And as there is in a man, that occupieth his time well, no vertue but it encrease, so in hym, ²¹⁹⁵ that occupieth his tyme ylle, there is no vilanie but it is suspecte in hym. A manne that is alwaye well occupied, ought euer to be reputed as good: and the ydel man without further enquerie, ought to be cōdempned as nought. Shewe me now, I desyre you, what nouryssheth the ²²⁰⁰ corrupte and fowle wieses, the nettelles that styng, and the bryers that prycke, but the erthe that is vntilled, and waxen wyld, and the felde fulle of thyistles, whyche is not wyded, and vilyted with the plowghe?

O Rome

L. ii.

(*f. 38^b) 2205 *O Rome without Rome, that nowe as vnhappy hast but
 onely the name of Rome, bycause thou art so dere in ver-
 tues, and makest vices good cheape. yea yea, and I shall
 tell the, knowest thou wherfore thou art so? bycause thou
 hast vnpeopled the lanes and stretes of werkemen and
 2210 offycers, and hast peopled it all aboute with infinite va-
 cabundes. I knowe for trouthe, that the Samytes, Uo-
 figoths, Astrogoths, and Peniens spredde in your terry-
 tories, do you not so moche damage as do these ydell and
 losse people stuffed in euery shoppe. All writers can not
 2215 denie me, that all nations wyllynge to conquere Rome,
 can not take away one loope of the walles of it: and these
 ydell people haue troden and pulled vnder their fete the
 good renowme of it. An infallible rule it is: a man giuē
 to exercyses is vertuous, and one gyuen to lewtrynges is
 2220 a vicious person. What a diuine thyng was it to se the di-
 uine worldes of our predeceffours, the whiche fyth Tul-
 lius Hostillius vnto Quintus Cincinnatus dictatour, and
 fith Cincinnatus vnto Cyncinos, whiche were of the Syl-
 lans and Marians, there was neuer consulle at Rome,
 2225 but he coude do some maner of office or occupation, wher
 with they were occupied whan theyr office in the Senate
 was ended. Some coude paynte pictures or other flatte
 workes: Other coude graue images and portry in wood
 or erthe, or other thynges, or coude worke in syluer, and
 2230 other metalles: and other redde in scholes: In such wise
 that the holy senate myght chuse none, but yf he were first
 knowen in some maner handy craft. I do fynde in the an-
 nales all that is aboue sayde: and if I lye I do gyue me
 to the flames of Uulcan. And there was an ancient lawe
 2235 that a myller, a smyth, a baker, or a poynt maker, myght
 not be a Senatour, bycause men of the sayd occupations
 were commonly taken with deceytes and gyles. Than re-
 garde

(*f. 39) *garde the maner and chaunge of tyme, and the corruptiō of cultomes, how that in .CCC. yeres euery man trauayled for the renowme of Rome. Other thynges I fynde in ²²⁴⁰ the layde annales worthy of eterne memorie: yet of the moſte auncientes can not be red, the people of Rome hauynge .iiii. perillous warres to gyther, yonge Scipio ageynſt the Peniens, Mucio agaynſt the Cayens, Metellus ageynſte Alexander of Macedonie, and an other Me- ²²⁴⁵ tellus his brother ageynſt the Celtiberes of Spayne: the lawe beinge ſo ſore kepte, that none ſhulde be taken from the myſterie and office that he occupied, 7 the ſenatours hauynge extreme neceſſitie of meſſangers to ſende to the warres, whan the ſenatours had gone thre dayes aboute ²²⁵⁰ with the cenſures of Rome, that they coude fynde one ydell man to be ſente forth with their letters. I wepe for ioye, that I haue of this antyke felicitie, and I mourne for compaſſion of the myſerie nowe beinge. It is a confuſion to ſay, but I wyll ſay it. Twenty yeres I had offyce ²²⁵⁵ in the ſenate, and it is .x. yeres ſyth I haue ruled the empire, whiche is .xxx. in all, In the whiche ſeaſon I ſwere by the goddis immortal, I haue cauſed to whyppe, caſte in welles, to bury quicke, to hange, to pricke, and to banyſhe mo than .xxx. M. vacabundes, and .x. M. ydel wo- ²²⁶⁰ men. Than what difference is ther betwene that lyfe and this deathe, that glory and this payne, of that golde and this ordure, of that antike Roman werke to our preſente inuentife ydelnes of Rome.

¶ In the lawes of the Lacedemoniens this was writen ²²⁶⁵ in the table of the ydell people: We commaunde as kyn- ges, we praye as ſeruantes, we teache as philoſophers, and admonyſhe as fathers, that the fathers ſhal firſt teche their chyldren to labour the feldeſ, wherwith by trauayle they may lyue, and not in places, where as by ydelneſſe ²²⁷⁰ they

L. iii.

(*f. 39^b) *they may be loft. And that law sayth ferthermore: If that yonge people obey not as yonge, we wylle that the aged people do correcte and punyſhe them as aged. And in caſe that the fathers be neglygent to commande them, or that
 2275 they be diſobedient: we commaunde the prince than to be diligent to chaſtiſe them.

¶ Certainly theſe wordes are worthy to be noted: wherby Lygurge the kynge deſerued eternall memorie for his perſone, and the ſayde realme perpetuall peafe in the cō-
 2280 mon welthe. O Rome, what doſte thou? Why regardeſt thou not theſe lawes of the Lacedemoniens, whiche with their frendely cuſtomes, dothe mocke thy brutall vyces? Slepeſt or wakeſt? O Rome thou wakeſt all the worlde to leaue ſwete trauayles, and ſlepeſt in vniuſt ydelneſſes.
 2285 Thou arte ſure of ennemies, and thou careles art drow- ned in flouth and ydelneſ. Than ſyth that they that bene ferre of, do waken the, thou oughteſt to awaken thē that thou kepeſt with the. I wolde ſpeake to all them to gyder of my palays, and longe agon I wylled ſo to do, but the
 2290 multitude of ſtraunge beſyneſſes ſomtyme cauſeth a mā to forgette his owne.

¶ Of the peryllous lyuyng of them that haunt the courte continually. Cap. xxiiii.

Han the emperour ioined theſe wordis to that he had ſayde. Many thynges I haue ſene, 7
 2295 of credible perſones I haue harde, which me ſemed to be yll, and none of them good. Spe- cially one, whiche offendeth the goddis, ſclan dreth the world, peruerteth the common welth, and endo- mageth the perſon ſelfe: whiche is this curſed flouth and ydelneſ that diſtroyeth them that be good, 7 vtterly brin- geth

(*f. 40) *geth to naught them that be yll. Somtime secretly, and ²³⁰⁰
 halfe as in sporte openly I haue admonysshed 7 rebuked
 some of you, but I se it proufite none of you. On one side
 the pricke of reson constrayneth me to chaſtise you: ageyn
 confideringe the malice of mankynde, all though that it
 be prompte to yll, sometyme I am determyned to suffre ²³⁰⁵
 you. Many tymes I wold with furie chaſtise you as chil-
 dren, but I do refreyne it, confideringe that ye are yonge,
 7 as yet knowe not the wiles of the world: for they holde
 so styffely together the yll with the yll, and amonge them
 make so great a leage of vices with the vices, that there ²³¹⁰
 be many that do by gyle suffre theym to be begyled, that
 whan we escape fro a lyttel wyle, and knowe the begyler,
 we thynke that we are begyled all redy with other great
 wyles. I haue meruaylous great compaſſion of you my
 seruantes, ſpeakynge to you as a lorde: and to you my ²³¹⁵
 chyldren ſpeakynge as a father, for to se you al the day and
 nyght wandrynge through Rome as loſte perſones: and
 that worſte of all is, I perceyue that ye do not perceyue
 your owne perdition. What greater beaſtlynnes can there
 be, than to se you wander lyke ſoles from howſe to houſe, ²³²⁰
 fro tauerne to tauerne, from one gaſinge to an other, fro
 ſtrete to ſtrete, fro place to place, fro play to play, fro re-
 uellers to reuellers? And that more is, that ye know not,
 what ye deſire, nor what ye wold, where ye go, nor whens
 ye comme, what pleaſeth you, or what diſpleaſeth you: ²³²⁵
 What is proufytable or loſſe vnto you. Nor ye remem-
 bre not, that ye were borne reaſonable menne, and that ye
 lyue as wylde folke amonge menne, and after ſhall dye
 as brute beaſtes. Fro whens wene ye that this cometh?
 The cauſe is the deſyre of beaſtely mouinges, not reſi- ²³³⁰
 ſtinge the deſyres of the luſte of youthe, and aboue all
 not applienge your mindes and willes to be wel ocupied.
 Take

(*f. 40^b) *Take hede amonge you of my courte, and forgette not
 this. Haue ye no thought but to seke newe passe tymes 7
 2335 to borow euery daye. No man, of what condicion so euer
 he be, except he haunt feates of armes, or other lernynge
 in some ordinarie exercyse, shall haue his body lustye and
 his spirite quicke: but shalbe acloyed in al other thyngis
 and wander frome strete to strete, as a vacabounde. The
 2340 harte of man is noble, and hath power continually for
 all actes, and all pastymes of the bodye: and yet in three
 dayes it is annoyed of hym selfe alone, so that with hym
 can not rest one laudable exercyse. Lyke as I am emperor
 of all the worlde, so it is reason and muste nedes be, that
 2345 I haue folke of all nations in my palays. And suche as
 the prince is, suche shalbe his householde, 7 as his house
 is, so shall his courte be, 7 as the courte is, so shal the hole
 empire be. For this cause a kynge oughte to be ryght ho-
 nest: His house well ordered and ruled, his offycers well
 2350 lerned, and his courte well kept in awe. Of my good lyfe
 dependeth their good lyues, and consequētly the yl lyues.
 Euery nation lerneth in their particular scoles, The Sy-
 riens in Babylon: the Persians in Dorkes: the Indians
 in Olympe: the Caldees in Thebes: the Grekes in Athe-
 2355 nes: the Hebrewes in Helye: the Latyns in Samie: the
 Frenche men in Orlyance: the Spaniardes in Gades: 7
 they all to gether in Rome. The vniuerfall scole of al the
 worlde is the persone, the howse, and courte of a prince.
 As we emperours do say, the same wyl our subiectes say:
 2360 as we do, they wyl do: that we forsake, they wyl leaue:
 yf we lese our selves, they wyl lose them selves: if we wyn
 they wyl winne: and finally our welth is theyr welth, and
 our harme is their harme. Truely the prince is bounde to
 kepe his owne persone honestly and well besene, his hous
 2365 and courte so well ruled, that all they that shall se it, may
 haue

(*f.41)*haue defire to folowe and do therafter: and that all they that here therof may defire to fe it. Take ye hede, and let vs take hede: Haue ye in minde, and let vs haue in mind, that they which be of ſtrāge londes, going through ſtrāge londes into ſtraunge londes, by their great trauayles cō-²³⁷⁰ mynge to haue and demaunde ſuccour and remedy of vs, may haue no cauſe to report any ſclanders of our yl cuſtomes. What thyng more monſtruous can be noyſed amōge men, then that they ſhulde come and complayn of the theues of theyr countreis to the theues of my courte? what²³⁷⁵ greater ſhame and inconuenience can be, then to demand Juſtice of their manfleers, of the mankyllers of my court and houſe? what crueltie were ſo cruell as to complayne of the vagabundes of their londes, to the flouthfull and ydell folke of my houſe? What thyng can be more ſhame-²³⁸⁰ full, than to come to accuſe them that haue ſayde ylle of emperors, before them that euery day blaſpheme the goddis? What thyng can be more inhumaine, than to come to aſke Juſtice on him that hath tranſgreſſid but ones, of them that neuer dyd good werkes? Truly in ſuche caſe²³⁸⁵ the poore men ſhulde retourne with their ignorance begiled, and we ſhulde tarie with our cruell malyce ſhamed of men, and culpable before god. O howe many ſmall matters do we chaſtiſe in men of ſmal reputation, which without breakynge of Juſtice we myght forbear? and howe²³⁹⁰ many great thinges do the goddis ſuffre in the hie pryncis and lordes, the whiche, not without Juſtice they may greuouſly puniſhe? And by that cruell men as cruell, can pardon nothyng: and the goddis pytefull ſcantely wyll chaſtyſe any thinge. yet for all this, I wolde that none²³⁹⁵ ſhulde deceyue him ſelfe: for though the goddis forbear their iniuries, yet they leaue theym not vnpuniſſhed by ſtraunge Juſtice. The goddis ben in their chaſtiſementis
as

M

(*f. 41^b) *as he that gyueth a blowe to an other, the hyer that he lif-
 2400 teth his hande, the greater is the stroke on the cheke. By
 semblable wise the mo yeres that they forbere our lynnys,
 the more afterwarde do they hurt vs with peynes. True-
 ly I haue seene the goddis dyuers tymes to dyuers per-
 sones forbear diuers lynnys a greatte whyle: but at the
 2405 laste I haue sene theym all vnwares chaftyed with one
 chaftisement.

¶ Howe the emperour wolde haue them of his
 courte to lyue. Capit. xxv.

Sithe that the goddis haue ordeyned, and my
 fatall destenies haue permytted, that I shuld
 be chofen emperour (not to slouthfull) I haue
 2410 laboured all that I myghte, to visite the em-
 pire, ye lyttell yonge folkes that are here, were gyuen to
 me of your fathers, for to nouryshe you in my palayes.
 And for you that ar bygger I was desyred to receyue you,
 in hope to haue giftes and rewardes: and other I dydde
 2415 chuse to do me seruice. The intencion of the fathers, whā
 they bringe their chyldren to the court of princis, is to put
 them from dalyance of their frendes, and banyshe them
 from the wantonnes of their mothers. And me semeth it
 is well done, for the chyldren fro their youthe oughte to
 2420 gyue them selfe to trauayle, wherby they oughte to lyue,
 and resiste the diffauour and falles of fortune. ye are not
 come fro your countreies to lerne the vices of Rome, but
 to lerne many good maners that are in Rome, and leaue
 the yll maners of your landes. All that doo not this, and
 2425 forsake trauayle, gyue them selfe to do very idelnes. The
 miserable Rome hathe more nede of labourers for to la-
 bour, than of lordes and habytauntes Patriciens, that
 wyl

(*f.42)*wyll but paffe the tyme in rest and pleasures. I sweare to you, that not for wering the armes with the craft of weaving, and the fyngers with spinnyng, the bordel howles²⁴³⁰ nowe adays are fuller of ydell women, than the churches of good priestes. And I swere againe, that eafilyer maye be founde .x. M. yll women in Rome to serue in pleasure of vices, than .x. M. good men to serue in the churches. I pray you who fleeth the marchantes in hye ways? Who²⁴³⁵ dispoyleth wayfaringe men and pilgrimes on the mountaynes? Who piketh the lockes and breketh honest mens dores and wyndowes? Who robbe by strengthe the churches? but these lewtrynge theues, whiche wyl not labour by day, but dispoise them to rob by nyght. O Rome, what²⁴⁴⁰ harmes come to the for one onely euyl? Who hath fylled Italy. so full of losse people, the palays so full of vnable perfones, the mountayns so full of theues, the tauernes so full of yll womē, and euery place so ful of vacabundes? but one, the canker of ydelnes and flouth, whiche destro-²⁴⁴⁵ yeth the good customes more than the wyndes and waters thyn olde worne walles. Beleue me one thyng, for I wote that I say truthe therin, that the crafte of weauing, wherin al the naughty vilanies are wouen and wrought, and the fede of all vnhappye vices, the flydyng of all²⁴⁵⁰ goodnesse, the fallynge of all theym that be ylle, and the awakyng and prouokynge of all these, is but this fowle vice of flouth and ydelnesse. And more ouer I saye, that there is no vyce amonge all vices, that bredeth so greatte a fyre, and causeth so continuall a sickenes of slepe a-²⁴⁵⁵ monge aged folke, and that putteth good falke [sic] in soo greatt perylle, and dothe so moche damage to theym that be ylle, as dothe ydelnesse. Who is it that causeth sedyti- on amonge the people, and sclander in realmes, but they that reste and do nothyng: bycause they wolde eate the²⁴⁶⁰ foode

M. ii.

(*f. 42^b) *foode gotten by sweate of them that labour? who is it that fyndeth newe inuentions of tributes and forayne exactions, but ydell men, the which bycause they wyll not work with their handes, finde profite with infinite exactions? 2465 who maketh discētion betwene neighbours but idel folk? they diuide their ylle amonge their neighbours, bicause they occupie not their forces in good werkes, nor refreine their tongues to clatter of other mens liues. who imagineth in these dais so many malices in Rome, the whiche 2470 was neuer harde of our fathers, nor redde in our bokes: but vacabundes that neyther applie nor sette their wittes about nothings els, but thinke howe to endamage other? The emperour that coude banishe al these idell perfonas out of his empire, might wel auant him selfe to haue oppressed al the vices of the worlde. I wolde it pleased the 2475 immortal goddis, that of so many triumphis that I haue hadde of straungers occupied in good exercyses, that I hadde sene one of the vacabundes of Rome driuen out of all houses. There was an auncient lawe, none myght be 2480 taken and receiued for a citelen in Rome, but he were first examined by the Censure. In the time of Cato Cenforius whan any wolde be a citelen of Rome, this examination was made of him: He was not demaunded of whens he was, nor what he was, nor whens he came, nor wherfore 2485 he came, nor of what kinne or auncient stocke he cam, but onely they toke his handes betwene theirs, and if they felt them softe and smothe, forthewith as an idell vacabunde man they dispatched and sent him away: and if they found his handes harde, and ful of hard knottis, by and by they 2490 admitted him a citezen and dweller of Rome. Also whan any officers toke any yll doer, and put them in prison that was called Marmotine, in stede of information, the first thyng that they toke hede of was their handes, whiche if they

(*f.43)if they had ben as a labourers hande and a worke man,
 though his crime were greuous, yet his chaftilemēt was ²⁴⁹⁵
 mitigate, and more eafye: and if the vnhappye prifoner
 chāced to haue idel handes, for a litell faut he fhuld haue
 fharpe punyfhemēt. It hath ben an old faying: He that
 hathe good handes, muſte nedes haue good cuſtomes. I
 lay, I chaftiled neuer labouringe man, but I was ſorie ²⁵⁰⁰
 for it: nor I neuer cauſed to whyppe a vacabunde but I
 was gladde of it. I wyl tel you more of this Catho Cen-
 forius, whiche was greatly feared. For euen as chyldrē
 in the ſcholes, heringe their maifter commynge in, renne
 to their bokes, So whan Cato went through the ſtretes ²⁵⁰⁵
 of Rome euery body went to their werke. O right happy
 baron, before whom the people feared more to be ydel, thā
 to do yl before many other. Than behold ye at this houre,
 what force vertue hath, and howe valiaunt a vertuous
 man is, ſeinge that all the worlde feared Rome onely for ²⁵¹⁰
 her worthynes in armes: and all Rome feared Cato one-
 ly for his vertues. The aduētures of men are ſo dyuers,
 and the ſuſpect fortune gyueth ſo many ouerthwarte tur-
 nes, that after that a great ſpace ſhe hathe gyuen greatte
 pleaſures, incontinent we are cyted to her ſubtyll trauai- ²⁵¹⁵
 les of repentaunce. O happy Cato Cenſorine, who with
 ſuche as hath folowed his wayes are nowe ſure fro the a-
 batementis of fortune. Than he that wyl haue glorie in
 this lyfe, and attayne glorie after deth, and to be beloued
 of many, and feared of all: Let hym be vertuous in do- ²⁵²⁰
 inge of good workes, and deceyue not with vayne wor-
 des. I do ſweare vnto you by the lawe of a man of wor-
 ſhypp, that yf the goddis wolde accompliſhe my deſyre,
 I had rather to be Cato with the vertuous policies that
 he vſed in Rome, than to be Scipio with the habundance ²⁵²⁵
 of blode, that he ſhedde in Affrike. All we know wel, that
 Scipio

M. iii.

(*f. 43^b) *Scipio hadde a greate fame in beatinge downe of cities,
 and cuttynge innocentes throtes, and Catho hath attay-
 ned eternal memory in reforminge the people, pardoning
 2530 trespaffours, and teachyng ignorant folke. Than ye
 may all se, if I haue not good reason, more to desire to be
 Cato to the profit of many, than to be Scipio to the preiu-
 dyce of so many. Lo my frendes these wordes I haue said
 by cause ye may see, that our predeceffours, some in their
 2535 owne landes, other in strange londes, some being yonge
 and some olde in their tymes had glorie in their persones
 for them selfe: and for the world to come haue left no lesse
 memorie for their successours and offspringe. And we doo
 all the contrarie, I beinge emperour am lothe for to com-
 2540 mande any yll, and our officers for their interest do wors.
 And where as we are sette in diuers pleasures by our vice,
 we fal hourelly into diuers miseries, and are noted to our
 great infamie. By the whiche occasion the iust goddis for
 our vniuste workis, giuinge iuste sentence, commaunde
 2545 that we lyue with suspection, dye with shame, and to be
 buried with forgettefulnes, neuer to be had in memorie.
 Than all you of my courte take good hede, and print wel
 my wordes in your myndes: for who so euer I se or fynde
 ydell from hensforth, I discharge hym out of my seruice.
 2550 ye that be lerned may write and rede: ye that be men of ar-
 mes and knyghtes, exercyse you in fetes of warre: ye that
 be officers, occupie you in your offices. And take this for
 certayne, that yf ye take not this for a warnyng and mo-
 nition, that I haue gyuen you betwene you and me, the
 2555 punyshementes that I shall gyue vnto you shall be open-
 ly. And to the entent that ye haue it better in your memo-
 rie, and to be a doctryne to pryncis hereafter to comme,
 this present practise and remonstrance I haue written in
 all tounes, and set it in the hyghe Capitolle with manye
 other

(*f.44)*other of my wrytinges. The goddis be keepers of you, ²⁵⁶⁰
and also they defende and kepe me from yll fortunes and
myfautures.

¶ Of a meruaylous and fearefulle monfter that
was leene in Scicile, and of his wry-
tynges. Capit. xxvi.

IN the yere of the foundation of Rome
vii. C. xx. and .xlii. of the age of Mar-
cus the emperour, and .ii. yeres before ²⁵⁶⁵
he toke possession of thempire, the .xx.
day of the month Sextilis, which now
is called August, about the tyme of the
sonne setting, In the realme of Sycil,
than called Trinacrie, in a citie called Bellyne on the see ²⁵⁷⁰
now named Palerme, a port of the se, there chāced a thing
right perillous to them that sawe it, and no lesse fearefull
to them that shal here it now. As they of Bellyne or Pa-
lerme were than celebratyng a feaste with great ioy: for
the gladnes that their Pirates had ouercome the army of ²⁵⁷⁵
the Numidiens, and had taken .x. of their ships, and cast
xxxii. persons into the see, bycause at that time they were
ennemies eche to other, and for the euyl workes they dyd,
were shewed the great passions that passed among them.
And as hit is the customme the thinge that these Pirates ²⁵⁸⁰
get on the see, they depart it amonge them all, whan they
come home. And whan they comme to lande, they spende
that merily, that they gatte with greatte trauaylle. It is
a thyng well to be noted, howe all good and ylle hartes
are applyed: The good men haue greatte desyre to their ²⁵⁸⁵
tryumphes, and couetous men to their lucre 7 winninge.
Thus

(*f. 44^b) *Thus men ought to be beloued, though shortly after they oughte to be abhorred. And also they oughte to be abhorred, as though shortly after they oughte to be loued.

2590 Thus than the gouernours of the sayde citie commaunded all the laide shyppes to be sequestred in to theyr owne handes, to the intente that they shoulde not be solde, nor the coueytous people to haue the vantage in the byenge of them. The cause was, for the custome of the men of the
 2595 yles was, that all thynges shulde be kepte to gether, vnto the ende of the warre, or at leaste tyll they had peace. This was a iuste lawe: For many tymes is made stedfaste ap-
 2600 poyntementes bytwene greate enmyes, and not all onely for the aunciente hatred, but also for lacke of rycheffe to
 2605 satisfie the presente damages. Than as all the people were withdrawē in to theyr houses about supper tyme, for it was somer, sodenly there cam a monster in to the myddes of the citie after this shape: He semed to be of two cubites of heyght, and he had but one eye, his heed was all
 2610 pylled so that his scull myght be sene: He had none eares, but that a lyttell of his necke was open, wherby it semed y he herd: He had two croked hornes as a gote: His ryght arme was longer thā the left, his handes were lyke horse fete: he had no throte: his necke was egall with his heed:
 2615 his sholders shone as pytche, his breste and stomake was all roughe of heare, his face was lyke a man, saufe it had but one eye in the myddes of his forehead, and had but one nose-thryll: from the waste downewarde he was not sene, for it was couered: he sate on a chariot with .iiii. wheles,
 2620 wherat was two lyons fastened togyder before, and two beares behinde: and it coude not be determyned, wherof the chariotte was made, but there was no difference in facion therof and other that were vsed commonly: In the myddis of the sayde chariotte was a caudron lyke a table
 with

(*f.45)*with two eares, wherin the layd monfter was: and ther- 2620
fore it was fene but fro the gyrdelſtede vpwarde. He went
about in the citie fro gate to gate a long ſpace caſtyng out
ſpercles of fyre. The feare was ſo great, that dyuers wo-
men with chylde were delyuered with great peryll, and o-
ther that were weake harted fell in a ſwoune: And all the 2625
people great and ſmalle, leſſe and more ranne to the tem-
ples of Jupiter, Mars, and Phebus, makinge importu-
nate cries and clamours. And the ſame ſeaſon al the ſaid
Pyrates were lodged in the gouernours palays named
Solyn. He was of the nation of Capue, and there was 2630
all the richeſſe kepte: and whan this monfter had ben o-
uer all the citie with his chariot, than the lyons and bea-
res brought hym to the palays, where the Pyrates were,
and beinge very nygh to the gates that were faſte cloſed,
the monfter cut an eare of one of the lyons, and with the 2635
bloode therof he wrote theſe letters. R. A. S. P. I. P.
Theſe letters were a profe to all thyem [sic] of high ſpiryte to
giue declaration of them: and there was mo declarations
than there were letters. But finally a woman diuinereſſe,
or contrary, alothfayer [sic], that was had in great reputation 2640
for her craftes, made the very declaration of the ſayd let-
ters, ſaying thus. R, reddite. A, aliena. S, ſi vultis. P,
propria. I, in pace. P, poſſidere. Whiche all to gether
is to ſaye, Render that perteyneth to other, yf ye wylle
in peace poſſeſſe your owne. Surely the Pyrates were 2645
fore affrayed of that dredefull commaundement: and the
womã was greatly praiſed for her high declaration. Thã
fortwith the ſame nyghte the monfter went into a highe
mountayne called as than Janitia, and there by the ſpace
of thre days was in the ſyght of all the citie: and in that 2650
ſeaſon the lyons made great roringe and howlynge, and
the beares and monfter keſte out great fearefull flames.
And

N

(*f. 45^b) *And all that leſon there neyther appered byrde in the aire,
 nor beaſte in the feldeſ, and all the men offred great ſacri-
 2655 fices to the goddiſ, in ſuche wiſe that they brake the vey-
 nes of their handeſ and fete, and offered the blode, to ſe if
 they might appeale their goddiſ. After the thre dayſ paſ-
 ſed, ſodeinly appered a clowde blacke and derke vpon the
 erthe, and it began to thunder and lyghten, with a greate
 2660 erthe quake, ſo that many howſeſ fell in the cite, and ma-
 ny of the dwellers and citeſinſ died. And than ſodeinly
 there came a flame of fyre from the monſter, and brent all
 the palays, where the layd Pyrates were, and the rycheſ-
 ſeſ that were in it, ſo that all was conſumed in it, yea the
 2665 very ſtoneſ: and the damage weſ [ſic] ſo great, that there fell
 mo than .ii. M. houſeſ, And there dyed as good as .x. M.
 perſonſ. And in the ſame place on the toppe of the moun-
 tayne, where aſ the monſter waſ, thēperour cōmanded to
 edifie a temple to the god Jupiter, in memory of the ſame.
 2670 Of the whiche temple themperour Alexander, hauynge
 warre with them of the realme, made a ſtronge caſtell.

¶ What befell to a citeſen of Rome in the tyme of
 this emperour Marcus. Cap. xxvii.

THe ſame tyme that this aduenture chaunced
 in that yle, there waſ dwellynge in the ſame
 citie a Romaine named Antygone, a lorde of
 2675 noble bloudde, and ſomewhat entred in age:
 and about two yere before, he, hiſ wyfe, and
 a doughter of hiſ were banyſhed Rome, and not hiſ ſon-
 neſ. The occaſion waſ, There waſ an auncient laudable
 cuſtome, ſyth Quintus Cincinatuſ dictatour, that two of
 2680 the auncient ſenatourſ togyther ſhulde go with the cen-
 ſure newly created, and the olde, in the month of Decēbre
 for

(*f.46)*for to vifite all Rome: and they to call euery Romaine a-
 parte alone, fhewyng hym the .xii. tables of their lawes,
 and particular decrees of the fenate, demandyng of them
 if they knewe any neyghbour in their quarter, that had ²⁶⁸⁵
 broken thefe lawes. And if they dyd, it fhuld be informid
 to the fenate. And there all to gyther to ordeyne punyfhe-
 ment accordyng to the diuerfitie of the fautes that they
 hadde commytted: But the fautes commytted that pre-
 lent yere, they myght not chaftyle, but to aduertife them ²⁶⁹⁰
 to amende afterwarde. And all fuche as were ones war-
 ned, and in the next vifitation founde ftylle vnamended,
 to be greuoufly punyfhed, and fomtime banyfhed. Thefe
 were the wordes of the lawe in the .v. table and third cha-
 piter: It is ordeined by the holy fenate, by confent of blyf- ²⁶⁹⁵
 full men, receyuing the auncient colonies, that if men be-
 inge men in one yere do trefpas, the men as menne for the
 faide yere fhall diffimule and forbere: but if they that be yl
 as yll, do not amend, they that be good, as good, fhall cha-
 ftife them. Also the fayd law faith: the firft fautes are suf- ²⁷⁰⁰
 fred, bicaufe they are cōmitted with weke ignorāce: but if
 they cōtinue them, y they be chaftifed, bicaufe their yl co-
 meth of flouth 7 malice. This inquifition was euer made
 in the moneth of Decēbre, bicaufe that foone after in the
 month of Janiuer the offices in Rome were diuided. And ²⁷⁰⁵
 it was refon, that they fhuld knowe to whom they fhulde
 giue or denie their dignities: to thentent that good fhulde
 not be chofen in ftede of yl, nor the yl in ftede of good. The
 pticular caufe why they banyfhed the mā 7 his wife with
 their doughter was this: The fecond emperour of Rome ²⁷¹⁰
 Auguft [sic] ordeined, that none fhuld be fo hardy to pis at any
 dores of the tēples: and Caligula the .iiii. emperour com-
 mādēd, that no woman fhulde gyue any cedulaes to hange
 about the peoples neckes, to heale the feuer quartayne.

And

N. ii.

(*f. 46^b) 2715 *And Cato Cenforyne made a lawe, that no manne nor yonge mayden shulde speake togyther at the conduites or welles, where they fetched water, nor at the ryuer where they washed their clothes, nor at the ouens where they baked breade, bycause all the yonge people of Rome that
 2720 were wyld and wanton ranne euer thyder. So it befelle, that as the cenfures and confules visited the quarter called mount Celio, there was a dweller named Antigonus accused, that he was sene pissyng against the temple wall of Mars: and his wyfe was accused, that she had solde
 2725 cedulaes for feuer quartaynes: and lykewise his doughter was accused that she was sene at the conduites, ryuers, 7 ouens, spekyng and laughing with yonge men of Rome: The whiche was a great shame to the maydens of Rome. Than the cenfures seinge the yll order, that they had found
 2730 in the house of the said Anthigone by the registers, by due examination, beinge warned, [sic] afore they were banyshed in to the yles of Cycill, for as longe as it shuld please the senate. And lyke as in edifices sumptuous and of greatte estimation one ston is not decayde or wrythed out with-
 2735 out shakyng or mouyng of an nother: euen lyke wyfe is it in the chaunces of men. For commonly one vnhappy pynes chaunceth not, but an other foloweth. And I saye this bycause Anthigone lost not allonely his honour and welthe, but also he was banyshed, and belyde that by the
 2740 tremblyng of the erthe his house fell downe, and slewe a welbeloued doughter of his. And all the whyle that this was done at Rome, and that befell of the monster in Cycill, Marke the emperour was in the warres against the Aragons, and there he receyued a letter from Antygone,
 2745 wherin was reherfed his banyshyng, wherof the emperour hadde greatte compassion, and to comfort hym, sent hym an other letter.

Of a

(*f. 47)

*¶ Of a great pestilence that was in Italy in
this emperours tyme. Ca. xxviii.



Five yere after the dethe of Anthony the meke,
father in law to Marcus Aurelius, and father
to Fauistine, there fell a pestilence in Italye. ²⁷⁵⁰
And it was one of the .v. great pestilences a-
monge the Romaine people. This mortalitie
dured the space of two yeres, and it was vniuerfall tho-
rough out all Italy, to the great damage and feare of all
the Romans, for they thought that the goddis wold haue ²⁷⁵⁵
distroyed them, for some displeasure that they had done a-
gainste them. There dyed so many, as wel of great estate,
as ryche and poore, great and small, yonge and olde, that
the writers had lesse trauayle to write the small nombre of
them that were lefte alyue, than to wryte of the multitude ²⁷⁶⁰
of them that were deed. Lyke as whan a great buyldynge
wyll falle, firste there falleth some stone: In lyke wise the
Romainys neuer had no great pestilence in their tyme, but
first they were thretned with some token, signe, or prodige
fro heuen. Two yere before that Haniball entred into I- ²⁷⁶⁵
taly in an euenynge, whan the wether was clere 7 faire,
sodeynely it rayned bloudde and mylke in Rome. And it
was declared by a woman, that the blode betokened cruel
warre, and the mylke a mortall pestilence. Whan Scilla
retourned from Champayne, to put Marius his ennemie ²⁷⁷⁰
out of Rome, his men of warre and knyghtes sawe in a
nyght a fountayne that ranne bloudde, and who so euer
was bathed therin, semed to be poysoned with venyme.
Of the whiche prodigie folowed, that of .ii. C. and .l. M.
dwellers in Rome, what with theym that dyed with the ²⁷⁷⁵
swerde, and other consumed by pestilence, were consumid
with Scilla, and of them that fledde with Marius, of the
sayd

N. iii.

(*f. 47^b) *said great multitude of Romainys, there abode alyue no
 mo but .xl. M. persons. Certaynly Rome neuer receyued
 2780 so great damage in .vi. C. yeres before, as they dydde by
 their owne propre people. All the tyrauntes were neuer so
 cruel ageinst strange landes, as the Romainys were than
 ageinst their owne propre landes. And this semeth to be
 true, bycause the same day y^e Sylla passed through Rome
 2785 with his bloody swerde, a capitayn of his sayd to him: Sir
 Scylla if we flee them that beare armour in the feldes, 7
 them that bere no armour in their houses, with whom shal
 we lyue? I coniure the by the hie goddis, fyth we be born
 of women, let vs not flee the women: and fyth we be men,
 2790 let vs not flee the men. Thou thinkest that in fleinge all
 the Romaines to make a comon welthe of beastis of the
 mountayne. Thou entrest with a crie to defende the com-
 mon welthe, and to put out the tyrantes that distroye the
 common welthe, and we do remayne tyrauntis our selves.
 2795 To myn vnderstandinge that capitayne merited as great
 glorie for the good wordes that he spake, as Scilla dydde
 merite chastisement for the crueltie that he dyd. This we
 haue sayd, bycause that er luche damages dyd fall, there
 proceded before certayne prodigies and tokens. No lesse
 2800 token was shewid before the mortalite that fel in the time
 of this good emperour, the whiche was a feareful thing.
 The case was so: On a day as themperour was at the tē-
 ple of the virgins Vestales, sodeynly there entred in two
 hogges, and ranne about his fete, and there felle downe
 2805 deed: and on an other day as he came from the hyghe ca-
 pytoll, for to haue gone out at the gate Salaire, he sawe
 two kytes ioyninge to gyther with their talantes: and so
 fell down deed at the emperours fete. And within a shorte
 whyle or season after, as the sayd emperour came fro hun-
 2810 tynge his houndes rennyng at a wylde beast, as he gaue
 two

(*f. 48)*two greyhoundes that he loued well, water to drinke with his owne handis, sodeinly they fel downe deed at his fete. Than he remembryng the fwyne, the kytes, and the greyhoundes deed so sodeynly, he was greatly difmayed, and affembled all his priestes, magitiens, and diuines, demã- 2815 dyngge what they sayd to the prodigies, and they by those thinges passed iudged the dede present, and determyned that within two yeres the goddis wold sende great 7 greuous punyfhementes to Rome. Than within short while after, there began a warre agaynst the Parthes, wherby 2820 there fel the yere after great famyn and pestilence amonge the Romyans. This pestilence came with fores vnder the arme pittes, so that al the senate fledde away, and the emperour alone abode styll in the capitoll. Than the ayre began to be so corrupte, that though he scaped the pestilence 2825 yet he was vexed with hote feuers. Wherefore he was fayn to leaue Rome, and went into Champayn: and fynally in the citie of Naples he made his abode duringe the tyme that the pestilence was in Rome.

¶ Howe Mar. answered his phisitiens that wold haue him leaue his studie. Cap. xxix.

He emperour beyng in the layde cytie of Na- 2830 ples, where as other foughte pastyme to conferue their lyues, this emperour occupied himselfe in his bokes to augment science. A man coude do hym no better seruice, than to seke to gette hym a newe boke: not suche as was written in his 2835 tyme, but such as were forgotten for age. This emperour was not onely a louer of olde and antyke bokes, but also of auncient stories, and sette very great store by them: And he thus beinge in this cytie lycke and very yl at ease, there

(f. 48^b) 2840 *there was brought to hym out of a citie of Asia called Helia, by certayne Hebrewes, a booke written in Hebrew: 7 he toke suche pleasure in that booke, that oft tymes he wolde leaue his meate and go to study: and for all that he was in his hote feuer, he wolde not leaue to rede for all that
 2845 his phisitians warned hym, and his frendes prayed him: and they that were aboute hym, counsayled hym, and demaunded hym, why he left to procure the helth of his persone in so moche redyng. He aunswered: By the goddis that we honour I coniure you, and for the frendshyp that
 2850 is betwene vs, I praye you lette me alone. ye knowe well, that suche as are of a delycate bloode, haue not so moche sollicitude as the rusticall people, that haue harde finewes and be of a more harder complexion. Lyke maner they of clere vnderstandyng haue nede of other medicines, and
 2855 to be heled with other syropes thā they of grosse vnderstādyng. This is the differēce that I haue of eyther of them: The ydeot kepeth diete frome bokes, and resteth on his meate, and the wise man abhorreth meate, and draweth hym to his bokes. If they knewe, that knowe not, what
 2860 thyng knowlege is, I sweare to you, they shulde se what auayleth more the lytell knowlege that a wise man hath, than the greatte ryches of the riche man. For the myserable riche persone, the more that he encreaseth in rychesse, the more he dimynyssheth in frendes and groweth in en-
 2865emies to his damage. And he that is wyttie, the wyser that he is, the better he is beloued of them that be good, 7 feared of them that be yll for his profite. One of the thynges, wherin I holde my selfe moste bounde to the goddis is this, that they haue caused me to compass the tyme as
 2870 I haue done, the whiche is no lyttel gyft for a man to liue in this worlde. I say it is, bycause I haue had great compassion of the poore, that be very poore, of wydowes, of
 them

(*f.49)*them that be sorowfull and vnhappy, and of Orphelins. But without comparyson I haue had greattest compaf-
 lion of them that lack knowlege. For the goddis making ²⁸⁷⁵
 men ignorant by naturalitie, they myghte haue ben made
 goddis by counnyng and knowlege: and as the flouth-
 full men are tamed and made lesse than men by their ne-
 gligence, certaynly bleffed is that man that is not content
 to be a man, but if he procure more than a man by his ver ²⁸⁸⁰
 tue. And curfed is that man that knoweth not to be a mā,
 but maketh him felfe lesse than a man by his vice. By the
 iugement of all philosophers, there is but one, that is the
 first caufe, whiche is one god immortalle: and if there be
 dyuers goddis in the heuens, it is bicaufe there are diuers ²⁸⁸⁵
 vertues in the erthe. And in the worldes that is pafte whā
 the fimple men were feruauntes and bonde men, and the
 good men rulers and gouernours, they were then fo efte-
 med, bycaufe they were knowen and renowned in good
 werkes whanne they lyued. So that they were holden ²⁸⁹⁰
 and reputed as goddis after their deathe. This is the
 ryghte rewarde that commeth of vertue. It is a thyng
 confonant to reafone, they that be good amonge fo many
 yll in this lyfe, that they fhulde be greattely honoured a-
 monge the goddis after their deathe. ye are not wel contēt ²⁸⁹⁵
 with me, bycaufe I am alway redyng: but I am worfe
 content with you, bycaufe I neuer fe one boke in your hā-
 des: ye thinke it gret trauayle to a lycke man to rede, and
 I repute it a very perillous thinge for a hole man to refte
 and be idell. ye fay my redyng is caufe of my feuer quar- ²⁹⁰⁰
 tayne in my fleffhe: and I faye that ydelnes engendreth
 great peftilence. Syth I may profite by my bokes, let no
 man haue compaffion of my trauayle. For I defire rather
 to dye as a wife perfon amonge wyle men, than to lyue ig-
 norantly amonge men. I demaunde one thyng of you: ²⁹⁰⁵

A man

O

(*f. 49^b) *A man presuminge to be a man and not lerned, what difference is betwene hym and other beastes? Certaynly the beastes are more profitable to labour the erthe, than symple persons be to serue the common welth. A pore oxe gi-
 2910 ueth his skynne to make shone, his fleshe to be eaten, and his strength to labour: and a poore symple shepe doth profyte, his flece and woll to make cloth, and mylke to make chese. But what profiteth a folysh ideot man? Nothing but offendeth the goddis, sclaundereth innocentis, eateth
 2915 the breade of other, and is chiefe heed of vacabundes. Of trouth if it lay in my handes, I had rather gyue lyfe to a symple oxe, than to a malycious ideot. For the beast liueth for the vtilitie of dyuers without doinge damage to any other: and the simple ideot man lyueth to the damage of
 2920 all other, and without proufite to any persone. Therefore thinke well why I am not pleased with them that be ignorant, and loue them that be lerned. Harke lys, and I shall shew you: That mā semeth good, whan he is meke and gentyll of condition, softe in wordes, and restfull in
 2925 his persone, and gracious in conuersation: and contrary wise, that persone soore displeaseth me, that is sharpe of wordes, soore moued in his werkes, riottous in his condition, and double of his promys, and harde harted. Also I say, that if any thinge fayleth a wise man by nature,
 2930 he supplyeth it by science: and he that is ignorant and folysh, if he faileth discretion, he supplyeth therto his malice. And trust ye surely, that a worthy vertuous mā thereby becometh wise, and he is to be trusted: and he that is of an other maner, beware of hym, for he gothe about to
 2935 sell his malice. He that wyl begile an other, the first thing that he dothe is, he putteth him selfe to be simple and ignorant. For a man benige [sic] in credence may soone sprede abroad his malyce. These mothes and softe wormes frete
 the

(*f.50) *freate the clothe: and the canker worme perceth the bone,
and flateringe men begyle all the worlde.

2940

¶ Howe science ought to be in princes. Ca. xxx.



He laid emperour folowing his purpose, laid:
Frendes beholde, howe great damage igno-
rance dothe to all men. And though it be do-
mageable to euery man, yet it is moſte hurte-
full to a prince, whiche ought not onely to be 2945
content to knowe as moche as any other wiſe perſon kno-
weth, but to knowe that euery man knoweth, ſithe he is
lorde of all other. To my iugement theſe princis are not
choſen, that they ſhulde eate more mete than all other, nor
to be appareyled rychelier than all other, nor to renne fa- 2950
ſter than all other: but with preſuppoſition y they ought
to knowe more than all other. Whan a prince wylle re-
frayne his ſenſualitie, than he ought to regarde, that his
perſon be right honeſt, and remembre this worde that is:
The greater that a prince is of power aboue other, the 2955
greater oughte his vertue to be aboue all other. For cer-
tainly the greateſt infamie is, to ſe a man moſt mightye
aboue all other, and moſt ryche of all other, and than to
be knowen an ideot and leſſe of knowlege than other. Al
defautes in a gouernour may be borne ſauſe ignoraunce, 2960
for ignorāce in a prince is a ſtroke of peſtilēce: 7 it fleeth di-
uers, 7 infecteth al perſons, 7 vnpeopleth the realme, cha-
ſeth away frēdes, 7 giueth hart to enmies of ſtrange nati-
ons, that were in drede, 7 finally domageth his pſon, and
ſclādreth euery one. Whā Camill triūphed ouer the frēch- 2965
mē, the day of his triūph he wrote theſe wordes in the ca-
pitol: O Rome, thou haſt ben moder of al wiſe men 7 ſtep-
dame to al foles. Theſe were worthi wordis of ſuch a lord.
And

O. ii.

(*f. 50^b) *and but if my remembrance begyle me, certaynely Rome
 2970 was more renowmed for wyle perloncs that came thyder,
 than for the featis of warre that were sente frome thense.
 Our auncient Romaines were more feared for their wile
 dome and knowlege than for their conquestes. Al the erth
 feared them more that tourned leaues of bokes in Rome,
 2975 than they that were armed with armour. For that cause
 Rome was neuer vanquyshe: and though their armies
 were deuyded and broken, yet they neuer lacked wyle mē.
 I can not say it without teares, Rome is fallen from the
 most hight of her estate: not for faut of money and armes
 2980 for to fight withall, but for lacke of wile men, and vertu-
 ous for to gouerne. Our forefathers wanne lyke men, and
 we lese lyke simple children: al thinges that are desired of
 men, they attayne by trauayle, susteyne with thought, and
 departe fro with great annoyance. And the reason is this:
 2985 There is nothyng so good nor so well be loued, but the
 cours of tyme causeth vs to leaue it, and to dispraye and
 abhorre it, or be wery therof. This is the vayne vanitie of
 the worlde, and lost tyme lost: for with their yong desires
 they do refrayne their desires. They wold oftentymes at-
 2990 tayne a thinge, and after they studie howe to go therfro a-
 gayne. And yet to shewe further their lyghtnes, that that
 coft moche, they gyue for a lyttell price. That they loue at
 one tyme, they hate at an other: and that that they with
 great study and labour haue attained, with greate furye
 2995 they forgo. And me thinketh this is the ordinaunce of the
 goddis, that he that loueth shall haue an ende, and that
 is beloued shall take an ende: and the tyme that we are
 in shall ende. Than it is reason, that the loue, wherwith
 we do loue, shall ende in lykewise. Than our appetite is
 3000 so dishonest, that in seing we desire it, and in desiringe we
 procure it: and in procuringe we attayn it: and in the at-
 tayning

(*f.51)*taynyng we abhorre it: and in abhorrynge, we leaue it: and than forthewith agayne we procure an other thyng, and that newe procuringe we abhorre ageyne: In suche wife, that whan we begyn to loue a thyng, than we falle ³⁰⁰⁵ ageyne to hate it, and in the fallynge to hate it, we begyn ageine to loue an other thinge. So thus finally our lyfe doth ende, er our couetyse dothe leaue vs. It is not thus of wifedome and knowlege, the which if it ones entre into a mans hart, it caueth hym to forget the trauayle y he ³⁰¹⁰ had taken in the attaynyng therof. For he taketh the time past as good, and enioyeth with rightful ioy the time presente, and hathe ydelnes in hate. Nor is not content with that he knoweth, but enforceth his appetite to know more lounge that other leaueth: and leauynge that other lo- ³⁰¹⁵ ueth. Fynally he y is perfytly wise, sporteth in this worlde with trauayle, and in trauayling in bokes is his rest. We haue not to say of all thinges, but of that we fele of them. For it is an other maner to speake by similitude of a stranger, and of our owne experience. And in this case I saye, ³⁰²⁰ that though we hope of no rewarde of the goddis, nor honour amonge men, nor memorie of the world to come, yet am I ryght gladde to be al onely a philosopher, to se how gloriously the philosophers haue passed their tyme. I demaunde one thyng, whan myn vnderstondyng is obfus- ³⁰²⁵ ked in that I haue to do, and whan my memorie is troubled in that I haue to determyne, and whan my bodye is compassed with dolours, and whan my harte is charged with thoughtis, and whan I am without knowlege, and whan I am set about with peryls: where can I be better ³⁰³⁰ accompanied than with wise men, or els redynge amonge bokes? In bokes I fynd wysedom, wherby I may lerne: also there I fynde worthynes, which I may folow: I find there prudence to counsell me, I fynde suche as be sorow-
full

O. iii.

(*f. 51 b) 3035 *full, with whom I may wepe: I finde there them that be
 mery, with whome I may laughe: I fynde there fymple
 folke, at whom I may fporte: I fynde that is noughte,
 whiche I maye leaue: And finally in writynge I fynde,
 howe in prosperitie I ought to behaue me: and howe in
 3040 aduerfitie I oughte to guyde me. O howe happy is that
 man, that hath wel redde: And yet more happy is he, that
 though he knoweth moche, yet ftayeth vpon counfel. And
 if this be true generally, than moche more is it neceffarie
 he [!] to kepe the true way, which gouerneth al other. It is a
 3045 rule infallible, that a prince being wyfe, can neuer be fim-
 ply good, but very good: and the prince that is ignorant
 can not be fimply yll, but very yl. A prince that is not wel
 fortunate, his wyfedome may greatly excufe hym to his
 people of his myfffortunes giuen to him by fortune. Whā
 3050 a prince is greatly beloued of his cōmontie, and is vertu-
 ous of his perfone, than euery man fayth, if he haue not
 good fortune: Al though our prince wāt good fortune, yet
 his worthy vertues fayle not: and though he be not hap-
 py in his ententis, yet at the leaft he fheweth his wyfedom
 3055 in the meane feafon: And thoughe fortune denye hym at
 one howre, yet at an other tyme fhe agreeth by his wyfe-
 dome. And contrary wife an vnwyfe prince, and hated of
 his people, by finiftre fortune renneth into great perylle.
 For if yll succede to him in weighty matters, than incon-
 3060 tinent it fhalbe fayd, it is by reafon of the ignorāce of him
 felfe, or by yll counsel of fuch as be about hym: 7 if good-
 nes succede to him, it fhall not be attributed by reafon of
 his good gouernance, but that fortune hathe fuffered it,
 and not by the circumfpect wyfedome that he hath hadde
 3065 in the meane feafon, but that it was of the pitie that the
 goddis had of hym. Than fithe it is thus, a vertuous 7
 worthy prince in his ydell tymes oughte fecretely to rede
 in bo-

(*f. 52) *in bokes, and openly to common and counsell with wyle men. And in case yll fortune wyll not permyt hym to take their councelles, yet at the leaste he shall recouer credence ³⁰⁷⁰ amonge his subiectes. I wyll saye no more to you, but I esteeme the knowlege of a wise persone, so that if I knewe that there were shops of sciences, as there is of other marchandise, I wold giue al that I haue onely to lerne that a wyle manne lerneth in one daye. Fynally I saye, that I ³⁰⁷⁵ wyll not gyue that lytell that I haue lerned in one houre, for all the golde in the worlde: and more glorye haue I of the bokes that I haue redde, and of suche workes as I composed, than of all the victories that I haue had, or of the realmes that I haue wonne. ³⁰⁸⁰

¶ What a vilayne faide to the senatours of Rome in the prefence of the emperour. Cap. .xxxi.



His emperour being sicke, as it is aforesaid, on a day as there were with him diuers phisitions 7 oratours, there was a purpose moued among them, how gretly Rome was chāged, not al only in edifices but also in custo- ³⁰⁸⁵ mes, 7 was ful of flaterers, 7 unpepled of men y durst say the trouth. Than the emperour sayd: In the fyrst yere y I was cōfull, there cam a pore vilayn from the riuer of Danubie to aske iustice of the senate ayenst a cēsure, who did diuers extorcions to the people: and he had a small face 7 ³⁰⁹⁰ great lippes, 7 holow eied, his heer curled, 7 bare heeded, his shoes of a porkepes skyn, his cote of gotis heer, his girdel of boll rusches, 7 a wild eglātine in his hāde, it was a strāge thing to se him so monstuous, and meruaylle to here his purpose. Certainly whan I saw him com into the ³⁰⁹⁵ senate, I wend it had ben som beest in the figure of a mā. ^{3095a}
And

(*f. 52^b) *And after I had herde hym, I iuged hym one of the goddis, if there be goddis amonge men. And as the custome in the senate was, that the complayntes of poore persons were hard before the requestis of the ryche: this vil-
 3100 layne had lycence to speake, and so beganne his purpose, wherin he shewed hym selfe as bolde, as extreme 7 base in his aray, and sayd: O ye ancient fathers and happy people, I Myles dwellynge on the ryuers and cityes of the fludde of Danubie do salute you senatours that are here
 3105 assembled in the sacred senate. The dedes permytteth, and the goddis suffreth, that the captayns of Rome with their great pride haue reduced vnder subiection the vnhappye people of Germany. Great is the glorie of you Romainys for your battayles that ye haue wonne throughout all the
 3110 world. But if the wryters say tru, more greter shalbe your infamy in tyme to com, for the cruelties that ye haue done to the innocentes. My predeceffours had people nygh to the flode of Danubie, and bycause they dyd ylle, the erthe waxed drie, and they drewe to the fresshe water: than the
 3115 water was noyfull to them, and they returned to the ferm land. What shall I say than? your couetyse is so great to haue straungers goodes, and your pride so renowned, to commaunde all strange landes, that the see may not profite vs in the depenes therof, nor the erthe to assure vs in
 3120 the caues therof. Therefore I hope in the iust goddis, that as ye without reason haue caste vs out of our howses and possessions: that other shall come, that by reason shall cast you out of Italy and Rome. And an infallible rule it is, that he that taketh an other mans good, shal lese the right
 3125 of his owne. Regard ye Romainys, though I be vilayne, yet I knowe who is iuste and rightwyse in holdynge his owne: and who a tyrant, in possessinge other. There is a rule, that what so euer they that be yll haue gathered in
 many

(*f.53)*many dayes, the goddis taketh fro them in one day: and contrarie wise all that euer the good haue losse in many ³¹³⁰ days, the goddis restoreth to them agayn in one day. Be-leue me in one thyng, 7 doute not therin, that of the vnlaue full winning of y^e fathers, there foloweth there after the iuste losse to their children. And if the goddis toke frome them that be yll euery thyng that they haue wonne, as ³¹³⁵ soone as it is wonne, it were but reafone, but in lettynge them alone, therby they assemble by lytel and lytel dyuers thinges. And than whan they thinke leaste thereon is taken from them all at ones. This is a iust iugement of the goddis: that syth they haue done yll to diuers, that some ³¹⁴⁰ shulde do yll to them. Certaynly it is nat possible to any vertuous man, if he be vertuous, that he take any tast in an other mans good. And I am fore abashed, how a mā kepynge an other mans good, can lyue one houre. Syth he seeth y^e he hath done iniurie to the goddis, sclādred his ³¹⁴⁵ neybour, plesed his enmies, lost his frēdes greued them that he hath robbed, and aboue al hath put his owne person in peryll. This is a shamefull thyng amonge men, and culpable before the goddis, the man that hath the desire of his harte, and the bridelle of his warkes at such ³¹⁵⁰ lybertie, that the lyttell that he taketh and robbeth fro the poore, semeth moche to hym: but a great dele of his owne semeth to him but lyttel. O what an vnhappy man is he, whether he be greke or latyn, that without consideration wyl change his good fame in to shame, iustice into wrōg, ³¹⁵⁵ right in to tyranny, or trouth into lesynge, the certayn in to vncertayne, hauynge annoyance of his owne goodes, and dye for other mens? He that hath his principall intētion to gather goodes for his chyldren, and seke not for a good name amonge them that be good: It is a iust cause ³¹⁶⁰ that he lese all his goodes, and so without good name to be

P

(*f. 53^b) *to be fhamefull amonge them that be yl. Let all couetous and auaricious people knowe, that neuer amonge noble men was gotten good renoume with fpredyng abroad of
 3165 yll gotten goodes. It can nat endure many days, nor yet be hydden vnder couert many yeres: a man to be holden ryche amonge them that be ryche, and an honorable man amonge them that be honorable: for he fhallbe infamed of that he hath gathered his ryches with great couetyse, or
 3170 kepeth it with extreme auaryce. O if these couetous people were as couetous of their owne honour, as they be of other mens goodes: I fwere to you, that the lyttel worm or mothe that eateth the gownes or clothes of fuche couetous people, fhulde not eate the rest of their lyfe, nor the
 3175 cankre of infamie distroye their goode name and fame at their deathes. Harke ye Romaines, harke what I wyl say, I wolde to the goddes that ye coude taste it. I se that all the worlde hateth pride, and yet is there none that followeth mekenes and humilitie: Euery man condemneth
 3180 aduoutrie, and yet I see none that lyueth chaste: Euerye man curseth exceffe, and I se none lyue temperately: euery man prayseth pacience, and I se none that wyl suffre: euery mā blameth flouth, and I se none but they be idel: euery one blameth auaryce, and yet euery body robbeth.
 3185 One thinge I say, and not without wepinge: I say euery man with his tongue onely prayseth vertues, and yet they them selves with all their lymmes are seruantes vnto vices. I say not this onely for the Romaines, whiche bene in Illirie: but I say it by the fenatours that I se in
 3190 the senate. All ye Romaines in your deuises about your armes beare these wordes: *Romanorum est debellare superbos, et parcere subiectis*, That is, it pertaineth to Romaines to subdewe theym that be proude, and to forgyue subiectes. But certaynely ye maye better say: hit pertayneth to Romaines

(*f. 54)*maynes to expelle innocentes, and to trowble and vexe ³¹⁹⁵
 wrongfully peasible people: For ye Romaines are but
 destroyers of peasible people, and theues to robbe frome
 other, that they sweate for.

¶ Of dyuers other thinges that the vilayne sayd
 before the senate. Cap. xxxii.



ye Romainys (said this villayne) what action
 haue ye, that are brought vp nygh to the ry- ³²⁰⁰
 uer of Thyber, agaynste vs that are nygh to
 the ryuer of Danubie: Haue ye sene vs fren-
 des to your ennemies? or haue we declared
 vs your ennemies? or haue ye herde, that we haue lefte
 our owne lande, and inhabited any straunge landis? or ³²⁰⁵
 haue ye herde, that we haue rebelled ageynst our lordes,
 or haue troubled any strange realmes? or haue ye sent vs
 any ambassadours, to desire vs to be your frendes? or
 hath any hoste of ours come to Rome to distroye you, as
 our enmies? or hath any king died in our realme, or what ³²¹⁰
 antike lawe haue ye founde, wherby we ought to be your
 subiectis? Of trouthe in Almayne hereby they haue felte
 your tirannie, as wel as we haue herde of your renoume.
 And more ouer I say, that the names of the Romainys, 7
 the cruelties of tyrantis aryued to gither in one day vpon ³²¹⁵
 our people. I wote not what ye wyll say, that the goddis
 care not of the hardines of mē: for I se ȳ he that hath mo-
 che, yet doth he tirāny to him that hath but litell. And he ȳ
 hath but lytel, though it be to his infamy, yet he wyl serue
 him ȳ hath moch. So that difordred mē appoint thē with ³²²⁰
 secrete malice, 7 ȳ secrete malice giueth place to opē theft.
 7 to the open robbery no mā resisteth. And therefore it co-
 meth, that the couetise of an yll man necessarily is hadde
 to be

P. ii.

(*f. 54^b) *to be complete to the preiudice of many good men. One
 3225 thyng I wyl say, that eyther the goddis ought to thinke
 howe these men shal haue an ende, or elles that the world
 must ende: or els the worlde to be no worlde: Or fortune
 must holde sure with you, if all that ye haue won in .viii.
 C. yeres ye lese not in .viii. dayes. And where as ye are
 3230 become lordes ouer many, ye shal become slaues to all
 the worlde. Certainly the goddis shal be vniuste, with-
 out that thinge come that must fall in the worlde hereaf-
 ter. For that man that maketh him selfe a tyrant parforce,
 It is right that he retourne to be a sclaue by Iustice. And
 3235 it is reason, that sith ye haue taken our myserable lande,
 that ye kepe vs in Iustice. I haue meruaylle of you Ro-
 mayns, to sende so simple persons to be our iuges. For I
 swere to the goddis, they can not declare your lawes, nor
 vnderstande ours. I wote not whether ye sent them thy-
 3240 der or no, but I shal shewe you, what they do there. They
 take openly what so euer is delyuered to them: and they
 doo their proufite with that they desyre in secrete. They
 chaastise the poore persone greuouely, and they forbearē
 for money them that be riche: They consent to many wrō-
 3245 ges, to bringe them after to the lawes, without goodes it
 boteth not to demande Iustice: and finally vnder colour
 that they be iuges vnder the senate of Rome, they say they
 may robbe all the londe. What is this ye Romainys? shall
 your pride neuer haue an ende in commandyng, nor your
 3250 couetise in robbynge? Saye what ye wyl. If ye do it for
 our chyldren, charge theym with irons, and make theym
 sclaues: If ye do it for our goodes, go thyther and take
 them: If our seruice doth not content you, stryke of our
 heedes. Why is not the knyfe so cruell in our throtes as
 3255 your tyrannies is in your hartes? Doo ye knowe what
 ye haue done ye Romaines? ye haue caused vs, to swere
 neuer

(*f.55) *neuer to retourne to our wyues: but to flee [flee?] our chyldren rather than to leaue them in the handes of so cruel tirantes. We had leauer suffre the bestly motions of the fleshe for .xx. or .xxx. yeres, than to dye without wounde leuyng³²⁶⁰ our childrē sclaues, ye ought not to do thus ye Romans. A londe taken par force ought the better to be ruled, to thē tent that the myserable captiues, seinge Iustice duely ministred to them, shuld therby forgette the tyranny passed, and to set their hartis to perpetuall seruitude. And sythe³²⁶⁵ we are come to complayne of the grefes that your Censures do vpon the fludde of Danubie, peraduenture you of the senate wyll here vs. Wote ye what ye doo? Harke and I shall shewe you. If there come a righte poore man to demande Iustice, hauyng no money to gyue, nor wine³²⁷⁰ to present, nor oyle to promyse, they fede hym with wordis sayinge howe he shall haue Iustice: but they make hym to waste the lyttell that he hath, and gyue hym nothyng, though he demande moche. And so the myserable persone that came to complayn, retourneth complaynyng on you³²⁷⁵ all, curfinge his cruell destenies, and maketh exclamatiō vppon the rightwise goddis. I lyue with acornes in winter, and cut downe the grene corne in sommer, and sometyme I go a fyshyng for pastyme, so that the mooste parte of my liuyng is fedyng in the feldes: and ye wote not³²⁸⁰ why: here me, and I shal shewe you. I se suche tyrannies in your censures, and suche robberies amonge the poore people, and I se suche warres in that realme, and hope of so small remedy in your senate, that I am determined as most vnhappy, to banishe my selfe out of myn own hous,³²⁸⁵ and honest company, to thentent that my harte shuld not fele so great a hurt. It is a great payne to suffre the ouerthrowe of fortune: but it is a greater yl, whan one feleth it and can not remedy it: and yet without comparison my
great-

P. ii.

(*f. 55^b) 3290 *greatest grefe is, whan my losse may be remedied, and he that may wyll not, and he that wyll can not remedy it. O ye cruell Romainys: if the sorowes all onely shulde be reduced to memorie that we suffre, my tonge shuld be wery, and all my membres faynte, and myn eyes shulde wepe
 3295 bluddy teares and my fleshe consumed. This in my lōde may be sene with eyes, herde with eares, and felte in propre persone. Certaynly my herte departeth, and my soule is troubled, 7 myn entrayles breake. And I beleue yet the goddis wyl haue compassion. I wil desire you not to take
 3300 my wordes for sclaundre. For ye Romainys, if ye be Romainys, ye shall well se, that the trouble that we haue, cometh by men, and among men, and with men, and by the handes of men. Than it is no meruayle though men fele it as men. One thinge comforteth me, and dyuers tymes
 3305 amonge other that be yll fortunate, it cometh to such purpose, the whiche is: I thinke the goddis be so rightwise, that their fierce and cruel chastifementes come not but by our owne cruel shrewdnes: 7 our secrete sinnes awaketh vs so, that we haue open Iustice. But of one thing I am
 3310 fore troubled, bicause the goddis can not be contēted. For a good persone for a lytell faut is greatly chastifed, and he that is yl, for many fautes is not punished at al. So thus y goddis forbeareth some 7 some haue no mercy. Thus it semeth that the goddis wyl turment vs by the handes of
 3315 suche men as greue vs extremely. So that if there were a ny iustice in the worlde, whan they chastise vs with their handes, we shulde not merite to haue our heedes on the sholders. Therefore I say to you, ye Romainys, and swere by the immortal goddis, that in .xv. days y I haue ben in
 3320 Rome, I haue sene such dedes done in your senate, that if the lest dede of them had ben done at Danubie, the galowes 7 gibettes had ben hanged thicker of theues, than
 the

(*f. 56) *the vineyard with grapes and reifons. And fith y my desire hath fene that it defyreth, my harte is at refte: in fpre-
 dyng abroad the poyfon that was in it. If my tonge hath ³³²⁵
 offended you in any thinge, I am here redy to make recō-
 pence with my throte. For in good fothe, I had rather to
 wyne honour, offerynge my felfe to the deathe, than ye
 fhuld haue it in taking my lyfe fro me. Thus this vilain
 ended his purpofe. Than the emperour fayd: How think ³³³⁰
 ye my frendes, what kernel of a nut? What golde of filth?
 what grayne of ftrawe? what rofe of thornes? What ma-
 rowe of bones dyd he vncouer? what reaſons fo hie? what
 wordis fo wel fette, what trouth fo true, and what malice
 opened he fo? He difcouered the duetie of a good manne. ³³³⁵
 And I fwere to you, as I may be deliuered from this euil
 feuer that I haue: that I ſaw this vilayn ſtanding a hole
 houre on the erth boldly, 7 we holding downe our heedes
 abaſhed, 7 coude not anſwere him a word. The next day it
 was accorded in the ſenat, to ſend new iuges to Danubie. ³³⁴⁰
 And we cōmanded the vilain, to deliuer vs in writing, all
 that he had fayd, that it might be regiſtred in the boke of
 good ſayinges of ſtrangers. And the ſaid vilayne for his
 wife wordes was made patricien, 7 ſo taried ſtyl at Rome,
 and fōr euer was ſuſteyned of the cōmon treaſure. ³³⁴⁵

¶ Howe themperour deſired the welth of his peo-
 ple, and the people his welthe. Cap. xxxiii.

IN the ſecond yere that Mar. [sic] was choſen em-
 perour, the .xlv. yere of his age, as he retour-
 ned fro the warres that he had in conquering
 the Germayns and the Aragons, wherby he
 got glory 7 riches for the Romaines empire, ³³⁵⁰
 he lay at Salon to reſte hym, and to appoynt his armie,
 and

(*f. 56^b) *and to thentent that the Romaines shulde apparelle his triumph in Rome right glorious and rychly: There was one thyng done, that was neuer sene before in Rome. For
 3355 the day of his triumph by al the people and consent of the senate the prince Comodus, sonne to Marc9 Au. was chosen after the dethe of his father to be emperour uniuerfal of thempire. He was not chosen by the petition of his father, for he was agaynste it with all his power, sayinge,
 3360 that the empire oughte not to be gyuen for the lawde of them that be deed, but he shoulde be chosen for his owne good werkes. Often tymes this emperour wolde saye: Rome shall be losse whan the election shall be taken froo the senate, and the Emperour to enheryte the empyre by
 3365 Patrymonie.

¶ Nowe to retourne where as we lefte. This emperour beinge at Salon studied fore to entre into Rome in good order, and Rome studied soore howe to receyue hym as it appertayned triumphantly for such a warre. He was fore
 3370 defyred of thempire: and euer he imagined how to do pleasure to the people, and the people were redy to dye in his seruice. Dyuers tymes was moued a pleasant purpose in the senate, which of these thynges was mooste to be loued: The emperour to loue the people of the empire, or the people of thempire theemperour. On a daye it was determy-
 3375 ned to sette iuges in that case: There were chosen the ambassadours of the Parthes and Rodes: and vppon that effecte they hadde writynge. It was layde for the emperour, the good dedes that he had done in his absence, and
 3380 the tokens of loue that they had alwayes shewed in his presence. And on an other day the emperour moued an other question before the senate, sayeng that it was a gretter glorie to haue suche subiectes, than the glorie of the senate to haue suche an emperour. Than the senate sayde
 naye:

(*f.57)*nay: Affirmyng y it was a greater glory that they had of ³³⁸⁵ hym, than he coude haue of them. And in this maner the emperour gaue the glorie to the people, and the people to the emperour. Thus in sporte and play they toke iudges agayn. It was a merueylous thing to se the ioy that they all had to proue their intentes. And the good emperour ³³⁹⁰ for a memorie gaue the laude to the peple, bicause of their great obedience and seruice, and extreme loue that he had founde in them. And the happy people recoūted the great clemency 7 mercy that was in themperour, and his vertue 7 worthines in gouerninge, his honestie of lyuyng, 7 his ³³⁹⁵ force and valyātnes in conquering. It was a great thing to see the honour that the people gaue to the emperour, 7 the good renowme that the emperour gaue to the peoole [sic]. The writinges were gyuen to the strange ambaffadours, to thentent that the people might lerne to obey their prin- ³⁴⁰⁰ cis: and princis to loue their people. To the ende that by suche examples (as it was reason) the good people shulde enforce them selfe, and the ill to withdrawe. Thus this emperour adressed his entre with his capitaines 7 captiues. And Rome appareyled them with al their senatours ³⁴⁰⁵ and people to receyue hym. It was a huge thinge to see what people was at Rome to go forthe to mete hym, and what people were with the emperour to entre. They that were at Salon had their eyes and alfo their hartes at Rome: and they that were at Rome had their hartes at ³⁴¹⁰ Salon. In suche wyse that theyr eies daseled with that they sawe, and their hartis aaked for that they hoped to se. There is no greater peyn, than whan the harte is deferred fro that it longeth fore to haue.

¶ How themperour gaue Lucylla his doughter licence to sport her at his palays. Cap. xxxiiii.

It

Q

(*f. 57^b) 3425*

It is to be knowen, that the Romaines had a custome, that in the moneth of Janiuer they shulde make triumphes to their emperours: and in the same seson that the triumphes were appareiled, Faustin thempresse caused dyuers
 3420 high persons to praye the emperour to gyue lycence to a doughter of his, to com from there as she was kept to the palays, and sporte her at the feastes. This mayden was named Lucie or Lucyll: She was hygher than the prince Commodus her brother: she was of a goodly gesture 7
 3425 well proporcioned of her bodye, and well be loued of her mother. And she resembled her not all onely in her beautie, but also in her lyuyng. And though the request was pitefull, and they that made it familier, and he to whom it was made was the father, and the demaunder was the
 3430 mother, and she for whom it was made, was the doughter: the emperour graunted it, but not without great displeasure. Neuertheles Faustine was full glad, and as sone as she had obtained lycence, she brought her doughter to the palais. And so whan the day of the great feaste
 3435 and triumph was comme, the damoyzell Lucylle beinge out of gouernance, and seinge her selfe at large, trusting than vppon her owne innocencye, toke no hede of any strange malyce, laughed with them that laughed, talked with them that talked, and behelde them that beheld her,
 3440 7 without care she thought that none thought ylle of her, bycause she thought yll of none: yet in those days a mayden to laugh amonge men was reputed as moch as a woman to haue done aduoutrie with the prestes of Grece: so great was the honestie of Romain women esteemed. And
 3445 lightnes of maydens was a great infamie: for they were wors punished for one open lightnes, than for two secrete fautes. Amonge all other seuen thinges the women dyd oblerue

(*f.58) *obserue surely, that is to wite: not to speke moche at feastes, not to eate moche at bankettis, to drinke no wyne in their helthe, nor to speke alone with men, nor to lyfte vp ³⁴⁵⁰ their eies in the temples, nor to stande longe lokynge out at wyndowes, nor to go out of their houles without their husbandes. The woman taken with any of these dishonest thynges, was always after reputed infamed. Many thynges were suffred in personnes of smalle reputation, ³⁴⁵⁵ that were not suffred in persons of honour. For the noble womē coude not cōserue the reputation of their estate, but by reson of kepyng their person in gret fere 7 good order. Al thinges done vnkindly is syn, 7 may be amended: but the dishonest womā is alwaye shamed. The noble ladies, ³⁴⁶⁰ if they wyl be takē as ladies, whan they excede other in riches, the lesse licence ought they to haue to go wādryng about. Certainly the plētie of goodes, 7 the libertie of persons, shuld not be a spur to pricke thē forward, but rather a brydell to kepe them in their clofettes. And this is sayd, ³⁴⁶⁵ for bycause that durynge the sayd feastes, the damoyfell Lucille, as a yonge mayden, and Fauстыne her louynge mother not beinge olde, sommetyme a foote, and sommetyme rydyng on horsebacke, sometyme openly, and sommetyme meruaylous secretely, sommetymes with company ³⁴⁷⁰ and sommetymes without company, sommetyme on the day, and nowe and than by nyghte, they wolde walke abroad in the stretes of Rome to se the feldes of Uulcan, in gardeyns Saturnynes, and drinke at the conduites of Neros water, and sommetyme passe the tyme by the fayre ³⁴⁷⁵ ryuer of Thybre, and in all suche other pleasant sportes as appertayned to their age. And though the fore ryped primetyme prouoked them therto, yet the grauitie of suche ladyes shulde not haue suffred it. I wyl say one thing to thentent noble women shuld take aduertisemēt therby, ³⁴⁸⁰ and

Q. ii.

(*f. 58^b) *and that is this: I knowe not whiche was the greattest
 diffolution, either the walkynge abrode of Fauftine and
 Lucille through the stretes and other places, or elles the
 boldnes of yll speakers, speakyng ageynst their perfons
 3485 and good names. The withdrawinge and kepyng of wo-
 men clofe is a bridell to the tongues of all men: and the
 woman that dothe otherwise, otherwise putteth her good
 name in daunger. Of trouth it were better for a woman
 neuer to be borne, than to be defamed. Amonge the Ro-
 3490 mayns the lygnage of the Cornelies were had in great e-
 stimation. For of theym all neuer none was founde a co-
 warde, nor a woman defamed. The histories shewe, that
 ones a lady of that lygnage, beinge onely defamed, was
 hanged on the galowes by the handis of her owne kins-
 3495 folke. Surely it was well done of the Romaines, to the
 entent that the wyckednes of one woman shuld not suffre
 yll fame to renne vpon the hole lygnage: where is there
 noblenes withoute shame? The thinges that touche ho-
 nour, ought not to be hyd but amended by Justice, and to
 3500 put them to deathe, that lose their good fame. It is not
 sufficient for a person to be good: but it is necessary that
 he put fro hym all occasions that are reputed to be yll. All
 the losses that a man may haue of any temporall goodes,
 can not countrepeyle the leste losse of good fame. A man
 3505 that layeth his good name for a ferthing at a butte of this
 worlde, at a hundred shottes scantely shall he shote one a-
 ryght. And contrary wise the man that fereth not shame,
 nor wyll not haue his personne in reputation, there is no
 hope of goodnes in him. Than this emperour (as a shyp-
 3510 mayster saylynge in mooste faire and calme wether, fore-
 casteth, and is in greatte thought and feare to tempestes
 and stormes to comme) in the feastes of his greate glorie
 was in doubte of these two ladies, leste sodenly any myf-
 fame

(*f.59)*fame shuld folowe. And certaynly he had great cause. For it is an infallible rule of enuious fortune, that this present felicitie is giuen with a pricke of a sodayne falle of myschance. In thinges naturall, we se somtyme the see caulme, and yet forthwith foloweth a peryllous storme, and consequently the great heate of the daye is signe of thonder at nyght. I say fortune comynge with some present delyte or pleasure, is a token that by flatteryng vs, she hath made redy her snares to catche vs. Whā the miller is sure, he dresseth his water gate, and the labourer whan it reyneth not, couereth his house, thinkinge that an other tyme the wethers or raynes wyll fall theron and trouble hym: In lykewyse a wyse and vertuous manne ought to thinke (as longe as he lyueth in this worlde) he holdeth his felicitie but at aduenture: and his aduersitie for his naturall patrimonie. Amonge all them that coude reioyce in prosperitie, and helpe theym selfe in aduersitie, this emperour Marcus Aurelius was one: whiche for any flatterynges that Fortune coude shewe hym, he neuer trusted in them: nor for myshappe that he had in this life he neuer dispaired.

¶ What Marcus themperour said to a Senatour
as touchinge tryumphes. Cap. xxxv.



Hanne these feastes were passed, as Sextus Cheronense saith, a senatour named Aluinus sayd to themperour, the same nyght that the triumph ceassed: Syr reioyce you, lithe that this day ye haue gyuen so great ryches to the common treasure of Rome: and I haue sene your person in the triumph of glorie: and to the world to come of you and your howse you haue lefte perpetuall memorie. The
empe-

Q. iii.

(*f. 59^b) *emperour heringe theſe wordes, layd in this maner: Frêd
 it is good reſon we beleue the hûter knoweth the fierſnes
 3545 of beſtis, the phiſition the propretie of herbes, ȳ maryner
 the perils of rockes, the capitayns the chaunces of warre,
 and the emperour that triumpheth the ioys that he hath
 of triumphes. As god helpe me, and and [sic] as euer I haue
 part with my predeceſſours, and as euer I haue good for-
 3550 tune, the thoughtes that I haue had for theſe feſtes, haue
 ben farre greater than the feares that I haue had in all
 the iournays and battayles afore. And the reaſon therof
 is very euident, to them that haue clere vnderſtandyng:
 For alwayes in cruel batayles I was euer in hope to haue
 3555 glory, 7 feared not the ouerthrow of fortune. What coude
 I loſe in battayle? Nothinge but the lyfe, that is the leſt
 thinge that men haue, and alwayes in theſe triumphes I
 feare to loſe renownme, whiche is the greateſt gyfte that
 the goddis haue gyuen me. O howe happy is that man,
 3560 that loſeth his lyfe, and leueth behynde hym perpetuall
 memorie? Lette euery man vnderſtande this that wylle,
 and ſaye what they lyſte: that amonge noble and valy-
 aunt barons, he dyeth not, that leſeth his lyfe, and lea-
 ueth good renoume after hym: and moche leſſe tyme ly-
 3565 ueth he that hath an yll name, thoug he lyued many ye-
 res. The auncient philoſophers rekened not the lyfe of a
 man, though he lyued many yeres, but they rekened the
 good werkes that he hadde doone. The ſenate was im-
 portune vppon me, that I ſhulde take this triumphe, as
 3570 ye knowe well: and I can not tell whiche was greateſt,
 their deſire, or my reſiſtaunce. you knowe not the trouth
 why I ſay thus. I dyd it not bycauſe of ambition and for
 couetouſnes of glorie, but it was bicauſe I fere ȳ humain
 malice. At the day of the triumph there was not ſo great
 3575 ioy ſhewed by the ſimple perſons, but the hyd enuye was
 greater

*f. 60, *greater amonge the gretest persons. This glory passeth
 z. als 40) in one day, but enuy abydeth a hole yere. The plentyfulle
 realme of Egypt (so happy in the blodshed of their enmies
 as in the waters of Nyle) had a lawe immouable. They
 neuer denyed their mercy to the captiues ouercome: nor 3580
 they gaue no triumph to their capitayns ouercomers.

¶ The Caldees mocke at the Romain triumphes, affir-
 myng how there is not giuen so great chastisement to the
 capitayne of Egypte ouercome: as the empire Romaine
 giue to the ouercomer whan triumphe is gyuen to hym. 3585
 And surely the reason is good: for the thoughtful capy-
 tayne, whan he hathe chafed his ennemyes, that Rome
 hathe in straunge landes, with his owne proper speare, in
 paymente for his trauayle they gyue hym enmyes in his
 owne proper lande. I swere to you, that all the Romaine 3590
 capitaines haue not left so many enmyes deed by swerde,
 as they haue recouered yll wyllars the daye of theyr try-
 umphes. Let vs leaue the Caldees and speke we of oure
 auntyent Romaines, which if they myghte retorne nowe
 agayne in to the worlde, they wolde rather be teyed faste 3595
 to the chariottes as captiues, than to lyt in them as vyc-
 tours. And the cause is, theyr neighbours feinge them go-
 inge as captiues, wolde moue theyr hertes to set them at
 libertie, so that the glorie of their triumphes is a meane to
 cause them to be persecuted and pourfued. I haue red in 3600
 writinge, and herd of my predeceffours, and haue seen of
 my neighbours, that the haboundaunce of felicitie hath
 caused cruel enuie to be in many. O in what peril are they
 that with particular honor wold be exalted among other?
 In the mooste highest trees the force of wyndes is mooste 3605
 aduanced. And in mooste sumtuous buildynges lighte-
 ning and thonder do the [dothe] mooste hurte, and in greatte
 thycke and drye buffhes the fyres kendle mooste easelye:
 I

(*f. 60^b) *I say that in them that fortune hath reysed moſte highly,
 3610 ageynſt them ſpredeth the greateſt poyſon of enuye. All
 ſuch as be vertuous ſay: The mo ennemies they ſubdue
 to the common welthe: the moo enuious they recouer of
 their renoume. One ought to haue great compaſſion of a
 vertuous man: bycauſe where he trauayleth to be good,
 3615 there abydeſh one thyng in hym, of the whiche all onely
 at the deth he ſeeth the ende. And that is, the more a man
 recouereth here renowme amonge ſtrangers, the more he
 is perſecuted with enuy amonge his owne nations. Ho-
 mer ſheweth in his Illiades, that Caluitio kyng of the
 3620 Argiues was experte in clergie, valiant in armes, and in-
 dued with dyuers graces, beloued of his people, aboue
 all other he was a great louer of his goddis and worſhyp-
 per of them. This good kyng had a cuſtome, that in all
 thynges that he had to do, he wolde fyrſte aſke counſell
 3625 in the temples of the goddis: he wolde begyn no warre
 ageynſt other, nor ordeyne no newe lawe nor cuſtome in
 his realme: nor gyue aunſwere to thambaffadours, nor
 put no treſpaſours to dethe: nor ſet no tribute on his peo-
 ple: but firſt he wolde go to the temple, and make diuers
 3630 ſacrifices, to knowe the wyll of the goddis. And bycauſe
 he went ſo often to the oracles, he was demaunded what
 aunſwere the goddis made to him in ſecrete, ſeing he was
 ſo importunate. Than he answered and ſayd: I demand
 of the goddis that they ſhulde not giue me ſo lyttell, that
 3635 euery man myght abate and ouercome me: Nor alſo that
 they ſhulde gyue me ſo moche, that euery manne ſhoulde
 hate me: but my deſire is to haue a meane eſtate, wher-
 with euery manne myght loue me. For I hadde leauer
 be felawe with many in loue, than to be kyng of all with
 3640 hatred and enuy.

Of

(*f.61) *¶ Of the greate reproche that themperour gaue to his wyfe Fauftine and her doughter. Cap. xxxvi.



After the feastes of the tryumphe afore sayde, this good emperour wyllynge to satysfye his hart, and to aduertise Fauftine his wyfe, and to teche his innocente doughter, withoute knowledge of any other, he sente for theym ³⁶⁴⁵ and sayde: I am not contente Fauftine with that youre doughter dooth, and yet lesse with that you doo, whiche ar her mother. These maydens for to be good maydens ought well to knowe, howe to obey theyr mothers: And the mothers to be good mothers, oughte to knowe howe ³⁶⁵⁰ to brynge vppe theyr chyl dren. The father is excused in gyuyng counsaile, if the mother be vertuous, and the doughter shamefaste. It is a greate shame to the father being a noble man, that his wyfe beyng a woman shuld chastryse his sonne: And a great inconuenience of the mo- ³⁶⁵⁵ ther, beyng a mother that her doughter shulde be chastised by the handes of her father. There was a lawe ordeyned by the Rodyens, that the father with the daughter, if she had a mother, nor the mother with the sonne, if he were a man, shulde not entermedle eche with other, but ³⁶⁶⁰ alonely men with men, and women with women oughte to be brought vp. And theextremyte of the law was suche, that amonge theym that dwelled in one house semed the fathers hadde no daughters, nor the mother no sonnes. O Rome, I wepe not to se thy stretes vn timer, nor that ³⁶⁶⁵ there is so many gutters in thy houses, nor that the batilmentes fall downe, nor thy tymber hewed downe, nor for the mynyshinge of thin habitantes [sic], for all this the time bringethe, and the time bereth away: but I wepe for the and wepe for the agayne, to se the vnpeopled of good fa- ³⁶⁷⁰ thers

R

(*f. 61^b) *thers, and vnprouided in the nourishing of their sonnes.

Our countreye began to faile vtterly, whan the doctrine of sonnes and doughters was enlarged, and their bridell lette go at libertie. For there is nowe such boldnesse in mē
 3675 children, and so lyttell shamefastnes in women children, with the dishonestie of the mothers, that where as one father sufficed for .xx. sonnes, 7 one mother for .xxx. doughters, nowe .xx. fathers scantly dare vndertake to bringe vp well one sonne, and .xxx. mothers one doughter. I lay
 3680 to you thus Faulstine, you remēbre not how you are a mother, you gyue more libertie to your doughter than ought to be suffred. And you Lucille remembre not, how you are a daughter. For you shewe to haue more lybertie than requireth for a yonge mayden. The greattest gyfte that the
 3685 goddis haue gyuen to the matrons of Rome is, bycause they are women, they kepe them self close and secrete: and bycause they be Romainys, they are shamefaste. The day whan the women want the feare of the goddis secretly, and shame of menne openly, beleue me, eyther they shall
 3690 faile the worlde, or the worlde them. The common welth requireth so greatte necessitie, that the women that dwel therein shuld be as honest, as the capitayns to be valiant. For the capitaynes going to warre defende them, and the women that abyde at home conferue them. As a .iiii. yere
 3695 passed ye sawe the great pestilence, and I demanded then to haue accompt of the people, and I founde that of a. C. xl. M. women well lyuyng .lxxx. M. dyed: And of y. M. ylle women in maner they scaped all. I can not telle for whiche I shulde wepe, eyther for the lacke that we haue
 3700 of the good and vertuous women in our common welth, or elles for the greuous hurte and damage that these ylle and wicked women do to the youthe of Rome. The fyre that brenneth in mounte Ethna dothe not so greatte damage

(*f.62)*mage to them that dwelle in Sycille, as one ylle woman doth in the circuit of Rome. A fierse beaft and a peryllous ³⁷⁰⁵ ennemie to the cōmon welth is an yl woman: for ſhe is of power to do moche harme, and is not apte to folowe any goodneſſe. O how many realmes and kynges rede we of, to be loſte by the yll gouernance of women, and to reſiſte agaynſte them hath ben nede of wyſedom, peryls, money, ³⁷¹⁰ force, and worthines of many men. The vices in a womā is as a grene rede, that boweth euery way: but the libertie and diſhoneſtie is as a drie kix that breaketh: in ſuch wife that the more yll they vtter the more vnlykely is the redreſſe therof agein. Behold Fauſtin there is no creature ³⁷¹⁵ that more deſireth honour, and wors kepeth it than a woman. And that this is true, ſe by Juſtice, by orations, by writynge, and other trauayles manne getteth renowme: but (without it be by flatteryng and fayre ſpeakynge) vn- to this houre, by antike writing we can rede of fewe wo- ³⁷²⁰ men or none, that eyther by writynge, redynge, workinge with nedell, ſpynnyng, or by weuyng hath gotten them any great renowme. But as I ſay of one, I ſay of an o- ther. Certaynly of dyuers we rede, by kepyng them cloſe in their houſes, well occupied in their beſynelles, tempe- ³⁷²⁵ rate in their wordes, faythful to their huſbandes, wel ordered in their perſones, peaſible with their neyghbours, and finally beinge honeſte amonge their owne famylie, and ſhamefaſte amonge ſtraungers, ſuche haue attayned great renowme in their lyfe, and lefte eternal memorie of ³⁷³⁰ them after their deth. I woll tel you an antike hitorie as profitable to reſtreyn our vices, as it did than augment vertues, and it is this: The realme of Lacedemoniens (as Plato ſheweth) was at a ſeaſon more diffolute by the vn- thriftines of women than infamed by the crueltie of men: ³⁷³⁵ ſo that of al maner nations they were called Barbariens.

What

R. ii.

(*f. 62 b) *What tyme Grece as a mother called philosophie of philosophers, Lygurge a wife philosopher in knowlege, and a righte iuste kyng to gouerne, partely with his doctryne
 3840 righte profitable, and partly with his pure lyfe made lawes in the sayd realme, wherby he extirped all vices, and planted all vertues. I can not telle whiche of these two were moſte happy, The kynge hauynge ſo obedient people, or els the realme to haue ſo rightfull a kynge. Amōge
 3845 all other lawes for women he made one greatly to be commended: He commanded, that the father that dyed, ſhuld gyue nothing to his doughter. And an other, that neyther lyuinge nor dienge he ſhuld gyue any money to mary her with: to the entent that none ſhulde marye her for her ry-
 3850 ches, but al onely for her goodnes: and not for her beautie, but for her vertues. And where as nowe ſome be vnmarried bycauſe they are poore, ſo then they abode vnmarried bycauſe they were ſhamefull and vicious. O tyme, worthy to be defired, whan maydens hoped nothyng to
 3855 be married with their fathers goodes, but by the vertuous werkes of their owne perſons. This was the tyme callid the golden worlde: whan neyther the doughter feared to be diſherited by the father in his lyfe, nor the father to die ſorye for leauynge her without remedy at his deathe. O
 3860 Rome curſed be he that firſte brought gold into thy hous: and curſed be he that firſte beganne to hurde vp treaſure. Who hath made Rome to be ſo ryche of treaſure, and ſo pore of vertues? who hath made menne wedde vilaynes doughters, and leaue the doughters of ſenatours vnma-
 3865 ried? what hath made that the ryche mans doughter is demanded vnwylyng, 7 the doughter of a pore mā none wylle deſire? what hath cauſed that one maryeth a foole with fyue .C. marke, rather than a wyfe woman with .x. M. vertues? Than I ſaye that in this poynte the fleſhe
 van-

(*f.63)*vanquyfheth the fleſhe, and er euer the vanytie of the ma-³⁸⁷⁰
lice therof is vanquyſhed. How cometh it y a couetous p-
ſone wyll ſooner nowe adays haue a wyfe that is ryche 7
foule, than one that is poore and fayre? O unhappy wo-
men that brynge forthe chyldren, and more vnhappy the
doughters that are borne, which to haue them married no³⁸⁷⁵
ſtore is ſet by the bloode of their predeceſſours, nor the fa-
uour of their frendes, nor the value of their warkes, nor
the beautie of their perſons, nor the cleannes of their life.
O curſed worlde, where the doughter of a good mā with-
out money ſhall haue no mariage. But it was not wonte³⁸⁸⁰
to be ſo. For in the aunciente tyme, whan they treated of
maryages, fyrſte they ſpake of the perſones, and after of
the goodes: not as they do at this houre, in this vnhap-
py tyme: for nowe they ſpeke firſte of goodes, and laſte of
all of the perſone. In the ſayd golden worlde fyrſte they³⁸⁸⁵
ſpeake of the vertues of the perſon was endowed with, 7
whan they were maryed, in ſportynge they wolde ſpeake
of the goodes. Whan Camilla [sic] triūphed vpon the Gau-
les or frenchemen, he had then but one ſonne, and he was
ſuche one, that his perſon merited greate lawdes. And for³⁸⁹⁰
the renome of his father, dyuers kynges deſyred to haue
him to their ſonne: and dyuers ſenatours deſyred to haue
hym to their ſonne in lawe. This yonge manne beinge of
the age of .xxx. yeres, and the father at .lx. he was impor-
tunately ſtyred by his naturalle frendes, and deſyred of³⁸⁹⁵
ſtrange kynges for to mary hym: but alway the olde Ca-
myll repugned the counſel of his frendes, 7 the importu-
nitie of to ſtrangers. Than it was demaunded, why he
determynd not vpon ſome mariage for his ſonne, ſythe
therby ſhulde folowe the reſtefull lyfe of the yonge man,³⁹⁰⁰
and the quietnes of hym ſelfe in his age. He aunſwered:
I wyll not mary my ſonne, bycauſe ſomme offer me ryche
dough-

R. iii.

(*f. 63^b) *doughters, some noble of lygnage, some yonge, and some fayre: but there is none hath sayde to me, I gyue you my
 3905 vertuous doughter. Certaynly Camylle meryted to haue triumph for that he dyd. And he deserued eternall memorie for that he sayd. I say to you Faustine al these wordis, bycause I se you lede your doughter to the Theatres and playes, and do bringe her in to the Capitoll. you put her
 3910 to the kepinge of the swerde players: you suffre her to le the tounblers, and yet you do not remembre, that she is yonge, and you not aged: ye go into the stretes withoute lycence, and play by the ryuers. I fynde no vilany therin nor thynke that your doughter is yl: but I say it bycause
 3915 you gyue occasion, that she shulde not be good. Beleue it Faustine: neuer trust in the case of the fleshe of yong people. Nor haue no confidence in olde folkes. For there is no better way than to flee the occasion of all thinges. For this entent the virgins vestales are closed vp betwene the
 3920 walles, to eschewe the occasions of open places, not to be more lyght and foolyshe, but to be more sadde and vertuous, fleing occasions. The yong shal not say: I am yōge and vertuous, nor the olde shall not say: I am olde 7 broken. For of necessitie the drie flaxe will brenne in the fire:
 3925 and the grene flagge smoke in the flamme. I saye that a man beinge a diamonde enchaced amonge men, yet of necessitie he ought to be quicke and merye amonge women. And as waxe melteth in the heate, we can not denye, that though the wodde be taken fro the fyre, and the ymbres
 3930 quenched, yet neuer the les the stons oftentime remayne hote and brennyng. In lyke wise the flesshe though it be chastised with hote 7 drie maladies, or consumed by many yeres with trauayle, yet concupiscence abideth styl in the bones. What nede is it to blasen the vertues, 7 deny our
 3935 naturalities? Certainly there is not so croked a hors, but yf he

(*f.64) *if he se a mare he wyl bray ones or twife. There is no mā
 so yonge nor old, but let him se yong damoyfels, eyther he
 wyl giue a figh or a wifhe. In al voluntary thinges I de-
 nie not, but that one may be vertuous: but in natural thin-
 ges I confesse euery man to be weake. Whan ye take the ³⁹⁴⁰
 wood fro the fire, it leueth brennyng: Whā somer cometh
 the colde wynter cefseth: whan the see is caulme the wa-
 wes leaue their vehemente mouynge: whan the sonne is
 sette, it beshyneth not the worlde. I wyl say that than, and
 not before the fleshe wyl cease to peyn vs, whan it is laide ³⁹⁴⁵
 in the graue. Of the fleshe we are borne, and in the fleshe
 we lyue, and in the fleshe we shall dye. And therby it folo-
 weth, that our good lyfe shall sooner ende than our fleshe.
 Oftentimes some holosome fleshe for meate corrupteth in
 an vnholosome potte: and good wyne somtyme sauoureth ³⁹⁵⁰
 of the foiste. I say though that the werkes of our lyfe be
 vertuous: yet shall we fele the stench of the weake fleshe.
 I say this Faustine sith age can not resiste the hote enter-
 prise, howe can the tender membres of youth resist it? you
 being the moder, without you go the right way, she being ³⁹⁵⁵
 your doughter can not go the same way. The Romaine
 matrons, if they wyl nourishe their doughters wel, ought
 to kepe these rules. Whan they see, that they wolde goo a-
 brode, than breke their legges, and if they wold be gafing,
 than put out their eies, and if they wyl harken, stop their ³⁹⁶⁰
 eares, if they wyl giue or take, cut of their handes: if they
 dare speke, lowe vp their mouthes: and if they wyl entēd
 any lyghtnes, bury them quicke. For deth ought to be gi-
 uen to an yll doughter: and in stede of presentes and gif-
 tis at her wedding, gyue her wormes: and for her hous a ³⁹⁶⁵
 graue. Take hede Faustine if you wyl haue great ioye of
 your doughter, take fro her the occasiōs, wherby she shall
 be ylle. To vnderfette a hous behoueth dyuers proppes:
 And

(*f. 64^b) *And yf the principalles be take awaye, hit wylle falle
 3970 downe. I telle you, womenne are so fraylle, that with
 keepers with great peyne they can kepe them selfe: and for
 a small occasion they will lose all to gyther. O howe ma-
 ny yll hath there ben, not bycause they wolde be so, but by
 cause they folowed such occasions, the whiche they ought
 3975 to haue eschewed? It is for me to entre into this battayle,
 but yet it is not in me to attayne the vycorie. It is for me
 to entre into the see, yet it lyeth not in my handis to escape
 the perylle. It is in the handes of a woman to entre into
 the occasion, and after that she is therin, hit is not in her
 3980 handes to delyuer her from faute.

¶ Howe themperour couſayled Faustine to eschue
 yll occasions fro her doughter. Cap. xxxvii.

PAraduenture Faustyne ye wyll say to me,
 that none may speke to your doughter Lu
 cille, but yf you here it: nor se her but in
 your syghte, nor hide her, but you knowe
 3985 where: nor make none appoyntment with
 out your knowlege. And atte this howre
 you knowe not, that they that do hate her, 7 wolde her yl,
 what dishonour theyr tongues doo speake of her. Newe
 loue in yonge bloudde in the springinge tyme and flouri-
 3990 shyng in youth, is a poyson that forthewith spredeth into
 euery vayne: It is an herbe that by and by entreth the en-
 trayles: a swownyng that incontinently mortifieth al the
 membres: a pestilence that fleeth the hartes: and fynally
 it maketh an ende of all vertues. I wote not what I say
 3995 yet, al though I knowe what I wyll say: For I wold ne-
 uer blasen loue with my tonge, without I were sore hurte
 in myn vnderstondyng. Ouyde sayth in his boke of the
 arte

(*f. 65) *arte of loue: Loue is I wotte not what: that cometh I wote not whens, who sent it I wote not: it engendreth I wote not how: it is contented I wote not wherwith: it is ⁴⁰⁰⁰ felte I wote not howe ofte, nor I wote not wherfore. And fynally loue taketh rote without breakynge of the fleshe outwarde, or percinge the entrayles inwarde. I wote not what Ouide meaneth hereby: but I trowe whan he sayd these wordes, he was as farre banysshed from hym selfe, ⁴⁰⁰⁵ as I am at this tyme from my selfe. O Fauſtin they that loue together, shewe the signes of their hartis by dyuers ways, and in slepynge they reason and speke: and by signes they vnderſtande eche other. The greatte voyce outwarde is ſygne of lyttell loue inwarde: and the great in- ⁴⁰¹⁰ warde loue kepeth ſilence outwarde. The entrayles with in imbraced in loue, cauſe the tonge outward to be muet. He that paſſeth his lyfe in loue, ought to haue his mouth cloſe. And to the entente that ye ſhall nat thynke that I ſpeake fables, I wyll proue this by ancient histories. ⁴⁰¹⁵

¶ We fynde aunciently, that in the yere ii. .C. and .lx. after the foundation of Rome, Eſtraſco a yonge Romain, that was dombe, and Ueronne a fayre lady of the Latins that was dombe alſo, Theſe two ſawe eche other on the mount Celyoit at a feaſt, and there fel in loue eche with o- ⁴⁰²⁰ ther. And their hertes were as ſoore fixed in loue as their tōges were tied fro wordes: It was a meruaylous thing to ſe them, and feareful to note here. The yonge lady cam fro Salon to Rome: and he went fro Rome to Salon, by the ſpace of .xxx. yeres together, without the witing of any ⁴⁰²⁵ perſone, nor they two ſpake not. Than at the laſt died the huſbande of the lady Uerone, and the wyfe of Eſtraſco, and than they diſcouered their loue, and treted a mariage betwene them, of whom deſcended the noble lygnage of our Scipions: whiche were more lyberalle in the feates ⁴⁰³⁰ of ar-

S

(*f. 65^b) *of armes, than their father and mother were in their tongues. Then Fauptyne marke this thyng: Lyttell aduantage it had ben to haue cut out the tonges of the two dōbe folkes, to haue remedied their loue, and not to haue cut
 4035 out their hartis.

¶ Also I shall tell you of Mafiniffa a worthy knyght of Numedie, and Sopharife a famous lady of Carthage, all only by one fight, as they sawe eche other on a ladder, he declared his desyre vnto her: and she knowing his lust
 4040 breakynge the oores of feare, and lifynge vp the ankers of shame, incontinent rayfed the sayles of their hartes, 7 with the shippes of their psons they ioyned eche to other. Here may we gather howe the first fight of their eies, and knowlege of their persons, and the leage of their hartis,
 4045 and the mariage of their bodies, 7 the pardicion of their estates, and the infamie of their name, in one daye, in one houre, in one moment, and in one steppe of a ladder were agreed. What wyll ye that I say more to this pourpouse? Do ye not know, that Helayne the Greke, and Parys the
 4050 Troyan, of two strange nations, and of ferre countreis, with one onely fight in a temple, their wylles were so knit to gyther, that he toke her as his captyue, and she abode his prisoner. In Paris appered but smal force, and in her but lytell resistence. So that in maner these two yong per
 4055 sons, the one procuring to vanquishe, and the other sufferinge to he [sic] vanquished, Paris was cause of his fathers deathe: and Helayne of the infamie of her husbände, and they bothe of their owne deathes, losse to their realmes, and sclaundre to all the worlde. All this loue caused, one
 4060 onely fyght.

¶ Whan great kyng Alexander wold haue giuē battayle to the Amazons, the quene capitayn of them, no lesse faire than stronge and vertuous, came to a riuer side, and the
 space

(*f. 66)*[space of an houre eche of them behelde other with theyr eyes, without speakinge of any word: and whan they re-⁴⁰⁶⁵ turned to their tentes, the fierfnes was turned into fwete wanton amorous wordes.

¶ Whan Pyrrhe the faithfull defender of the Tarentynes, and renowned kynge of Epirotes was in Italye, he camme to Naples, and he had not bene there but one⁴⁰⁷⁰ day, the same seafon there was a lady in the same citie named Gamalicice, of a high lygnage, and greatly esteemed in beautie: The very same day she was gotten with childe and shamed through out all Italy, and was thrift out of the citie. And after she was delyuered of chylde, she was⁴⁰⁷⁵ flayne by one of her owne bretherne.

¶ Also Cleopatra in the prouynce of Bythynye, in the wod of Sehyn, made a goodly banket or solempne feast to Marcus Anthonig her louer. And though she was not very honest, yet had she with her ryght chaste women: and⁴⁰⁸⁰ thus the banket endurige a great part of the nyght, and the wod beyng thycke, the yong damfels were not so wily to hyde them, but the yonge men Romainys found them: so that of .lx. doughters of senatours .lv. were gotten with chylde among the thycke busshes: which thyng made a gret⁴⁰⁸⁵ sclandre in the people, and augmentyd the infamy of Cleopatre, and minished the honestie of Marc Anthony.

¶ Thus as I haue shewed of a smalle nombre, I coude say of many other. All men are not men, nor all women be not women. I say it bicause I wolde it shulde be said:⁴⁰⁹⁰ lette it touche them that it towche, and lette theym that can, vnderstand me. There be some shyps, y are so lyght, that they will saylle with a lyttell winde: 7 there be some mylles y wyl grinde with a lytel water. I say there be som women so bryttell, that as a glasse, with a fylloppe wyl⁴⁰⁹⁵ breke, and wyl fflyp with a lytel myre. Shew me Faustin, haue

S. ii.

(*f. 66^b) *haue you suffred your doughter to speke but with her vn-
cles, and kept company but with her cofins? I say in this
case, as moche wileneffe hath the mother as the doughter
4100 to renne in peryll. Do you not knowe, that the quicke fire
doth not forbere the wod be it wete or dry, but in likewyse
it consumeth the harde stones? Do you not knowe, that
the hongre exceffiue causeth beastes to deuour with their
tethe the thyng that was bredde in their entrayles? Do
4105 you not knowe that the goddis made a lawe ouer al thin-
gis except on louers, bycause they may not abyde it? And
doubtleffe it is rightwisely [rightw.?] done, that Rome condemneth
not these folyfhe innocentes, bycause they haue none vn-
derstandyng. The goddis giue no peyn to amorous peo-
4110 ple, bycause they are depriued fro reason. Ye knowe whan
I was cenfure there was a yong woman that had a child
by her owne father? and an other that had a chylde by her
sonne, and a niece by her propre vncle, and there was sen-
tence gyuen on them, that the fathers shulde be cast to the
4115 lyons, and the chyl dren buried quicke, and the mothers
were brente in the campe of Mars. The mattier was so
horrible to here, that I myght not endure to se the curfed
men. And I commanded by my decrees, that none shulde
be so bolde to speake in sliche a case any more. And if this
4120 case were fearefull to men, than certaynly the Romaine
matrones ought to lyue chafte. Than if the fire of the
father doo chaufe the doughter, enflame the kynsfolke,
and burne them selfe: Then take hede, if he fynde after,
eyther coufyn or faire sifter, the flames of his cōcupiscēce
4125 wyll not leaue to take holde on her for any parentage. If
this riotous fleshe wyll obey reason, than it may be, that
your doughter may speake liberally with her coufins: but
sith that passion repugneth so moche at reason, I counsel
you, trust not to moche in her bretherne. you se by experi-
ence,

(•f.67)*ence, that the worme that is bredde in the tymbre, eateth the same tymbre: and the moother that are bredde in the clothe, eateth the same clothe. I say that sommetyme a man bringeth vp in his howse some persone, that after taketh his lyfe fro hym. Fauſtine take this that I haue ſayd for a warnyng, and theſe laſt wordis I gyue you for counſel. If you wil kepe your ſelfe fro thought, and your doughter fro peryll, alway let your doughter be occupied with ſome good werkes. Whan the handes are occupied with any good exerciſe, than the harte is voyde fro many ydell and vayn thoughtes. Euery lightnes done in youth breaketh downe a loope of the defence of our lyfe: but ydelneſſe, wherby our enuye entreth, is it, whiche openeth the gate to all vyces. Fauſtine wyll you wite: I ſe dayly the pardition of the yonge Romaine doughters: For as ſoone as they be borne, they preſume to be amorous: they as vnthoughtfull, with the recheleſnes of the father, and wantonnes of the mother, leue the iuſt trauayle, and take vniuſt idelnes. Of ydel motions 7 outragious thoughtis the eies take lycēce without leaue, the mynd altereth, and the will is hurte: and finally thinkynge to be the whyte, that amorous men ſhote at, they remayne as a butte fulle of all vyces. And in concluſion there is nothyng that reacheth the balle of the thought (in this play) than is the hande ſet a worke therwith.

¶ What thought Marcus the emperour toke for the mariage of his doughters. Cap. xxxviii.



Han the good emperour Marc hauynge a clere vnderſtandyng and a quiete wytte, toke right great hede of thinges that were paſte, prudently waying thinges preſent, 7 thynges to come.
Seinge

S. iii.

(*f. 67^b) *inge that the pardicion of princis, lay all in wyll, totally
 4160 giuinge them selfe eyther to strange thinges, forgettinge
 their owne, or els to entende to their owne, nothing regar
 dinge strange thinges. His hert was so agreable to him,
 that neyther the high busynesses of them: nor for all the
 affaires of his house, he wolde not leaue one of thempire
 4165 vnsped. I say this, bycause this emperour Marcus had
 foure doughters, whose names were Lucille, Porfena,
 Matrina, and Domitia. Al resembled their mother in ex
 cellent beautie, but they resembled not their father in ho
 nestie and vertuounes. And though they were in gouer
 4170 nance vnder their maystresses out of his presence, yet he
 had them always in memorie: and the elder they were, the
 more study and thought he toke for them: and whan they
 cam to cōplete age, he studied to finde prouision for them.
 It was a laudable custome, that the doughters of the of
 4175 ficers of the Senate, shulde not marye without lycence,
 nor the emperours doughters without the aduysement of
 the senate. Than it was so, that one of the said princeesses
 his doughters beinge of age, and of wylle to be married,
 her father seinge her importunitie, to accomplyshe her de
 4180 sire, bycause he was lycke, he sente for Fauстыne, that she
 shulde goo and commune in the senate. The whiche with
 all her power she withstode, bycause that secretely she had
 treated for an other mariage for her doughter. And open
 ly she excused her selfe sayinge that her doughter was to
 4185 yonge and tender of aeye: and as the goddis had gyuen
 age sufficient to the father, so had the doughter of yeres.
 Whan the emperour vnderstode this, he called Fauстыne
 to his bedde side, where as he lay and said: Diuers thin
 ges are diffimuled in particular persons, the leste of them
 4190 is not to be suffred in thē that shuld ensigne al other. The
 prince is neuer well obeyed but if he haue good credence
 amonge

*f.68)*among his people. I say this Faustin, bicause you do one thinge in secrete, and say an other openly. Herin fayleth the credence of so high a lady, and putteth inconuenience in the auctoritie of so great an empire. If ye suppose my ⁴¹⁹⁵ good desires be sinister in your hert for the welth of your owne chyldren: howe shuld we hope than in any of your good workes for the childrē of strangers? It semith to you better to giue your doughter to them that demande her of the mother, and to refuse them that the father doth chuse. ⁴²⁰⁰ Certainly bicause ye be a womā, you deserue pardon: but in that you are a mother, you augment your faut. Do you not know that maryages are guided, sommetyme by fortune, and some by vertues and wisedome. Suche as demande the doughters of the fathers, beleue me, their eies ⁴²⁰⁵ ben more vpon their owne propre vtilitie, than vpon the welth of an other. I knowe well, you brynge forth the chyldren, but the goddis will marie them, sith they haue endewed them with so meruaylous beautie. Do you not knowe, that the beautie of women setteth straungers on ⁴²¹⁰ desire, and putteth neyghbours in suspection, to gret mē it gyueth force, to meane men enuie, to the parentis infamie, and peryll to the person selfe? with great payne it is kepte that is desired of many. Of trouth I say the beautie of women is nothyng but a signe for ydell folke: and ⁴²¹⁵ an erly wakyng for them that be lyght: where as of the strange desires lyeth the renome of them self. And I deny not, but that a light person serchith soner a woman with a faire face, thā one of honest lyuing. But I say, that a woman, that is married only for her beaute, maye hope in her ⁴²²⁰ aege to haue a sorie lyfe. It is an infallible reule, that she that was married for her fairenesse, is hated for her fowlenes. O what trauaile he offreth him selfe vnto, that marieth a faire woman? It behoueth hym to suffre her pryde, for

(*f. 68^b) 4225 *for beautilie and foly alway gothe to gyther: also he muste
suffre her expēces. For foly in the heed, and beautilie in the
face bene two wormes that frete the lyfe and wasteth the
goodes: also he must suffre her riottes. For a faire womā
4230 house: also he must suffre her nice mynionnesse: for euery
faire woman wyll passe her lyfe in pleasure: also he muste
suffre her presumption: For euery fayre woman wyl haue
preeminence before all other. Fynallye he that maryeth
with a faire woman, appareyleth hym to a right great ad
4235 uenture: 7 I shall telle you wherfore. Surely Carthage
was neuer so enuirōned with Scipiōs, as the house of a
fayre woman is with lyghte persons. O vnhappy hufbād
whan his spirit is at rest, and the body sleping, than these
lyght persons wyl come about his house, drieng his body
4240 with ieloufy, castyng their eies to the wyndowes, scaling
the walles with ladders or climming ouer, synging swete
songes, playeng on dyuers instrumētes, watchyng at the
gatis, treating with bandes, vncoueryng y^e house, 7 wai-
tinge at euery corner therof. All these thinges, in case they
4245 shote at the pricke of the womans beautilie, they leue not to
shote at the butte of the sorowfull hufbandes good name.
And whether this be true or not, report me to my self, that
married me with your beautilie: and let them wyte of my re-
noume that go so about the citie. I say moche, but truely
4250 I fele more. No man complayneth of the goddes for gy-
uyng hym a foule wyfe, amonge his destenyes. Whyte
syluer is not wroughte but in blacke pytche: and the ten-
der tre is not conferued but by the harde rynde. I say the
man that marieth a foule wyfe, leadeth a sure lyfe: let eue-
4255 ry man chuse as he lysteth: and I say a man that marieth
a faire wife, casteth his good fame at hafard, and putteth
his lyfe in peril. Al the infamie of our predeceffours stode
in

(*f.69) *in none exercyfyng of dedes of armes: and nowe all the paltyme of the Romaine youth is to serue ladies. Whan a woman is famed to be fayre, than euery man gothe thy-⁴²⁶⁰ ther, and taketh great payne to serue her, and the women woll be sene. I saye Fauftine, you neuer sawe a yonge damoyfel Romaine, greatly renoumed in beautie, but either in dede or in suspection there folowed som yl name of her. In that lyttell that I haue redde, I haue harde of dyuers⁴²⁶⁵ fayre women, bothe of grece, Italy, Pärthe, and Rome: and they be not put in remembraunce, bycause they were fayre, but for the greatte perylles and heuy chaunces that by theyr beauties felle in the worlde. For in maner by reason of their excellent beauties they were vyfited in theyr⁴²⁷⁰ owne landes: and by their infamy shamed throughe all the worlde.

¶ Whan the realme of Carthage was flouysshynge in ryches and happy in armes, they ruled the common welth by wyse philosophers, and susteyned it by dyscrete armies⁴²⁷⁵ on the see. Arminius the philosopher was as greatly esteemed amonge them, as Homer amonge the grekes, or Cicero amonge the Romaines: he lyued in this worlde fyxe score yeres and .ii. Of the whiche happy age .lxxx. yeres he ruled quietly as a baron moſte peafible of mynd: and was⁴²⁸⁰ as ſtraunge to women, as familiar with his bokes. Than the ſenate ſeing he was ſo broken with the cōmon welthe, and withdrawen from all naturalle recreations, they deſired hym with greate inſtaunce to be married, bycause that memory myght be had of ſo perfytte a wyſe man in tyme⁴²⁸⁵ to come: and the more importunate they were, the more he reſiſted, and ſayd, I wyll not be married: for if ſhe be foule, I ſhall abhorre her: yf ſhe be ryche, I muſte ſuffre her: yf ſhe be poore, I muſt maynteyn her: if ſhe be faire, I muſt take hede to her: if ſhe be a ſhrew, I canne not ſuffre her:⁴²⁹⁰ and

T

(*f. 69^b) *and the leaſte peſtylence of all theſe, is ſuffycient to flee a M. men. With ſuche wordes this wyfe man excuſed hym ſelfe: and he in his aeye, by reaſon of his great ſtudy, loſt his ſight. And the ſolytarines of his ſwete lyberties con-
 4295 ſtrayned hym to take company of a womā, and ſhe had by him a doughter, of whom deſcended the noble Amilcares of Carthage, cōpetitours of the Scipions of Rome, the whiche ſhewed no leſſe worthynesse in deſe of Carthage, than ours were fortunate to augment Rome.

4300 ¶ Tell me Fauſtine, may not ſuche ſuſpection fall vpon your doughters, though their vertue ſuccour in the peryl, and their honeſtie aſſure their perſons? I wyll diſcouer a ſecrete thyng to you. There is nothyng, that can be ſo quykely commytted, yf a womanne be enuyronned with
 4305 chaſt keepers and feminine ſhamefaſtnes. Stedfaſtly they deſire, and with great leysure they procure theſe thynges, that lyghtly may be atteyned. There is nothyng ſo certayne, but that the welth of an other is matter for the own euyll. And Fauſtine ye knowe, that the moſt honeſt wo-
 4310 menne, by our malyce are moſt deſyred. Certaynely their ſhamefaſtnes and keepyng cloſe, ben arowes in defence of our honeſtie. We rede not that bludde, ryches, nor beautie of the vnhappy matrone Lucrece was the cauſe, that ſhe was deſired: But the clerenes of her viſage, the grauitie of
 4315 her perſon, the pureneſſe of her lyfe, the keepyng of hyr ſelfe cloſe in her howſe, the exercytye of her tyme, the credence amonge her neyghbours, and the great renoume that ſhe hadde amonge ſtraungers, waked the foolyſhe Tarquine to commytte with her aduoultrye by force. What thyngke
 4320 you? Wherof came this? I ſhall ſhewe you. We that be yll, are ſo yll, that as yll we vſe the goodnes of them that be good. This is no faute to the ladyes of Rome, but rather in the immortal goddis. Their cleane honeſtie accuſeth

(*f.70)*feth our cruel malyce. Faustin, you say your doughter is to yonge to be married: Do you not knowe, that the good ⁴³²⁵ father ought to endoctrine his sonnes fro their yong age? and to prouide for his doughters whiles they be yonge. Of a trouthe if the fathers be fathers, and the mothers moders, as soone as goddis haue gyuen them a doughter, forthwith they oughte to fyxe in their hartis a newe ⁴³³⁰ remembrance: and not forget it, tyll they haue prouyded their doughter an hufbād. The fathers ought not to tary for ryches, nor the mothers for high lygnage the better to marie them: So what with the one 7 the other, the tyme passeth, and the doughters waxe aeged: and than after ⁴³³⁵ this maner they be to olde to be married: and to abyde alone, they be maydens: and to serue they be women, they lyue in peyne, the fathers in thought, the parentes in suspicion, that they shuld be lost. O what gret ladies haue I knowen doughters of gret senatours, and not for faut ⁴³⁴⁰ of ryches, nor of vertues in their persons, but all only for flacke of tyme, and driuinge of one houre to an other, so that at laste sodeyn dethe came to the fathers, and no prouidence made for the doughters: So that in maner some were couered vnder the erthe after their deathe, and some ⁴³⁴⁵ buried with forgetfulnes. Eyther I lye, or I haue redde in the lawe of the Rodiens, where as it is written: we cōmande the father in marienge .x. sonnes to trauaylle but one day: but to marie one vertuous doughter lette hym trauayle. .x. yeres, ye 7 suffre the water come to the mouth, ⁴³⁵⁰ sweate droppes of blood, trauayle the stomake, disherite all his sonnes, lose his goodes, and aduenture his person. These wordis in this law were piteful for the doughters, 7 not lesse greuons [sic] to the sonnes. For .x. sonnes by *ȝ* lawe of men ar bound to discouer, 7 to go ouer al the world: but ⁴³⁵⁵ *ȝ* doughter, by *ȝ* good law ought not to go out of *ȝ* hous.

I say

T. ii.

(*f. 70^b) *I say more ouer, that as thinges vnstable threte fallynge
 so lykewise it chaunceth to yonge damselles, whiche thin-
 keth all their time lost and superfluous vnto the daye of
 4360 their mariage. Homere saith, it was the custome of ladies
 of Grece to count the yeres of their lyfe, not fro the tyme
 of their byrthe, but fro the tyme of their mariage. As if
 one demaunded of a Grecian her age, she wolde answere
 .xx. yeres, if it were .xx. yere sith she was married: though
 4365 it were .xl. yeres sith she was borne: Affirming after they
 had a houle to gouerne and to commaunde, that daye she
 begynneth to lyue. The Melon after it is ripe, and aby-
 deth styll in the gardeyn, can not scape, but eyther rotteth.
 or elles must be gathered. I saye the mayden that tarieth
 4370 longe, tyll she be married, can not escape, eyther to be takē
 or infamed. I will saye no more. As soone as the grapes
 be ripe, it behoueth that they be gathered: so it is necessa-
 rie, that the woman that is come to perfite age be married
 and kepte. And the father, that dothe this, casteth perylle
 4375 out of his houle, and bringeth him selfe out of thoughte,
 and contenteth well his doughter.

¶ Of a lyckenes, wherof themperour died, of his
 age, and where he died. Cap. xxxix.

Marcus the Emperour beinge olde, not onely
 by age, but by trauaile and great peines that
 he had taken and suffred in warres: In the
 4380 xviii. yere of his empire, and .lxii. yere of his
 age, and of the foundation of Rome .vi. C.
 and .xl. as he was in Panony nowe called Hongarie, with
 his hoste and Commode his sonne, at a citie called Uen-
 debone, situate vpon a riuer, that had .iiii. M. fire [= fair] houses:
 4385 and beinge in wynter, and the waters great, 7 very weate
 wether

(*f.71)*wether, he beinge in the feldes about the .xxx. day of December: Sodainly vpon a nyght as he went with lanternes about his campe, there toke hym a fyckenes or palsey in one of his armes, so that he coude not welde his speare nor yet drawe his swerde, nor put on his owne clothes. ⁴³⁹⁰ Than this good emperour charged with yeres, and with no lesse thoughtes, and wynter increafynge with manye great snowes, and frefynge of the erthe, there fell on him an other malady called Lytarge, the whiche put the Barbariens in great hardynes, and his holte in great heuy- ⁴³⁹⁵ nes, his perfon in peryl, and .his frendes in great suspect of his helthe. There was done to hym all the experience that coude be founde by medicines, as vnto great princis and lordes is accustomed. And all dyd him no profite: by reason the maladye was greuous, and themperour char- ⁴⁴⁰⁰ ged with yeres, and the ayre of the lande was contrarye to hym, and the tyme helped him nothinge: and also he was not well intended. And as men of worfhyppe do setteth more by their honour than by their lyues, and had rather dye with honour, than lyue dyshonoured, to assure theyr ⁴⁴⁰⁵ honour, they aduenture euery houre their lyues, and had leauer haue one houre of honour, than a .C. yeres of life: So thus this ficke emperour caused him selfe to be borne all about his campe, and went to see the scarmifhes, and wold flepe in the feldes: the which was not without gret ⁴⁴¹⁰ peryll of his lyfe, nor without great trauayle of his persone. Thus on a day the emperour being in a great feuer and letten bloudde, herde a great clamour or noyse in the feld: made by his men that had brought home great quã- titie of fourage, and their ennemies sette on them to ref- ⁴⁴¹⁵ cue it, there was medlynge on bothe parties, the one to beare away, and the other to defende: The Romainys for hungre, dyd what they coude to beare it awaye: And the Hun-

T. iii.

(*f. 71^b) *Hungariens fro whenſe it came, made reſyſtence: They
 4420 medled ſo one with an other, and their debate was ſo cru-
 ell, that there was ſlayne .v. capitayns of the Romaines,
 the worſt of them was more worth than all their fourage
 that they had won. And of the Hungariens were ſo many
 ſlayne, that al the fourage that they had loſt, was not ſo
 4425 moche worth. Certainly conſidering the crueltie that was
 there done, the profite that came therby was very ſmalle
 to the Romaines, ſo that there went but a few away with
 the fourage, 7 of the Hungariens fewer was left to make
 reſyſtence. The emperour ſeing the yl order, and that by
 4430 the reaſon of his bloudde lettyng and feuer, he was not
 preſent at that acte, he toke ſuche a heuynes at his harte,
 wherby he fell into ſuche a traunce, that it was thoughte
 he had ben deade: and ſo he lay .iii. nyghtis and two days
 that he coude ſe no lyght of the ſkye, nor ſpeke to any per-
 4435 ſone. The heate of his ſickenes was greate, and his pey-
 nes greater, he dranke moche and eate lyttelle, he coude
 not ſlepe, his face was yelow, and his mouthe blacke.
 Somtime he lifted vp his eies, 7 oftētymes ioyned his
 handes to gether: He ſpake nothinge, and ſighed many
 4440 tymes. His throte was ſo drie, that he coude not ſpytte:
 his eyes were very ſoore with lobbyng and wepyng.
 It was greate compaſſyon to ſee his dethe: and a great
 plage of confuſyon to his howſe, and alſo the very great
 loſſe of his warre. There durſte no manne loke vpon
 4445 hym, and fewer ſpeake to hym. Panutius his Secre-
 tarie, ſorowyng at his harte, to ſee his mayſter ſo nere
 his dethe, on a nyght in the preſence of dyuers other that
 were there he ſayd to him.

¶ The wordes of Panutius ſecretarie to thempe-
 rour at the houre of his death. Cap. xl.

O Mar-

(*f.72) *



Marcus my lorde, there is no tongue that can
 be styll, nor any hert suffre, nor eies diffimule, 4450
 nor wytte that can permytte it: My bloudde
 congeleth, and my finewes drie, the stones ope-
 nethe, and my fowle wolde passe forthe: the
 ioyntes vnioyne a fonder, and my spiritis are troubled,
 bycause you take not the wise and sage counsaile, the whi 4455
 che ye gaue to other that were symple. I see you my lorde
 die, and I ought to be soore displeased therwith. The so-
 rowe that I fele at my hert is, how you haue lyued lyke a
 wise persone, and at this houre you do lyke a simple man.
 Tenne yere a knight giueth mete to his hors, to thentent 4460
 that he shoulde kepe him fro peryll: and all that the wyse
 man studieth for a longe season, oughte to be to passe his
 lyfe with honour, and to take the deth with great vertue.
 Right dere lorde I demande of you: what proufite is it
 to the maryner to knowe the carde of the see, and after to 4465
 peryshe in a tourment or tempeste? what prouffyte is hit
 to a capitayne to speake moche of warre, and after know
 not howe to gyue battaylle? whatte proufyteth hit to a
 knyght to haue a good hors, and to falle in the strete?
 what profiteth it to teche an other the plain way, and him 4470
 selfe to wander aside? I say what profyted hit the force of
 your lyfe, that you esteemed so lyttell your lyfe, many ty-
 mes sekynge your deathe? And at this howre that you
 haue founde deathe, you wepe bycause it wyll take away
 your lyfe? Whatte thnges [sic] haue I wrytten with myne 4475
 hande beinge your Secretarie, dyuised by your hyghe
 and profounde vnderstandynge, towchyng the stroke of
 deathe? what thyng was it to see the letter, that you sent
 Claudine vpon the dethe of her husbände? what wrote
 you to Anthygone, whan your sonne Ueriffimus dyed? 4480
 wherin your vertue dydde confolate his heuynesse. what
 hygh

(*f. 72^b) *hygh thinges dyd I write in the boke that you sent to the Senate in the yere of the great pestilence: comfortynge them after the great mortalitie passed: wherin you dydde
 4485 shewe them howe lyttell men shulde let by deathe, 7 what profite foloweth therby. And I haue sene and herde you blason dethe in your lyfe, and nowe you wepe, as though you shuld lyue here styll. Syth that the goddis commāde it, and your age requireth it, 7 your lickenes is the cause,
 4490 and nature permitteth it, and fortune consenteth to it, and is the fatall destenie of vs all, than you must nedes dye. The trauayles that come of necessitie, ought with a good courage to be abyden. For the couragious feeleth not so fore the harde strokes, as the weake that falleth or he be
 4495 foughten with. you are but one man, and nat two: and ye ought to haue one deathe and not two. Therfore why wolde ye for one lyfe haue two dethes, enterryng the body, and sleinge the spirite with fighes? After so many perilles of longe lyfe to take a sure porte, wyl ye lyfte vp the
 4500 sayles, and entre ageyne into the swalowe of the see, for to engloutte you? In the see you haue chaced the bulle and scaped his woodnes, and nowe ye refuse to entre into the parke, where you may surely flee him. You make affaute with victorie of your lyfe, and wyl die atteyning the deth.
 4505 you haue fought .lxii. yeres in the campe of miserie, and nowe you feare to entre into your sepulchre: you haue got out of the buffhes and thornes, wherin you were closed: and nowe at this howre you stamble in the faire way: you haue had in certayne the damage of your lyfe, and nowe
 4510 ye put in doubte the proufite of your deathe: you are entred into the campe of defienge of the worlde: and nowe you wolde turne your backe, whan it is tyme to put your handes to armes. Lxii. yere you haue fought agaynste fortune: and nowe you close your eyes, bycause fortune
 wylle

(*f.73) *wyl strike you. I say it bycause that wyllingly you refuse ⁴⁵¹⁵
 this present dethe, the whiche wyll cause vs to haue your
 lyfe passed suspect. What do you hye and myghty prince?
 Why wepe you lyke a childe? 7 why fygh you as one in di-
 spaire? if you wepe bicause ye shal die, why did you laugh
 so moche in your lyfe tyme? For of moche laughynge in ⁴⁵²⁰
 the lyfe tyme cometh moche wepinge at the deth. Wyl you
 do that you can not do? and not be content with that you
 may do: The grounde and pasture that is common, you
 wolde ioyne to your owne, the renowme of the common
 welthe you applyed to your owne heritage. Of a subsidy ⁴⁵²⁵
 or lone you wolde make your perpetuall righte. I wylle
 shewe you who be deed. All be deed and shal dye. And a-
 monge all other you wolde all onely lyue. Wyl ye haue
 that of the goddis that they be goddis for? That is by-
 cause you are mortall, that they make you immortal. And ⁴⁵³⁰
 that you haue for priuilege, whiche they haue by nature?
 I that am but simple, demaunde one thyng of you my
 lorde, that are auncient and wyse: whiche is the greatest
 or least welthe, to dye well or lyue yll? To lyue welle no
 man can attayne certaynly, for hungre, thirst, solitarines, ⁴⁵³⁵
 persecution, yl fortune, sycknesses, and diffauours. This
 can be called no lyfe, but rather deth. If an ancient man
 wolde make a shewe and booste of his lyfe, fro the tyme
 of his birthe to the layinge in his graue, and the body
 to shew all that it hath suffred by dolours, and the harte ⁴⁵⁴⁰
 to discouer all the strokes of fortune: I imagin that the
 goddis wolde haue meruaylle therof, and men wolde be
 abashed therof, that the body coude suffre so moche, and
 the herte beare it. I hold the grekes wisest, for they wepe
 whan their childerne are borne, and they synge whan an ⁴⁵⁴⁵
 olde man dyeth: but the Romayns synge at the byrthe of
 their chyldren, and wepe whan they dye olde. Certaynly
 to

U

(*f. 73^b) *to laugh at the deth of them that die olde, fith they dye to
 laugh: and to wepe at the birth of children, fith they are
 4550 borne to wepe, and that lyfe abyde the sentence of ylle:
 than it approueth that the dethe is good. Wyll you that
 I saye one veritie to you, I haue alwayes sene, that the
 counsell in the wyfist mā sonest faileth him. Such as wold
 gouerne al thinges by their opinions, of necessitie in some
 4555 or in the moste parte they do erre and fayle. O Marc my
 deere lorde, wene you, that haue caused to burye so ma-
 ny, that some shulde not burye you in lyke wyfe [lykew.>?] As you
 haue sene the ende of their dayes, other shal se the ende
 of your yeres. Therefore me semeth it were better for you to
 4560 dye, and to go your way to attayne so moche welth, than
 to scape and to lyue in so moche myserie. If you fele deth,
 I haue no meruayle fyth you are a man. But I meruayle
 that you do not diffimule hit, fith you are discrete. They
 that haue clere vnderstandyng fele many thinges at their
 4565 herte, that putteth them to payne, whiche they shewe not
 outwarde, for the presumption of honour. If al the poy-
 son that is in a heuy harte were sprede abroad in the weke
 fleshe by smalle greynes, no walles shulde suffyse vs to
 rubbe, nor our nayles to scratche. For certaynly the dethe
 4570 is but a play, wherin the player, if he be apt, aduentureth
 but lyttell to wyne moche, and they that play may se wel
 that this is a wily play, and not of strength. And that al-
 so as well they lese that haue but a smalle carde, not fea-
 ryng deathe, as they that with a great carde loueth long
 4575 lyfe? [sic] What thinge is dethe but a trappe dore, wherin the
 tent is closed, in the whiche is solde al the miseries of our
 lyfe? Thus the goddis do change vs from an olde fylthy
 house into a newe. And what other thing is the sepulchre,
 but a castelle, wherin we be closed against the assautes of
 4580 the lyfe. Of trouth you ought more to couete to take that
 you

(*f.74)*finde at your deth, than the hurt of that you shall leaue in your lyfe. I demand of you, what is it that doth you most peyne in lefyng of the life? if you peine your selfe for Helie Fabrice your wife, bycause you leaue her yonge. werye not your selfe, for she is wel thought on in Rome, for any peryll of your lyfe. And as sone as she knoweth it, I am in certayne she wyll not wepe moche, though you go your way. Thā you ought not to wepe, for leuing of her. These yonge damoyfels married to old men, haue euer their eies fixed in the deth of their husbandis. And holly fasten their hartes on him that they thinke to mary with agein. They wepe with their eies, 7 be glad in their hartes. And truste not though she be an empreffe, and can not fynde an other emperour to be her husbände, yet she wil finde som other. For if they be so determined, they wyll chāge their robes of satyn for a gowne of cloth. For I dare welle saye, they more desire a yōge sheparde, than an olde emperour. And you care for your children, whom ye must leaue behynd you: I can not tel why you shulde do so. For if your deth be displeasent to them, moch more displeaseth them ȳ you lyue so long. It is great peyn to a child, without he desire the dethe of his father, if he be pore than it is for fere how they shuld be maynteyned: if he be ryche, than bicause he shall be his heire. They singe and you wepe: you fere the deth 7 wepe bicause you leue your life. Do you not know, that after the nyght cometh the dewy mornyng: 7 after ȳ comith the bright son: 7 after the son cometh a derk cloude and after again cometh faire wether, 7 after that cometh lightninge 7 thonder: 7 then agein clere aire? Also I say, that after infancy cometh childhode, thā cometh youthe, age after that, and so at last cometh dethe, and after dethe fearefull hope of a sure lyfe. Sir beleue me in one thinge: The beginninge, the meane, and the ende euery mā hath.

Cer-

U. ii.

(*f. 74 b) *Certainly if you had ben takē as the floure fro the herbe:
 4615 if you had ben cut grene fro the tree, if you had ben graf-
 fed in primetime: if you had ben eaten in the lowrenes of
 the vyne: I meane if in the firste youthe, whan lyfe was
 at the swetest,*if dethe had come and knocked at the gate,
 ye shulde haue had cause to be sorie: but as now the wal-
 4620 les are weake, and redy to fall, and the flowre wythered,
 and the berie putrified, the speare fulle of mosse, and can
 not drwae[sic] the knife out of the shethe: Herin you haue de-
 fired the worlde, as if you had neuer knowen the worlde.
 Lxii. yere you haue ben prifoner in the dongeon of the bo-
 4625 dy: and nowe the shakils or giues shulde be taken frome
 you, you complayne: you lorde wold make newe of other
 newes. He that thinketh it not sufficiente to lyue .lxii. ye-
 res in this dethe, or to dye in this lyfe, he wyll not be con-
 tent with thre score thousande.

4630 ¶ Auguste the emperour sayde, that after that men had
 lyued .l. yeres, they ought to die, or elles cause them to be
 flayne, bycause that vnto that tyme is the felicitie of mā.
 All that euer one lyueth beyonde y tyme, the pore old mā
 passeth his tyme in heuines, in greuous aches, deth of his
 4635 children, 7 losse of his goodes, in importunities of his chil-
 derne in lawe, burienge of his frendes, susteyninge pro-
 cesse, payinge of dettis, and other infinite trauailes: So
 that it were better with his eies closed to abyde theym in
 his graue, than with his eien open to abyde theym in his
 4640 lyfe dayes. Certaynly it is a fortune of all fortunes, and
 he is right priuie with the goddis, that at .l. yere leaueth
 his lyfe. For al the time that he liueth after is in decaying
 and neuer vpryght, but rollynge, relyng, and redy to fall.
 O Marc my dere lorde do you not know, that by the same
 4645 way that lyfe gothe, cometh dethe? It is .lxii. yere that ye
 haue foughte the one from the other. And whan ye wente
 fro

(*f.75)*fro Rome, where as you left your house, and went to Il-
 lirike, where you lefte a greate pestilence: and nowe you
 are retourned into Hungarie. Do you not knowe, that as
 soone as you were borne to gouerne the erthe, incontineēt ⁴⁶⁵⁰
 dethe issued out of his sepulchre to fynde your lyfe? And
 if you haue honoured ambassadours of the straunge kin-
 ges, moche more ye ought to honour deathe, that cometh
 fro the goddis: what lordeship can be lost in this lyfe, but
 you shall finde greater in the deathe? Are you not remē- ⁴⁶⁵⁵
 bred whā Uulcan my sonne in lawe poysoned me, bicause
 he desired my goodes more than my lyfe. Thanne you my
 lorde for loue that you had to me, gaue me comforte and
 counsell, for the deth of my sorowful youth: and you said
 to me, the goddis were cruell in killynge of them that be ⁴⁶⁶⁰
 yonge: and pitiefull, whan they burie them that be olde.
 And also you sayde to me: Comforte thy selfe Panutius:
 For if thou dydst lyue to dye, now than thou diest to lyue.
 Therefore right high and myghty prince, I say to you, as
 you sayde to me: and I counsell you as you counsayled ⁴⁶⁶⁵
 me: and that you gaue me, I gyue you agayne. Finally
 of this repinge take the best in worth, 7 let the rest abide.

¶ Howe the emperour demanded to haue in writinge
 all that the Secretarie had sayde. Cap. .xli.



And as of the contentynge of the wylle often-
 tymes procedeth helthe and ease of the bodye,
 the emperour was wel satisfied with the wor- ⁴⁶⁷⁰
 des of Panutius, whiche he eloquently vtte-
 red, and with profounde counsell, hardily and
 familiarly, and in due tyme, as a good frende. Great cō-
 passion it is to them that wold die, whā it is shewed them
 what they ought to do. For of them that be about the bed, ⁴⁶⁷⁵
 some

U. iii.

(*f. 75 b) *fomme robbe him of his money, fomme ferue nim well,
 fome holde the place to be his heire, fomme gapynge for
 giftes, fomme wepe for losse of him, fomme alfo laugh for
 the gaynes by his deathe, and fo in this maner the poore
 4680 pacient hauynge many lokinge for their profyte, hath no
 body to counfell him. we fe daily that feruantes whā they
 fe the going out of the cādel of lyfe, care not for the clēfing
 of their lordes vices. And therof cometh, that as fone as
 he is deed, ftreight way beginneth to ftinke. And fo I fay
 4685 that the ende of his lyfe is the beginnunge of his infamy.
 All they that were there, as well the olde feruantes as the
 newe, belonginge to themperour, capitayns of warre and
 other, were not a lyttell abafhed of the fayenge of Panu-
 tius, and they all allowed his fayenge, and faide he was
 4690 worthy to haue the gouernaunce of thempire. The good
 emperour all the feafon that Panutius fpake, wept with
 depe fighes fro his herte. And bycaufe he was fo fore gre-
 ued, he coude not forthwith giue him an anfwere: At the
 laft he commanded Panutius to gyue him in writinge all
 4695 that he had fayde, to thentent that he myght ftudy theron.
 For he faid, it was no reſon, to forget thinges ſo well ſaid.
 So al the reſt of that nyght the Secretarie occupied him
 ſelfe to put in writing the ſame ſayinge: and the next day
 he delyuered it to themperour, whiche toke it and loked
 4700 theron all the day: and kept it ſtyl in his handis, and oftē
 times redde theron, And the next nyght themperour ſente
 for the Secretarie, 7 in open audiēce he ſaid as foloweth.

¶ The anfwere of themperour to Panuti9. Ca. xlii.

HAppy was the mylke that thou ſuckedſt in Dacie, 7
 the bread that dyddeſt eate at Rome, and the lernyng
 4705 that thou haddeſt in Athenes, and thy bringyng vp in my
 hous.

(*f. 76) *hous. For in my life thou haste wel serued me, and at my dethe thou haste well counsayled me. I commande Commodus my sonne to rewarde the for thy good seruice. And I pray the goddis to recompence the for thy counsel. The reward for diuers seruices a mā may make: but y^e rewarde ⁴⁷¹⁰ for good counsel al the goddis had nede to do. The gretist reward that one frende may do to an other, is in a great 7 weightie matter to succour him with good counsell. Al y^e trauailes of the worlde are weightie, but the trauayle of dethe is the weightiest: all be perillous, but that is moſte ⁴⁷¹⁵ perillous: all ben great, but this is the gretest: al thingis hath an ende at laſt by deth, ſaufe only deth, whole ende is vnknowē. He that is hurt with deth, is as he y^e is ficke of the ſleeping euill, hauing a quicke vnderſtanding, 7 yet he knoweth no man, 7 many thinges beinge offered to him, ⁴⁷²⁰ he can determine vpon none. yet againe I ſay, he is a true and faithfull frende, that in ſuche time wil giue good counsell to his frende. Al they that here this that I ſay, wil ſay that it is true. But I ſweare that no man can knowe hit perfutely, but he that is in caſe that I am in, redy to dye. ⁴⁷²⁵ Lxii. yere hath ben the cours of my lyfe, and nowe deathe commaundeth me to cloſe myn eies, 7 to folowe the cours of deth. Moreouer as thou knoweſt not the infirmitie, ſo thou approcheſt not to the cure and helthe. The dolour is not there as thou haſt made defenſiues, it is not the fiſtu- ⁴⁷³⁰ la where againſt thou haſt giuen cautere, it is not ageinſt opilations that thou haſt giuen ſiropes, it is not in y^e veynes y^e thou haſt giuen me incifion: Thou haſt not wel healed the wounde that thou haſt ſtiched me. I ſay that thou muſt entre further in me to knowe perfutely myne acceſſe. ⁴⁷³⁵ The ſighes that procede fro the botom of my hert can not be vnderſtanden with heringe of them: the goddis alonly know y^e thoughtis of y^e hart. Alſo diuers thingis are in me
that

(*f. 76^b) *that I knowe not of my felfe, no more than that is with-
 4740 out me. O Panutius thou accufest me that I feare dethe.
 To feare it greatly, I deny it: but I confesse to feare it as
 a man. Certaynly to denie that I feare nat dethe, than I
 muſte denye that I am not made of fleſhe. We ſe that the
 Olyphant feareth the lyon, and the beare feareth the oly-
 4745 phant, and the wolfe feareth the beare, and the ſhepe fea-
 rethe the wolfe, and the ratte the catte, and the catte the
 dogge, and the dogge the man, and all onely their feare
 is, that they drede to be flayne. Than if theſe brute beſtis
 reſuſe dethe, not fearinge the fyghtyng with furious ſpi-
 4750 rites, nor the enioyenge with the goddis: howe moche ra-
 ther than ought we to feare the dethe. For we are in doute
 to be torne in pieces with the furies in their peynes, or to
 be receyued in pleaſure with the goddis. Therefore I ſay,
 that of naturall feare of deathe, I haue ouercome with
 4755 the bridell and lyberties of reaſon. Thinkeſt thou Panu-
 tius, that I ſe not my graſſe waſted, and my grapes ga-
 thered, that my houſe breaketh, and that I haue nothing
 lefte but the ſtocke of the grapes, the ſkinne of the fleſhe,
 and but one onely blaſte of all my lyfe. Thou ſeeſt welle
 4760 that by the tokens the exerciſe is ſene. And nettes be caſte
 in the riuers, and in the parkes bulles ben chafed. I do
 ſay that the rumour of deth holdith in ſauetie the lyfe that
 is in me, at this houre redy armed ageinſt dethe. I make
 battayle with deathe, at this houre baraine and naked of
 4765 lyfe: and ſo redy to entre into the ſepulchre: at this houre
 I ſhall entre into the campe, where as I ſhall not be go-
 red with bulles, but ſhall be eaten with wormes: and fy-
 nally I ſhall go fro whens I can not flee. Thus I hope
 abydinge dethe. And this I ſay bycauſe you ſhall knowe
 4770 that I knowe it, and that thou ſhalt fele that I fele. And
 to the entent thou lyue vnbegiled I will tell the a ſecrete.
 The

(*f. 77, *secrete. The nouelties that thou hast sene in me, as in abhorringe of meate, bereuyng of slepe, leuyng alone, we-rynes of company, drownyng in fighes, and pastyme in wepyng: Thou mayst well thinke, what turment ought ⁴⁷⁷⁵ to be in the see of my harte, whan suche tremblynges and motions of erthe and reynes are set in the erthe of my body. Shal I shew y, wherfore my body is in this thought, and my herte in suche trouble? The cause why I suffre dethe so greuoufely, is that I leaue my sonne Commode ⁴⁷⁸⁰ in this lyfe in a perillous age for him, and suspecious for thempire. By the floures the frutes are knowen, and the vines in burgenyng: by the colt the hors is knowen, whether he shall be meke or stubborne for labour or cariage: 7 in the youthe the yonge man is knowen: and by the lytell ⁴⁷⁸⁵ that I se in my lyfe by my sonne Commode, I feare me it wyll be lesse after my deth. Thou knowest not why I say thus. And I say it not without cause: for my sonne Commode is very yonge, and yet yonger in wytte. He is of an yll inclination, but he be forced: he gouerneth hym selfe ⁴⁷⁹⁰ by his owne wytte and vnderstādyng, as though he were a man of experience: he knoweth but lyttelle, and careth for nothyng. Of the tyme passed he hath no knowlege: all onely he occupieth hym selfe with the tyme present: Finally by that I se with myn eies, and thinke in my herte, ⁴⁷⁹⁵ I feare me the persone of my sonne shall be in peryll, and the memorie of his fathers house perysshe. Faustyne his mother hath fostred hym to delycatly: and by a harde stony ground he hath a great way to go. He entreth as now alone into the pathe of youth without any guyde. I fere ⁴⁸⁰⁰ he shall go out of the right waye, and wander in the bulhes and thornes of vices. O Panutius harken what I say, I say it not without teares: thou seest that my son remayneth riche, yonge, and at libertie. Ryches, youthe, folyta-

(*f. 77^b) 4805 *folitarines, and libertie ben .iiii. pestilences, that enpoy-
 soneth the prince, and wafte the common welth: it fleeth
 them that be alyue, 7 infameth them that be deed. Beleue
 me one thinge: dyuers graces are requisite to lusteyn di-
 uers vertues. With the fairest women the brothel houles
 4810 are peopled, the mooste vilaynes are made ruffiens: the
 mooste hardye are robbers in woddes: the quickest of vn-
 derstandynge ofte proue fooles: and the mooste subtylle
 becom theues. I say that such as are clothed with dyuers
 graces of nature, lacke the furies of acquired vertues.
 4815 We may say, they hold in their hādes a knyfe, wherwith
 they stryke and hurte them selfe: fire on their shoulders,
 wherwith they bren: and a corde about their necke, wher-
 with they hange: daggers at their stomacke, wherwith
 they are flayne: thornes at their feete, wherwith they are
 4820 pricked: a stony way afore their eies, where they stumble,
 and stomblynge fall, and fallynge they lese their lyfe, and
 wyne dethe. The great trees of whom we haue fruite in
 wynter and shadowe in sommer, first is planted the rotes
 fast in the entrayles of the erthe, or euer their waueringe
 4825 boughes are aduentured in the wynd. Marke Panutius
 marke well. The man that from his youth hath set before
 hym the fere of the goddis, and the shame of men, is ha-
 bited in vertues: 7 he that accompanyeth with them that
 be vertuous, mainteyneth trouth to euery mā, and lyueth
 4830 without preiudice of any man. Malicious fortune maye
 somtyme cleue the barke of the welth of suche a tree, wy-
 ther the floure of his youthe, breake the leaues of his fa-
 uour, gather the fruite of his trauaylle, breake downe a
 bough of his offices, 7 bowe down the height of his cou-
 4835 cell: yet for all the strokes that the wynde can strike, it can
 not be plucked vp by the rote. Certaynely the sonne that
 the father hath endewed with graces, and the sonne appli-
 enge

*f. 78) *enge hym in vices, ought not to be borne in this worlde:
 7 if he be borne, to be buried quicke. For the fathers sweate
 by day, and watche by nyght, to leue honour to their chil- 4840
 dern, whiche the fathers bye of the goddis with fighes, 7
 the mothers delyuered of them with peyne, and bring thē
 vp with trauayle: and the chylde proueth so, that he gy-
 ueth greuous age to the father in his lyfe, and great infam-
 y after his deth. I confider wel, that the prince Comode 4845
 being yonge and I olde, ageinst his wyl forbare vices: 7
 I fere me that after my deth he wyl hate vertues. I remē-
 bre diuers of his aēge haue enherited the empire, whiche
 were so hardy in their lyues, that they deserued to be cal-
 led tyrantes after their dethes. Exāple of Denys renow- 4850
 med tirāt of Sycill, which hired them that coude inuent
 vices, as our Rome rewardeth them ȳ conquere realmes.
 What gretter tyranny can be in a tyrāt, than to make most
 priuie to him thē that be vicious? Also I forget not ȳ four
 kingis, that succeded after gret Alexander, as Ptholome, 4855
 Anthioco, Siluio, 7 Antigonus, which the grekes called
 great tirantis: al that Alexāder had gotē with renoumid
 triūphes, they lost by their vicioufnes. And in this maner
 the world ȳ Alexāder had deuided among them .iiii. came
 to the hādis of mo than foure .C. for Antigonus set so litle 4860
 by that had cost his lord Alexāder so moch, 7 was so light
 in his age, 7 so bold in his realme, ȳ in mockery in ȳ stede
 of a crowne of gold, he ware a garland of Iuie: 7 in stede
 of a sceptre, he bare a thyftle in his right hand: and after
 that maner he wold fyt among his men, 7 whan he spake 4865
 to strangers. I lay shame to the yong man so to do, but I
 meruaile that the sadde and wylse men of Grece suffred it.
 ¶ I remēbre also Caligula the .iiii. emperour of Rome,
 a yonge man, in whose tyme it was harde to knowe, whi-
 che was the greater, eyther the disobediēce of the people 4870
 to their

X. ii.

(*f. 78^b) *to their lorde, or the hatred that the lorde bare to the people. And this yonge prince went so farre out of the waye in his youthe, and was so farre wyde from reason in his tyrannies, that euerye man studyed howe to take his lyfe
 4875 from hym: 7 he studied to flee euery man. He wrote these wordes in a table of golde: Wolde to god that all Rome hadde but one heed, to the entent that with one stroke I myght strike it of.

¶ I also remembre Tyberie, sonne adoptiue of good Auguste, called August, bycause he augmented Rome. But
 4880 this good olde prince dyd not so moche augment it in his lyfe, but this yonge successeur destroyed it moch more after his deathe. The hate that the Romaine people had agaynste Tyberie in his lyfe was ryghte well shewed after
 4885 his dethe. For the same day that he died, or whan he was flayne, the people made dyuers proceffions, and the senators offred great gyftes in the temples, and the priestes offred great sacrifices to their goddis, to thentēt that they shulde not receyue the soule of the sayd Tyberie into their
 4890 glorie: but to sende it to the furies of Hell.

¶ Also I mynde Patrocle the seconde kyng of Corynthe, whiche enherited the realme beinge but .xvi. yere of age, and he was so vicious of his body and so lyberall of his mouthe, that where as his father helde the realme .lx.
 4895 yere, he possessed it but .xxx. days.

¶ Also the auncient Tarquin the proude, the .vii. kyng of Rome, whiche was right goodly in gesture, ryght valyant in armes, and of a clene bloudde, as an vnhappye prince defyled all his vertues with noughty lyuynge: in
 4900 such wife that he conuerted his beautie into lechery, his power into tyrāny, for the villanie that he dyd to Lucrece the chaste lady of Rome: wherby he lost not onely his realme, but the name of Tarquin was banysshed for euer
 out

(*f.79)*out of Rome.

4905

¶ I remembre cruelle Nero, whiche enherited and dyed yonge: 7 in him ended the memorie of the noble Cefars: and by hym was renewed the memorie of Antygones the tyrantes. Whom thinkest thou this tirant wolde suffre to lyue, whiche flewe his owne mother? Tel me I pray the, 4910 what harte is that of a chylde, to flee his owne mother, to open the brestes that he sucked, to shed the bloode of her that nourished hym in her armes, and to beholde the entayles, wherin he was fourmed? What thynkeste thou, that he wolde not haue done, sith he commytted suche an 4915 yl dede? The day that Nero flew his mother, an oratour sayd in the senate, that Agrippine his mother had deserued deth for chyldyng suche a childe in Rome. These thre dayes that thou haste sene me so altered in my mynde, all these thynges came before me: and I haue drawen them 4920 into the depenes of my harte, and disputed them. This sonne of myn holdeth me in the gulse of the see, betwene the wawes of feare, and the ankers of dispaire, hopynge that he shulde be good, bycause I haue nourished hym well, and fearynge that he shulde be ylle, bicause his mother Faustine hath brought hym vppe wantonly, and the yonge man is inclyned to yll. And as ye se a thyng made by artifice peryshe, and a naturall thing laste: I am in great feare that after my dethe he wyll tourne that waye that his mother hath childed hym, and not as I haue no- 4930 rished hym. O how happy were I, if I had neuer a child to leue behynde me to be emperour? Then a chyld myght be chosen amonge children of good fathers, and I shulde not haue ben troubled with him that the goddis haue gyuen me. Panutius I demaunde one thyng of the, whe- 4935 ther thou callest moſte fortunate Uaspasian the naturall father of Domitian, or els Nerua the father adaptife of Traian?

X. iii.

(*f. 79^b) *Traian? Uaspasian was good, and Nerua very good, 7
 Domitian was of all other mooste cruelle, and Traiane
 4940 the myrrour of all clemency. Thē regard how Uaspasian
 in the fortune to haue children was vnhappy, and Nerua
 in the mysfortune to haue children was happy. I knowe
 not why these faders desire to haue children, sith they ben
 the occasion of so moche trauayle. O Panutius, I wylle
 4945 say one thing to the, as a frende to a frend (as thou knowest
 wel we be in this worlde) I haue lyued .lxii. yeres, in
 whiche tyme I haue redde many thinges, and haue herd,
 sene, desired, atteyned, possessed, suffred and rested moch,
 and nowe at this tyme I must dye: and of al thing I shal
 4950 beare nothyng away, bycause both it and I are nothing.
 Gret besynes the hart hath to serche for these goodes, and
 great trauayle to come to them: but without comparison
 the greatest dolour is at the houre of the deth to departe
 and leaue them. what greater disease can be to the body,
 4955 than sodeynely to be surprised with ennemies? what per-
 rille of the see or losse of frendes can be egalle, to se a ver-
 tuous man drawe to his deathe, to leue the sweate of his
 face? the auctoritie of the empire, the honour of his per-
 sone, the company of his frendes, the remedye of his det-
 4960 tours, the rewardinge of his seruantes, and to leaue it to
 a chylde, that hath not merited it, nor hath not the power
 to wyl to merite it.

¶ In the .ix. table of the lawes were these wordis writtē:
 We cōmaunde and ordeyne, that euery father, who in the
 4965 opinion of all men is good, shall disherite his sonne that
 is yll in euery mans opinion. Also euery chylde, what so
 euer he be, that disobeyeth his father, and robbeth any tē-
 ple, or hurte any wydowe, so that she blede, flee fro the ba-
 tayle, or do any treason to a stranger, who so euer is foude
 4970 in any of these fyue cases, lette him be banyshed for euer
 the

(*f.80) *the habitation of Rome, and cast out fro the heritage of his father.

¶ In good sothe this lawe was good, and in the tyme of Quintus Cincinate hit was ordeyned, and nowe by vs whiche be vnhap[py], it is cleane lefte and forgotten. Panutius without doubte I am wery to speake, and also I haue suche an impediment in my stomake, that I wante bréthe: or elles I coulde shewe the all by order, yf myne vnderstondynge fayled me not, howe many Parthiens, Mediens, Affyriens, Caldiens, Indyens, Egypcyens, Hebrewes, Grekes, and Romaines haue lefte their chyl-
dren poore, and myght haue left them ryche: and al was bicause they were vicious: and other childerne that were very poore, were lefte ryche, bycause they were good and vertuous. I swere to the by the immortall goddis, that whan I came fro the warres betwene the Parthiens and Rome, and that the tryumphe and glorie was gyuen to me, and my sonne confirmed to be emperour: I wolde the Senate hadde lefte me my sonne Commodus poore with all his vyces, and that I hadde made the Senate heire 7 lorde to the empire: and to haue chaastyfed hym to the exaump[le] of all the worlde. I wyll that thou knowe, I shall carie fyue thinges with me out of this worlde intermedled, the whiche is great sorowe to my harte: The fyrste is, that I haue not determyned and iudged the plee and proceffe of the noble wydowe Drusia with the Senate, seinge that she is very poore, and hathe no bodye to doo her Iustyce: The seconde is bycause I do not dye in Rome, to the intent that I myght cause to be cried and proclaymed euery where in Rome er I dyed, to wyte if any complayned on me: the thyrd is, that where as I dyd flee .xiiii. tyrantes that vndyd the countreye, that I had not as well banyshed all the Pirates that kepte the sees: the

(*f. 80^b) *the fourth is, that I left my dere sonne Ueriffimus deed :
 5005 and the .v. that I haue lefte alyue, as heire to the empire
 my sonne Commodus. O Panutius the greattest happe
 that the goddis can giue to a man (not couetous but ver-
 tuous) is to gyue hym renoume in his lyfe, 7 and a good heire
 to conferue him after his deathe. Fynally to conclude, I
 5010 pray to the goddis, if I shall haue any parte with them,
 that if by my sonnes offences Rome be sclaundred and
 my renoume mynished, and my hous lost by his lyfe, that
 they wyll take away his lyfe yet or I dye.

¶ What themperour sayde to the maysters of his sonne,
 and to the rulers of thempire. Cap. xliii.

5015 **I** Se you auncient fathers 7 noble Ro-
 mayns, and ryght faythfull seruantes
 take payne and sorowe for that I must
 yelde me to dethe, and leaue this lyfe,
 and treate with my sepulchre. Ye sorow
 for my sorowe, ye are turmented with
 5020 myn anguyfhe, 7 peyned for my peine:
 it is no meruaylle. For the clere vnderstondynge of the
 pure blod of true and faythful frendes, is to double their
 trauayles and to wepe for other: if one brute beaft morne
 for an other, moche more ought one humayne creature so-
 5025 rowe for an other. And this I say, bycause I know by the
 teares of your eyes, the felynge of your hartes. And lyth
 that the greattest rewarde for any benefyie [sic] is to know it,
 and thanke the partie therof: as moche as I can I thāke
 you. And if my weake thanks be not correspondent to
 5030 your pitiefulle wepynge, I require the goddis after they
 haue taken away my lyfe, to rewarde you for my duetie.
 It is greatte pleasure for the familie to knowe their mai-
 ster

(*f. 81) *fter go with the goddis, and great peyne to hym to leaue them. For company of many yeres is loth to leue the life. In my lyfe tyme I haue done with you as I ought to do, ⁵⁰³⁵ and as nowe I muft do as I may. The goddis wyl take my foule away, Comodus my fonne the empire, the fepulchre my bodye, and ye my fpeciall frendes my herte. And lothly it is reafon, that fith ye were in the lyfe my hartis, that it be yours after my dethe. And in that I wyll fpeake ⁵⁰⁴⁰ more particuler this night fhall be our reafonyng. Nowe my harty frendes ye fe, that I am come to the ende of my lafte iourney, and to the begynninge of my firfte iourney with the goddis. It is reafon, that fyth I haue loued you in tyme pafte, that ye beleue me nowe. For the tyme is com ⁵⁰⁴⁵ that ye can demande nothyng of me: nor I haue nothing to offre you: nor myn eares as now can not here flateries, nor my herte fuffre importunities: yf ye neuer knewe me, knowe me now. I haue ben he that I am, and am he that hath ben, in tymes pafte lyke vnto you, fomewhat: nowe ⁵⁰⁵⁰ ye fe I am but lyttell, and within a lyttell whyle I fhall be nothyng. This daye fhall ende the lyfe of Marke your frende, this daye fhall ende the lyfe of Marc your parent, this day fhall ende the fatall deftenies of Marc your lord, this day fhall ende the fignorie of Marke your emperour, ⁵⁰⁵⁵ and this day fhall ende his empire. I haue vanquyffhed many, and nowe I am ouercome with deth: I am he that hath caufed many to dye, and I can not as now gyue my felfe one day of lyfe: I am he that hath entred into chariottes of golde, and this day I fhall be layde on a biere ⁵⁰⁶⁰ of wodde: I am he for whome many haue longe merily, and this day they wepe: I am he that hath had company in all exercitees, and this day I fhall be gyuen to hungry wormes: I am Marcus greatly renoumed, that with famous triumph mounted into the high capitolle, and this ⁵⁰⁶⁵ daye

Y

(*f. 81^b) *day with forgetfulnes I shal discende in to the sepulchre.
 I se nigh with myn eies, that was farre hyd in my herte.
 And as the goddis be fauourable to you in this worlde, 7
 equalle and fauourable to me in an other worlde, as my
 5070 fleshe neuer toke pleasure to passe this lyfe, but my harte
 was sodaynely taken with the feare of deathe: than take
 no payne for me, for eyther I muste see the ende of you, or
 you of me. I yelde greatte thanks to the goddis, that
 they take away this old person to rest with them, and leue
 5075 you yonge for to serue in thempire. For there is no com-
 parison so to speake of dethe to the lyfe, nor to eschewe
 the dethe at the houre therof. And yet I wyl not deny, but
 I do feare dethe, as a mortal man. Whan the lyfe passeth
 there is no prudence in a prudent, nor vertue in a vertu-
 5080 ous, nor lordshyp in a lorde, that can take away the feare
 of the spirite, nor payne of the fleshe. At this tyme the
 soule and the fleshe are so combyned and so conglutinate
 to gyther, and the spirite with the bloude are so annexed,
 that the separation of the one from the other is the mooste
 5085 terrible, and the last terrible of all terriblenes. Certayne-
 ly it accordeth vnto good reason, that the soule departe
 dolorously, leauynge the fleshe vnto wormes, and the bo-
 dy as enuious to se the soule go and sporte with the god-
 des. O what lyttell thoughte we take in this lyfe, vntylle
 5090 we falle grouelynge with our eyes vppon dethe. Beleue
 me, Sythe I haue passed from whens ye be, and haue ex-
 perimented that ye do see, that is the vanities of vs that
 are vayne, is so agreable to vs, that whanne we begynne
 to lyue, we ymagine that our lyfe wylle endure a holle
 5095 worlde, and whanne it is ended, hit semeth vs to be but a
 puffe or a blaste of wynde. And bycause than sensualitie
 peyneth for sensibylitie, and the fleshe for the fleshe, rea-
 son guyded with them that be mortall telleth me, that it
 peyneth

(*f.82) *peyneth not with the departynge. If I haue lyued as a brute beaste, hit is reason that I dye as a discrete manne ⁵¹⁰⁰ ought to do. I dyenge, this day shall dye al my fyckenes, hungre shall dye, colde shall dye, all my peynes shall dye, my thought shall dye, my displeasure shall dye, and eue-ry thinge that gyueth payne and sorowe. This daye the nyght shall be taken away, and the sonne shyne bright in ⁵¹⁰⁵ the skye: This day the ruste shall be taken fro myn eies, and I shall see the sonne clerely: This daye the way shall be made smothe for to goo righte: this is, the daye shall ende the iourneye, wherin I shall not drede the stayes of Fortune. I thanke the goddis immortall, that haue suf- ⁵¹¹⁰ fered me to lyue so clerely, and soo longe a tyme. This day I shall haue an ende of all vnhappy destenies of enuious fortune, and not they of me. Of trouth if the goddis haue commaunded my flesshe to be hydden in the sepulchre, and to be as mortalle: yet if they be iuste and do ⁵¹¹⁵ well, they wyl make my renoume to be immortal, bycause I haue lyued well. Than syth I chaunge this wery lyfe and company of menne, for the swetenes of the goddis, and the doubtes of Fortune for this sure lyfe, and greate and contynuall feare for perpetuall peace, and this ylle ⁵¹²⁰ and naughty corrupte lyfe for good renowme and glorye, I thynke veryly this shulde be none yll chaunge.

¶ It is nowe thre score and two yeres sythe the erth hath susteyned and fedde the erthe of my bodye: It is nowe tyme that the erthe knowledge me for her sonne, and I ⁵¹²⁵ wyll also take her for my mother. Uerely it is a pytiefull mother, that wylle nowe take me into her entraylles for euer, sythe that I haue so longe space trodden her vnder my feete. And yet though that I were as I am, for to be as she is, I am in certayne that she wolde kepe me su- ⁵¹³⁰ rer among her wormes, thā Rome among the senatours.

And

Y. ii.

(*f. 82 b) *And al though it be paynful to you, yet if it plese the goddis to haue it thus, no mā can excuse nor scape it. I shuld be right wel eased, if this webbe were broken, and my possession taken in the Sepulchre. Than shulde I haue the firste thing propre of myn owne, and perpetuall without any feare of lesinge therof. All thinges mortall, that mortalle folkes haue, and the enuye of them that be enuious may be broken, except the deth and the sepulchre, the which
 5135 che are priuileged from enraged hongre of enuy. I se you well shedyng teares from your eies, 7 reise heuy sighes frome the depenes of your hartes. Wylle ye not that I shulde desire deathe, sith the phisitians giue me but three houres of lyfe? and there are conteyned in me .iii. M. yeres
 5145 res of peynes, the length wherof is a cyronisme of dethe. And yet though our debilitie be weake, yet for al that our honour is so sensible, that at the houre of dethe, the more that the bones dischargeth them of the fleshe, the more is the herte charged with thoughtes. In maner that whan
 5150 the sinewes untye theym fro the bones of the body, than newly they tye agayne a loore knotte to the herte. Nowe lette vs leaue speakyng of that towcheth particularly my selfe, and speake we in generalle of that is conueniente to a yonge Prince, and to you that are his tutours
 5155 and maysters.

¶ ye se here my sonne Comodus only prince and heire, abidinge for the heritage of thempire: neyther for beinge good, that he meriteth praise, nor for being yl reprefe. For he hath taken his naturalitie of the goddis, and his nurture
 5160 amonge you. Dyuers tymes whan he was a childe, ye toke hym in your armes, to thentent that nowe he is a man, ye shulde sette hym in your hertes. Hytherto he hath taken you for his maysters: and nowe at this tyme, he muste repute you as his fathers. And whiles I lyued, ye helde

(*f.83)*helde hym for your prince in nourysshynge hym, for your ⁵¹⁶⁵
emperour in seruing him, and as your parent in helping
hym, and as your sonne in teachynge hym. Hytherto ye
onely helde him charge, as father, mother, and maysters:
he is nowe as a newe shyppe put this daye in to the right
see, fleting to the botomles swolowe, where as the sayles ⁵¹⁷⁰
of prosperitie wyll make hym fall, and the rockes of vn-
happynes wyll drowne hym. Than amonge so many vn-
fortunate wyndes and vnstable waters, there is greatte
necessitie of good oores. Surely I am very fory for them-
pire, and haue great compassion of this yong prince, and ⁵¹⁷⁵
suche as wolde his welthe, shall more bewaylle his lyfe
than my dethe. For scapinge fro the see I se my selfe at a
good sure porte, and vppon mayne lande, and leaue hym
the sweate and trauayle. For as yet he knoweth not howe
to aduenture to sayle on the see: nor yet knoweth not whe- ⁵¹⁸⁰
ther he shal abyde the age of my long experience, nor whe-
ther he shall be a reasonable emperour or no. But whatte
shall sorowfull Rome do, whan it hath nourysed a good
prince, and that fatall destenies maketh an ende of hym,
or that by enuy of them that be yll he is flayn? or the cru- ⁵¹⁸⁵
eltie of the goddis taketh hym away: or that the body by
his owne propre handes be lyfte vp in suche wise, that in
thexperiment of princes al the life tyme parteth in bewai-
lynge the youthe of yonge princes, and the grauitie of
their auncient princes passed. O if these princes beleued ⁵¹⁹⁰
at the beginnyng of their empire, other kinges that are
fayled in the worlde, how they be taught whan it is so im-
portable for one man withoute charge to rule so many re-
almes, and he doinge nothyng but take theyr goodes,
robbe him of his renoume, banishe their persons fro him, ⁵¹⁹⁵
and he to ende his lyfe, and his subiectes augment their
sorowes: and lithe he is but one, he can do no more than
one,

y. iii.

(*f. 83 b) *one, though dyuers hope that he doth for all. Regarde in
 what myfauenture a prince lyueth, whan the leaft vilayn
 5200 in Italy thinketh, that al only for hym and on hym alone
 the prince fetteth his eies. And fith the worlde is fo chan-
 geable, and the people fo vnruly, the day that a prince is
 crowned and exalted with a fceptre ryall, the fame daye
 he fubmitteth his goodis to the couetous, 7 all his eftate
 5205 to the femblaunce of other. Thus than in this the goddis
 fhew their power. For al the vnderftandynges are tacked
 to one free wyll. The femyng of all they condemne, and
 alowe but one. They giue the domination to one, and the
 fubiectiō to many. To one they gyue the chaftifement
 5210 of all, 7 not all to the chaftifement of one. For the tafte of
 many, they giue meate but to one: the fauour wherof is
 fwete to fome, and fowre to other: to fome remayneth the
 bone, and to fome the flefhe: at the laft fome be drowned 7
 other be hyndred, 7 at the end al haue an ende. I wold de-
 5215 mand of you that be moft familier, what is the crowne of
 thempire, or the fceptre of gold, or the coler of perles or p-
 cious ftones, or robes of Alexāder, or veffel of Corinth, or
 chariottes of triūph, or what offices of Confules or dicta-
 tours are defired in change of their reft? for it is certaine,
 5220 they can not attayn to the one, without lefing of the other.
 And this is the caufe ȳ there be yl mariners, 7 to hardi pi-
 lottes, for they fle fro the fe to the lande, 7 fro the lande to
 the fee. One thing I wil fay, ȳ is ageinft my felf: euery mā
 hateth warre, 7 no man fekith for peace. All forowe for one
 5225 that is angred, and none is cōtent to appeace, al wold cō-
 mande, but none wil be cōmaunded. This hath ben in the
 world paffed, 7 now at this present time men be fo light, ȳ
 they rather chufe to cōmand with peril, than to obey with
 reft. Seinge that my days are diminifhed, 7 my fickenes
 5230 augmented, fufpecting thā that I fe now, whan I retur-
 ned

(*f.84) *ned fro the warre of Sycil, I determyned to make my testament, the whiche ye may se here: Open and beholde it. and therby ye shall se howe I leaue you to be maysters of my son, yet in loue and fidelitie ye be to gither all as one. Great peryll the prince is in, and the common welth in an yll aduventure, where as be many intentions amonge the 5235
gouernours. Certaynly the princis are glorious, and the people well fortunate, and the senate happy, whan all agree in one counsell, and that the counsaylers be ancient, and many of them, and al their intētions agree vpon one 5240
thinge. Whan this was in Rome, it was feared and dred of tirantes, hauinge their consultations approued with iii .C. barons. And though their reasons were diuers, yet their wylles and intētis were al one for the cōmon welth. I desire and coniure you by the goddes, that ye be all frē- 5245
des in conuerfation, and conformable in counsell. All the weke debilities in a prince may be suffrid, except yl coūcel: and all defautes of counsayllours are tollerable, excepte enuy 7 ire. Whā the freting worm called a mothe, entreth amonge them, it causeth perylle in Justice, dishonour to 5250
the prince, sclander in the commons, and parcialite in the superiours. The coūsayler that hath his minde ouercome with ire, and his herte occupied with enuy, and his wordes outragious to a good man, it is reson that he lose the fauour of the goddis, his priueticie with the prince, and the 5255
credence of the people. For he presumeth to offende the goddis with yll intention, to serue the prince with yl coūcel, and to offende the common welth with his ambition. O how ignorant are these princis, that take hede of suche herbes 7 venims that myghte poyson them in their mea- 5260
tes, and care not for the poyson that they of their priuie coūsayle do gyue them? Doubtles there is no cōparifon, for the herbes and poysons can be giuen but on one daye:
but

(*f. 84^b) *but the venyme of yll counsell is giuen euery houre. Ue-
 5265 nym is defended by the horne of an vnicorne, by tryacle,
 and otherwyfe by vomites: but the poyson of yll counsel
 hath no remedy, and lesse defensiues. And finally I saye,
 that the venym gyuen by an enemy can but flee one empe-
 5270 rour in Rome, but the poyson gyuen by hym that is most
 pryue to euyll counsell, fleeth the emperour, and distro-
 yeth the common welthe. And where as euery vertuous
 prince setteth more by perpetuall renoume than this falli-
 ble lyfe, ye beinge gouernours of thempire, and maysters
 to my sonne, they that owe hym yll wyll haue not so moch
 5275 power ouer his lyfe, as ye haue vpon his renoume. Ther-
 fore if he be awaked by his enemies straungers, moche ra-
 ther he ought to be awaked amonge his domesticall fren-
 des. One thinge I commaunde as to my seruantes, and
 I desire you as my frendes, that ye shewe not your selfe
 5280 so priue openly, as ye be in secrete: to thentent that some
 seme not as natural sonnes, and other as hired seruantis.
 He that is vertuous, oughte to haue great regarde to the
 profite of his lorde secretly, and to be of meke conuersa-
 tion with euery man openly, els his priuitie wyll not lōge
 5285 endure, and the hate of the prince with the people wyl in-
 creace. Oftentimes I haue redde of our predeceffours,
 and I haue sene it in the present Romaines, whan many
 holde with one, that one holdeth but lyttell with dyuers,
 and lesse with many, the whiche kepeth their willes as far
 5290 of, as the persons be nigh. And sith the ylnes of the time,
 and vnstablenes of fortune neuer leaueth any thinge in
 one case, but all is as in maner of a dreme: the moste sure
 purchase is to flee fro peril, for then whā the princes haue
 passed their plesures entemedled in trauailes, they ser-
 5295 che for many and finde not one. Therof cometh, that one
 present for feare will withdrawe hym, and an other out of
 fauour

(*f.85) *fauour and absente wyll not come. I wyll shewe you one thinge, the whiche ye shall alwaye put in my sonnes memorie: They that in our trauayles haue determyned of a longe selson to apply them, we ought to wyne their good willes. The wily labourer in one yere laboureth to gette cornes together, and in an other yere he soweth and gadereyth. Be not to presumptuous, for the presumption of an auncient prince, fordoth the auctorite of the yong prince: yet for al this dispraise nor rebuke him not to moche: For the lacke of maners in the state of a lorde engendreth vnshamefastnes in him, and boldnes to the seruant. I haue lefte in my testament the prince Comodus for your sonne, and you for his fathers. But I wyll and commande, that euery man knowlege him to be their lord, and to be at his commaundement. And ye my other seruantes and subiectes to be his in obedience, and in all his hye befinesses to be well guyded as his frendes and louers. Justice ought to be sene to, by wise oratours, accordinge to the opinion of you that be his gouernours. And alwaye the determination to be done by the prince, which is lorde of al. One counsell I wyll gyue you, and if ye finde it yll, blame me afore the goddis, and than the empire of my sonne shalbe stable and permanent in Rome, and your priuete sere in his hous, if your counselles be moued by reason, and his wyll ruled by your counsels. I desire soore that ye be not couetous: and therefore I haue gyuen you dyuers gyftes and thankes in my lyfe, to take couetousnes from you afore my dethe. It were a monstrous thing and very dredfull, that suche as ought to refrayne couetyse fro straungers, to haue their owne handes open for their owne propre lucre. The vertuous priue men, ought not to do all the yl that they may, nor to desire all that they may atteyn vnto, to the intente that the prince gyue theym so moche goodes

Z

(*f. 85^b) 5330 *goodes for the profite of their houses, and peyne and enuy of the people to their persons. And as in meane shyppes men scape best in a meane see, soner than in great carrackes, in the waves of the roringe and impituous sees: in likewise suche as be in meane estate amonge them that be
 5335 but meanly enuious, lyue more surely, than suche as are sette in high estate and priuete beinge ryche, to be passyoned among ennemies, that disdaynfully wold put them vnder. It is a notable rule amonge wise men, and an infallible experience amonge them that be good, 7 I thinke
 5340 that by heringe therof the yll shall knowlege it: The glorie of one amonge great men maketh ltryfe, suspection in them that be egal, and enuy amonge them that be meane. One thinge, that they that gouerne well, ought to haue, is liberalitie. The lesse ye be couetous, the more ye shalbe
 5345 lyberal. For with the rage of couetousnes the right of Iustice is mynished. It is longe tyme lithe I determyned to gyue you the gouernyng of thempire, and the nourishing of my sonne. And to haue prouyded to haue gyuen you largely of my goodes, to put the couetyng of other mens
 5350 goodes from you. I warrant you one thing: yf couetousnes be amonge you, and be enuied of your neyghbours, ye shall lyue in peyne, and your hartes shall be peyned with other mens besynesses, and your mindes shalbe euer in suspect. Than shal ye folow the Iustice of other, where
 5355 as ye shal se your owne ppre welth. One counsell fynally I wyl gyue you, which I haue takē alway my selfe. Neuer comyt your honours to the myshappes of fortune: nor neuer offre your selfe to peryll with hope of remedy. For suspicious fortune kepeth alwayes her gates wyde open
 5360 for peril, and her walles ben high, 7 her wyckettes narrow to finde any remedy. And bicause I fele my selfe sore trauayled, I pray you suffre me to rest a lyttell.

How

(*f.86) ¶ *Howe the emperour at the houre of his dethe, sent
for his sonne, and declared to him, who shuld
gouverne the Empire. Cap. xliiii.



Thus a great parte of the night passed, and the
day began to breake, and the life of this good
emperour began fast to drawe to an ende: yet ⁵³⁶⁵
for all that he left not the remēbrance of suche
thinges as shulde be ordered after his deathe.
There were that time in the warre with him diuers right
excellent men senatours of Rome: and in al thinges he she
wed him self right wise, 7 specially he wold neuer haue a- ⁵³⁷⁰
ny vicious [sic] persone in his howse. He had euer in his com-
pany .l. gentylmen knightes, 7 in eche of them he might
haue put trust to gouerne Rome. Oftentymes this good
emperour wolde say, that princis lyued more surely with
the gadryng to them men of good lyuyng 7 conuersation, ⁵³⁷⁵
thā with trefure of money stuffed in their chestes. Unhap-
pye is y prince, that este meth hym selfe happy to haue his
coffres ful of trefure, and his counsell ful of men of yl ly-
uyng. These malicious and yll men make princis poore:
and a perfyte man suffiseth to make a holle realme ryche. ⁵³⁸⁰
Surely this emperour sayd well. For we do se daily, that
what the father hath gotten in fiftye yeres, the son leseth
in halfe a yere. Than chusinge among many a fewe, and
of fewe to take the best, this emperour appoynted out .vi.
notable barons: Thre of thē to be maisters of his son, 7 o- ⁵³⁸⁵
ther .iii. to be gouernors of thempire. One was Partinax,
which after was emperour: an other was called Pompe-
iano, husbād to his doughter, as sure in coūcel as he was
aged in yeres: The .iii. Gneo Patrocle of the anciēt stock
of the Pompeies, whiche was no lesse clene in his lyuing ⁵³⁹⁰
than his heres were white: The .iiii. was called Andrisco
whiche

Z. ii.

(*f. 86^b) *which in goodlynnes of his gesture, highnes of body, vertue of courage, and wyfedom in conscience, none was egalle to him in Rome: The .v. was named Bononius, 5395 whiche at that tyme was consule, and in the auncient lawes very experte: The last was called Juan varius the good, and he was called the good, bycause that in .lx. yere neuer man sawe hym do any ylle workes, nor harde hym speake any ydel worde, nor do any thinge but it was profitable to the common welthe. Though in case they were all 5400 egall in gouernynge: yet I say these laste thre were principall. For Juan Uarius particularly was left to be chief capitayne of the armye, and to hym was delyuered al the treasure, and the testament was put into his handes: and 5405 with fore weping the emperour recommended to hym the prince his sonne. Than whan the peine of his sicknes encreaced, and that he loked for the houre of his deth, he commaunded to awake his sonne Commodus, whiche without any care was faste aslepe, and whan he was brought in 5410 to the presence of his father, it was greatte pitie to see the eien of the olde emperour soore discoloured with weping, and the eies of the sonne almoste closed with slepinge: the sonne was wakyng with small thoughte, and the father coude not slepe for great thought and peyne. And whan 5415 he was in his presence, feinge the lyttell care that the son toke for the dethe of his father, and confidering the great desyre of the father for the good lyfe of his sonne, it moued to pitie the hartes of all the great lordes that were there, no lesse to leaue the company of the good olde man, than 5420 the annoyance of the dealyng of the yonge prince: Thā the emperour sayde to his sonne these wordes.

¶ What the emperour sayde to his sonne at the houre of his dethe. Cap. .xlv.

Unto

(*f.87)* **V**Nto thy maysters 7 my gouernours I haue
 shewed howe they shal counsell the: and now
 my sonne at this houre I say to the, how they
 though they be but a fewe, 7 all for the alone ⁵⁴²⁵
 shal gouerne: and it is not to be taken in smal
 estimation. The mooste easye thinge in the worlde is to
 giue counsell to an other: and the mooste hardest and hiest
 thinge is a man to take it for hym selfe. There is none so
 simple a man but he may giue good coucell, though there ⁵⁴³⁰
 be no nede. And there is none so wyse that wyl refuse cou-
 sell in tyme of necessitie. I se one thing that al take coun-
 selle for all, and at the laste take it for him selfe. Some I
 thinke accordynge to my heuy fatalle destenies, and thyn
 yll customes, that one thinge shall not profite the, that is, ⁵⁴³⁵
 if the lyttell goodnes that thou hast done was for feare of
 me in my lyfe, that thou wylte doo lesse whan thou haste
 forgotten my dethe. I do more nowe for to satisfie my de-
 fire and the cōmon welthe, than for any hope that I haue
 of the amendement of thy lyfe. There is not a worse com ⁵⁴⁴⁰
 playnt, than that a man holdeth of him selfe. If thou my
 sonne be yl, Rome wyl complayne to the goddis, that they
 haue giuen the so yll inclinations. They wyl complayne
 of Faustine thy mother, that hath brought the vp so wan-
 tonly: and they wylle complayne on thy selfe, that thou ⁵⁴⁴⁵
 dost not refrayne the from vices: and they shall not com-
 playne of thyn olde father that hath gyuen the so manye
 good councelles. I am in certayne, thou hast not so great
 dolour to see the ende of this nyghte, and the ende of my
 lyfe, as thou haste plesaure [sic] to se the day that thou shalt be ⁵⁴⁵⁰
 emperour: and I haue no meruayle: for where as sensu-
 alitie reigneth, reason is put asyde. Dyuers thinges are
 beleued bycause they are knowen vncertainly. O how ma-
 ny thinges of trouthe ben there, that if they were knowen
 truly

Z. iii.

•

(*f. 87 b) 5455 *truely thay shulde be lefte. But we ben so doubtful in eue-
 ry thing, and go about our busyness so variably and in-
 constantly, that sometyme our spirites breake the pour-
 pose, and an other tyme they rydde vs not of trouble nor
 hyndrance. I say we be so swifte to do yll, that sometyme
 5460 we lese by a carde of the most: and to do wel we be so dul,
 y we lese by a card of the leste: 7 at the last we do nothings
 but lese. Sonne I wyll aduertise the by wordes, that I
 haue knowen in .lxii. yere by longe experience: and sythe
 thou arte my sonne and yonge, it is reason that thou be-
 5465 leue hym that is thy old father. As we princes are regard
 of all men, and regarde al men, and are regarded of al o-
 ther, this day thou doste enherite thempire of the worlde
 and the courte of Rome. I knowe well there be inowe in
 the court of princes, that know nothyng what is to make
 5470 them selfe of worthynes, and to maynten them self amōg
 so many trūperies as are treated in the houses of princes.
 I lette the to wytte, that in the court is auncient parciali-
 ties, present discentions fearefull vnderstondynges, eui-
 dent wytnesses, entrayles of serpentis, tongues of scor-
 5475 pions, many detractours, and fewe that seke peace, and
 where as al men shulde harken to the cōmon voyce, eue-
 ry man sercheth his owne proufite. Euery manne sheweth a
 good pretence, and all are occupied in yll workes: In su-
 che wise, that some by auarice lese their good fame, and
 5480 some prodigally spende and waite all their goodes. What
 shulde I saye more? In the courte eue-
 ry daye the lordes
 chaunge and alter the lawes, awake stryfes, and reyse
 noyses, abate noblenes, exalte the vnworthy, banyshe in-
 nocentis, and honour theues, loue flaterers, and dispray-
 5485 se the whiche be vertuous, embrace delites, and
 treade vertue vnder their fete: Wepe for theym that be
 ylle, and laughe to scorne them that be good: and final-
 ly they

(*f.88) *ly they take all lyghtnes for their mother, and vertue for theyr stepmother. And my sonne I saye more vnto the, The courte, the whiche thou shalte enheryte this daye, is 5490 nothings but a shoppe with waares, and a howse of vacaboundes, wherin some selle vyle and corrupt thynges, and other bye lyes, some haue credence, and somme haue renoume, some haue goodes, and some haue lyuing, and al to gither is but losse of tyme: 7 that worst of al is, they 5495 wyll not beleue the poyson therof, tyl it be at their hartis, they are so folysh and sturdy. Rome hath verye hie walles, and the vertues therof is very lowe: Rome vaunteth it selfe to be very stronge in nombre of inhabitantes, and afterwarde Rome shal wepe that there is more people thā 5500 vertue, and vyces are not accompted. In a moneth a mā might reckon all the stons of the proude edifices, but in a. M. yeres he myght not comprise the malyces of his yll customes. I swere to the by the immortall goddis, that in thre yeres I repaired all that was decayed in Rome, and 5505 in thirty yere I coude not refourme one quarter therof to good lyuyng. Good sonne beleue me, the great cities ful of good inhabitantes ought to be prayfed, 7 not the great edifyces. Our predeceffours haue triumphed on straungers as weake and feble: and now they maye triumphe 5510 on vs also, as menne that be more vanquyshe with vyces than any of the other. By the mightines and prowesses of our predeceffours, we that be now are greattely honoured and exalted, and by the small estimation of vs that be now, they that come after vs may be greatly asha- 5515 med. Of a very trouth it is a great shame to saye, and no lesse infamie to doo, that the goodnes and trauayle of the auncientes shuld now be turned and conuerted to folies and presumption. My son loke well on thy selfe, that the reyne of thy youthe, and libertie of the empire cause the 5520 not

(*f. 88^b) *not to committe vice. He is not called onely free, that is free borne, but he that dyeth within the same. O how wel are the sclaues borne, that after their deth are fre by their goodnes? 7 how many haue dyed sclaues by their noughtyn-
 5525 tynes, that were borne free? There is fredome where noblenes abyde. The prowes of thy persone shal giue the more hardines and libertie than thaucloritie of thempire. It is a generall rule, that euery vertuous man of necessitie is to be holden hardye: and euery vicious man of ne-
 5530 cessitie is to be reputed a coward. Nowe boldly they be chastised that be not noted with any vice, 7 coldly they be chastised that deserue chastisement. Lette a prince be in a certayn, that the loue of his people, and the libertie of his office, hath not wherwith to vpholde hym in armes spred
 5535 abroad on the erth, without the dyuers vertues assembled in his persone.

¶ Certaynly Octavius Cesar subdewed mo nacions by the renoume of his vertues, than dydde Gaius his vncler with his army of many men. All the worlde ioy of a ver-
 5540 tuous prince: 7 it semeth that all the world ryseth ageinst a vicious prince. Vertue is a strong castel, and can neuer be wonne: it is a riuer where nedeth no rowing, a see that moueth not, a fire that quencheth not, a treasure that neuer hath ende, an army neuer ouercom, a burden that ne-
 5545 uer werieth, a spy that euer retourneth, a fygne that neuer deceyueth, a playn waye that neuer fayleth: a sirope that healeth forthwith: and a renoume that neuer perysheth. O my sonne if thou knewest what thinge it is to be good, and what a man thou shuldest be if thou were ver-
 5550 tuous, thou woldest doo seruice to the goddis, good renoume to thy selfe, pleasure to thy frendes, and engendre loue of straungers, and finally all the worlde shulde fere and loue the.

I

(*f.89) ¶ *I remembre that in the boke of yeres, of the battaylle of Tarentyne, I founde that the renowmed Pyrrhus⁵⁵⁵⁵ kynge of the Epyrothiens bare in a rynge grauen these wordes: To a vertuous man is but a smal rewarde to be lorde of all the werthe: and it is but a small chaftisement to take a vicious mans lyfe fro him.

Truely it was a worthy sentence of luche a prince. What⁵⁵⁶⁰ thinge is it, be it neuer so difficile, begonne by a vertuous man, but there is hope to haue a good ende therof. Sothly I haue sene in dyuers parties of myn empyre dyuers men very derke of good fame, very lowe in goodes, and vnknownen of their kynne and bloud: vndertake so great⁵⁵⁶⁵ thynges, that to myfemyng was a fearefull audacitie to begynne: And yet by the wynges of vertue all onely they haue had good renoume at the laft. By the immortal goddis, and as god Jupiter bringe me into his mancion, and stablyshe the in all that is myne, There were ones a gar-⁵⁵⁷⁰ dyner and a potter whiche dwelled in Rome, And they onely by their vertues were cause to putte out tenne vicious fenatours of the senate: and the firste occalyon was for makynge a hedge of thorne, and a pottle whiche they wolde not paye them for the workemanshyp and labour.⁵⁵⁷⁵ I tell it the my sonne, bycause that vice maketh the bolde persone thoughtfull: and vertue causeth hym that is in thought to take strength and boldenes. I was well ware of two thinges in my lyfe: not to pleade ageinst the clerenes of iustice, nor to take part ageinst a vertuous person:⁵⁵⁸⁰ For with vertue god susteyneth vs, and with Justice the people are gouerned.

¶ Of other more perticular councelles gyuen by the emperour to his sonne. Cap. xlvi.

Nowe

A. a.

(*f. 89 b) *

5585



Owe to come to thinges more perticular. Se-
 inge sonne that thou arte yonge, and that na-
 ture can not denye the: And as in all difficyle
 thinges ripe counsell is necessarie, no lesse to
 comfort the state of our lyuing we desire some
 recreations. For thy youth I leue y with gret lordes chil-
 dren, with whom thou mayst passe the tyme. And to teche
 5590 the I leue olde Romans that haue nourished the, and ser-
 ued me, of whom thou shalte take counsel. The inuention
 of interludes of theatres, to fyfhe in pōdes, to hunt wyld
 beaſtis, to courſe in the feldeſ, to hauke for birdes, and to
 exercyſe dedes of armes, are the thynges that thy youthe
 5595 deſireth. And youth with youth ought to kepe companye
 in doinge the ſame: But beholde my ſon, that in ordering
 of armies, to applie the warres, to purſue victories, to ac-
 cept truce, to confirme peace, to reyle tributis, to make la-
 wes, to promote ſome, and diſmiſſe other, to chaſtyſe the
 5600 yl, and recompence the good: for counſel in all theſe thin-
 ges that be ſo chargeable, they that be of clere mynde, re-
 dy broken and trauayled of their bodies, and white hered
 ought to be takē. And ſith thou art yōge 7 luſty of body, re-
 ioyce 7 ſport with them that be yonge: 7 whā thou arte
 5605 emperour, in thy ſecretes take couñcell of them that be old.
 Beware my ſonne of all extremities. For as yll maye the
 prince be vnder the colour of grauytie to be ruled by the
 auncient perſons, as vnder colour of paſtyme to kepe cō-
 panye with yonge folkes. It is no generall rule that all
 5610 yonge perſons ſhall always be yonge and lyght, nor that
 all olde perſons ſhulde be always wiſe. I am in ſuertie of
 one thinge, that if the yonge man be borne with folly, the
 olde man lyueth 7 dieth with couetiſe. Therefore my ſonne
 beware, be not extreme in extremities. For the yong peo-
 5615 ple wyll corrupt the with their lyghtneſ, and olde folkes
 wylle

(*f.90)*wyll depryue thy mynde with their couetousnes. What thing can be more monstuous than a prince that cōmandeth euery man, to be commaunded of one. Sothely the gouernynge of diuers can not be gouerned well by the opinion of one alone, thā the prince that gouerneth many, ⁵⁶²⁰oughte to haue the intention and opinion of dyuers.

¶ In the annales of the Pompeyenis, I founde a lyttell boke of remembrance, the which the great Pompeie bare alway with hym: wherin were diuers good counsels and aduertifementis, the whiche were giuen in diuers partis ⁵⁶²⁵of the worlde: Amonge the whiche I founde these wordes: He that gouerneth the common welthe, and putteth the gouernance to them that are old, sheweth hym self vn-able: and he that trusteth in youth is lyghte: and he that gouerneth by him selfe alone, is hardy and bolde: and he ⁵⁶³⁰that gouerneth by him selfe and other is wise. These were notable wordes. Than my sonne determyne the to take counsaylle, and specially in hyghe thynges and difficyle matters, and otherwyse lette theym not be determyned. For whan the counsaylle is of dyuers taken, than if any ⁵⁶³⁵faute be, it shall be deuided amonge them al. Though the determination myght be done by a fewe, yet take counsell of dyuers. Among all thy welthes, here the cōmon coun-celle. For one wyll shewe the al the inconuenience, an no-ther the perylle, an other the damage, an other the prou- ⁵⁶⁴⁰fytte, and an nother the remedye. And sette as well thyne eyes vppon the inconuenyentes that they laye, as vpon the remedye that they offre. Whan thou begynnest any harde mattier, esteeme as welle the smalle damages that maye befall afore, and stoppe them, as to remedy the great ⁵⁶⁴⁵mysfortunes that come after. Of trouthe the stronge and myghtye shyppe ofte tymes for a smalle takynge hede of the pylotte, is founken and drowned in a lyttelle water:
and

Aa. ii.

(*f. 90^b) *and an other fhyppe not fo ftronge, with wife diligence is
 5650 laued in the gulfe of the lee. Be not annoyed to take coun-
 cel in fmal matters euery houre. For many thinges forth-
 with requireth to be looked to, and in abydinge for coun-
 cel it endomageth. And that thou canfte difpatche by thyne
 owne auctoritie without damage of the cōmon welth, put
 5655 it not to any other perfon. For fith thy feruice all only de-
 pendeth of thyn, the reward dependeth of the alone.

¶ In the yere .vi. C. xxx. of the foundation of Rome, af-
 ter the cruell warres done ageinfte the kinge of Numedie,
 the day that Marius triumphed, without puttyng of any
 5660 of the riches that he brought, into the cōmon treafure, he
 deuoyded it to his men of warre. And whan he was ther-
 fore accused, and asked why he toke not firfte the opinion
 of the fenate: He aunfwered and layde: Sythe they take
 not the opinion of other to do me feruice, it were no reſon
 5665 that I ſhoulde take counsell of other to rewarde and re-
 compence them.

¶ Son yet I wyll aduertife y of other thynges. Perad-
 uenture ſom wyll gyue the counsell er thou demande it: 7
 in that caſe kepe this generall rule: neuer abide the ſecōde
 5670 counsell of a man, if he haue giuen the counsell before in
 the preiudice of an other. For he offreth his wordes in thy
 feruice to bringe the beſynes to his owne proufyte. O my
 ſonne, there are many thynges to knowe a man. xv. yere
 I haue ben ſenatour, conſule, cenſure, capitayne, and tri-
 5675 bune: and .xviii. yere I haue ben emperour of Rome, and
 diuers haue ſpoken to me in preiudice of other, and many
 mo for their owne profite, and none haue ſpoken clerely to
 me for the profite of other, nor for my feruice. Great com-
 paſſion ought to be taken of princis: for euerye man folo-
 5680 weth them for their owne profite, 7 none for loue and ſer-
 uice. One counsell I toke for my ſelfe all the whyle that
 I haue

(*f.91) *I haue gouerned in Rome: I neuer kepte manne in my hous after that I knewe hym hatefull agaynste the common welthe.

¶ In the yere of the foundation of Rome .vi. C. lix. of the Olympiade .C. lxxvii. Lucullus Patricius, greate frende to Sylla, goynge to the warre of Metridates, It chanced that in Tygoano a citie of Caldiens, he found a plate of coper or brasse vpon the kynges gatis, wherin were certayne letters, whiche they sayd were grauen there by the commandement of Alexander the great. The letters were in Caldee, conteynyng these sentences. That prince is not wyse, that wyll holde his lyfe in peryll: and wyll not assure his lyfe and state with the loue of al mē: That prince is not vertuous, that in giuing moche to one person, wil- leth all other to haue but lyttell: That prince is not iuste, that wyll satisfie more the couetise of one persone, thā to the vices of all men: That prince is a fole, that dispiseth the counsell of all other, and all onely trusteth vpon the opinion of one: And finally the prince is to bold and hardy, that for the loue of one, wyl be hated of al other. These were wordes of eternall memory. And in dede these princes shulde haue this always in theyr prefence. Sonne yet I shal say more to the. This Lucullus Patricius brought into the Senate all the treasure that he hadde, and this plate with the sayde wordis thereon, to thentent that they shoulde chuse the one and leaue the other. And the senate refused all the treasur, and toke the plate with the counselles written thereon.

¶ Of dyuers and particular recommendations
whiche the emperour commaunded his
sonne. Cap. xlvii.

I haue

Aa. iii.

(*f. 91 b) 5710 *



Haue shewed lyke a father, the thynges that toucheth thy welth: Nowe I wyl shewe the what thou oughtest to do after my dethe for my seruice. Those thynges that I haue loued in my lyfe, if thou wylte be sonne to thy
 5715 father, esteeme them after my dethe. Firste my sonne I re-
 commende to the, the worlhyppynge of the temples, and the reuerence of the priestes, with the honour to the goddis. So longe shall the honour of the Romainys laste, as they perceuer in the seruice of the goddis. The realme of
 5720 the Carthagenens perished not bicause they were not so riche or more cowardes than the Romainys: but bycause they loued their trefors to moche, 7 were but yll worlhyppers and louers of the temples. My sonne I recommend to the Helia thy stepmother, 7 remembre that though she
 5725 be not thyn owne mother, yet she is my wyfe: and on the payne of my cursyng suffre not that she be yl intreted. For the damage that she shuld suffre by thy cōsent, shuld gyue euidence of the smal thought that thou takest of my deth, which shulde be an iniury to thy life. I haue left to her the
 5730 tributes and reuenues of Hostie, for to maynteine her degre: and the gardens of Uulcan, which I caused to make for her recreatiō. And if thou take it fro her, thou shewest thyn ylnesse. And to suffre her to enioye it, I commaunde the by thyn obedience, and to shewe her thy bountie and
 5735 largesse. Remembre she is a Romain, yong, 7 a widow, of the hous of my lorde Traian, and how she is thy mother adoptife, 7 my natural wyfe, wherfore I leue her vnder thy recōmendation. Also I cōmyt to the thy bretherne in law: 7 thy sisters my doughters I leue them al married,
 5740 not with strāge kinges, but with the natural inhabitātis and citefins of Rome. They dwell al within the walles of Rome, where as they may do the seruice, and thou mayst
 do them

(*f.92) *do thē good. Son intrete them in luche wife, that though their good father be dead, yet let them haue fauour. And though they ſe their brother emperour of Rome, yet let thē 5745 not be defouled. Womē be of a right tēder condicion, they wyll complayne for a ſmalle cauſe, and for leſſe they wyll riſe vp in pride. Thou oughteſt to conferue them after my dethe, as I haue done in my life. For otherwiſe their conuerſation ſhulde be fekyll to the people, and importunate 5750 to the. Alſo I cōmit to the Lipula thy ſiſter, that is amōge the virgins Ueſtales, Thinke that ſhe is doughter of thy mother Fauſtin, whiche I haue greatly loued in my life, 7 vnto the houre of my deth I haue lamēted hers. Euery yere I gaue to thy ſiſter .ii. M. ſexters for her neceſſities: 5755 ſhe had ben as well maryed as the other, if ſhe had not be brent in the viſage: whiche was eſtemed of euery man an yl aduenture, and ſpecially of her mother, that wept alway for her. But I eſtyme that ylle aduenture a good fortune. For if ſhe had not ben brent in the face with fire, ſhe had in 5760 the worlde as touching her renoume be brent with diuers tonges. Son I ſwere to the, that for the ſeruice of ŷ goddis, 7 the fame of men, ſhe is more ſurer with the virgins in the temple, than though ſhe were in the ſenate with the ſenatours. I deme that at the ende of the iourney ſhe ſhal 5765 finde her ſelfe better at eaſe cloſed and locked in, thā thou with all thy libertie. In the prouince of Lucany, I haue lefte for her the .ii. M. ſexters: I wyll not that thou take them fro her. Alſo I cōmytte Drufia the wydowe to the, which hath layd a gret proces ageinſt the ſenate, bicauſe ŷ 5770 by motiōs afore paſſed her huſbād was baniſhed: I haue great compaſſion of her: for it is thre monethes ſithe ſhe put in her demaunde: and bycauſe of my great warres I coude not declare her iuſtyce. Sonne thou ſhalt fynde hit trewe, that in .xxxv. yere, that I haue gouerned Rome, 5775 there

(*f. 92^b) *there was neuer widowe that helde her procelle before me
 passynge .viii. dayes. Take compassion of such. For wo-
 mens necessities are righte peryllous: and at the laste yf
 their beelines be longe in hande, they recouer not so moche
 5780 of their goodes, as they lese in their renowme. Also haue
 compassion of poore men, and the goddis shall rewarde
 the with great ryches. Also I commytte to the my aunci-
 ent seruantes, to whom my longe yeres and cruel warres
 my often necessities, the displeasure of my body, and my
 5785 longe syckenes hath ben ryghte paynfulle. For they as
 true seruantes to gyue me lyfe haue taken payne vnto the
 deth. It is reason that syth I haue taken their deth, that
 they enherite parte of my lyfe. One thing I holde for cer-
 tayne, In case that my bodye abyde in the sepulchre with
 5790 wormes, yet I shall alwayes before the goddis haue re-
 membraunce of them, In this doinge thou shalt do as a
 good childe, to satisfie them that haue serued thy father.
 Take hede my son, euery prince doing Iustice acquireth
 ennemies in the execution therof. And this is done by thē
 5795 that are mooste nere to hym. For the more priuie they are
 with the prince, the more hatefulle they are to the people.
 And though euery mā loueth Iustice in generall, yet they
 all hate the execution therof in particular. Whan a iuste
 prince is deade, the people take vengeance of the vniuste
 5800 seruantis. Whan thou were a chylde, my seruantis nory-
 shed the, to the entent that thou shuldest susteyne them in
 their age. Surely it were great shame to the empire, and
 offence to the goddis, an iniurie to me, and an vngentyl-
 nes of the, that thou haste founde them .xviii. yeres with
 5805 their armes abroad to halfe the, that they shuld finde one
 day thy gates shet ageinst thē. These thīges I cōmyt to y
 pticularly, kepe them alway in memorie. And sithe y I re-
 mēbre thē at my deth, confyder how I loued thē in my life.
 Of

(*f. 93) *¶ Of the laſte wordis that the emperour ſpake to his ſonne, 7 of a table that he gaue hym. Ca. xlviij.

WHan the emperour had ended his ſayde reco-
mmendations [sic], the day began to ſpringe, and ⁵⁸¹⁰
his eie ſtringes began to breke, and his tonge
faultred, and his handes ſhoke. Thā the ſayd
happy emperour, felynge that weakenes be-
gan fore to drawe about his herte, he commanded Panu-
tius to go into his ſtudy, and to bring to him a coffre that ⁵⁸¹⁵
was there. And whan it was broughte to his preſence, he
opened hit, and toke oute a table of thre fote broode, and
two fote longe, it was of wood Lybanus, 7 rounde about
garnyſhed with vnicorne. It was cloſed with two leaues
ſubtilly wrought of a reed wood, that ſome ſayd was of y ⁵⁸²⁰
tree that the Phenix bredeth in: and is callid Raſyn. And
as there is but one byrde Phenix breedinge in Arabye: ſo
lykewiſe there is no moo trees in the worlde of the ſame
kynde. On one of the outwarde parties of the table was
pyctured and grauen the god Jupyter, on the other the ⁵⁸²⁵
goddeſſe Uenus: In the inward parties of the table that
ſhette, was pictured god Mars and the goddeſſe Ceres:
In the principall of the ſayd table was pictured a Bulle
ſubtylly wroughte to the quicke, and vnder that a kyng
was pyctured. The whiche payntures were ſayd to be of ⁵⁸³⁰
the handy warke of the expert Appelles an ancient worke
man in payntinge. Than the emperour toke the table in
his hande, and with great peyne, he ſayd: Thou ſeeſt my
ſonne Comodus, howe I am all redy ſcaped fro the trap-
pes of fortune, and am enterynge into the heuye aduen- ⁵⁸³⁵
tures of dethe. I wote not why the goddis haue created
vs, ſith there is ſo great annoyance in our lyfe, 7 ſo great
peryll at our deathe. I vnderſtande not why the goddis
haue

Bb.

(*f. 93^b) *haue and vse so great crueltie to the creatures. Lxii. yere

5840 I haue sayled with great trauayle through the great perilles of this lyfe: and at this houre I am commaunded to take lande and discharge me of my flesshe, and to take erthe in the sepulchre. Nowe vntyeth the lyuely thredes, nowe vndothe the spyndell, nowe ryueth the webbe, nowe
5845 endeth my lyfe. Nowe am I awaked frome the slepyng eyll: Remembryng howe I haue passed my lyfe, I haue no more desire to lyue. And in that I knowe not whiche way to go, I refuse dethe. What shall I do? I am determyned to put me into the handis of the goddis wylling-
5850 lye, fythe I must do so of necessite. Whome I require, if they haue created me for any goodnes, not to depriue me fro them for my demerites. I am nowe in the laste gate: and to this houre I haue kepte the greattest and most excellent iewell that I coude fynde in all my lyfe. In the .x.
5855 yere of myn empire there arose a warre agaynst the Parthes: wherfore I determyned in myne owne persone to gyue them batayle. After that warre I came by the auncient citie of Thebes for to se some antiquitie: among the whiche in a priestes house I founde this table, the whiche
5860 as a kyng was reyled in Egypte, incontynent it was euer hanged at his beddis heed, and this priest shewed me, that it was made by a kyng in Egipte named Ptholomee Arlacides, that was a vertuous prince. And in the memorie of hym, and example of other, the priestis kept it diligently. And sonne I haue kepte it alway with me: and I
5865 beseeche the goddis, that suche may be thy werkes, as therein thou mayste fynde good counsell. As emperour I leue the heyre of manye countreyes and realmes: and as thy father I do gyue vnto the this table of counsaylles. Let
5870 this be the laste worde, that with the Empyre thou shalte be feared, and by this table thou shalte be beloued.

This

(*f.94)*This layde, and the table delyuered to his sonne, the emperour tourned his eyen: 7 within a quarter of an houre he yelded the spirite.

¶ Nowe to retourne to the layde table 7 writyng. There ⁵⁸⁷⁵ was written betwene the bulle and the kynge a scrowe in Greke letters, in maner of heroicall verses, conteynyng in our vulgar tongue thus: I neuer chole ryche tyrant, nor abhorred the poore iuste man: I neuer denied iustice to a poore manne for his pouertie, nor pardoned a ryche ⁵⁸⁸⁰ man for his greate goodes and rycheffe: I neuer dydde, good dedes, nor neuer gaue hyre for affection, nor gaue correction onely for the peyne. I neuer lefte ylnesse vnchaftyfed, nor goodnesse without rewarde. I neuer comyttyed an nother to do iustyce that was clere, nor darke ⁵⁸⁸⁵ iustyce I neuer determyned by my selfe alone. I dydde neuer denye iustyce to theym that demaunded it, nor mercye vnto hym that deserued it: I neuer dyd correction for angre, nor promysed any rewarde in my myrthe: I was neuer charged with thoughtes in my prosperitie, nor di- ⁵⁸⁹⁰spayred in myn aduersitie: I neuer committed yll by mallice, nor any villanye for auaryce: I neuer opened my gates to flatterars nor dissembles, nor lystned myne eares to murmurers: I haue laboured always to be loued of theym that be good, and to be dredde and fered of them ⁵⁸⁹⁵ that be ylle: And fynally I haue faouored the poore, that myghte do but lyttell, and haue ben faouored of the goddes that may do moche.

¶ Hytherto is shewed brefely the worthye and
laudable lyfe of the emperour Marco
Aurelius, and of his deathe.
And here after ensueth the seconde
parte of this boke.

A letter

Bb. ii.

(*f. 94^b)

¶ A letter sent by Marcus Aurelius to Pyramon
his speciall frende. Capitu. xlix.

¶ The firste letter.

5900 **M**Arke oratour Romain, borne at mounte
Celio to Pyramon of Lyon, my greate
frende, desiryng salutation to thy per-
son, and strēgth and vertue ageinst thy
finister fortune. In the thirde kalendes
of Januarie I receyued thy letter, wher
5905 by I perceyue thou hast receyued one of
myn, I set smal store by thy wordes, but I esteeme greatly
what thou meanest by them. So that without declaryng
therof, I haue gadred the sentence. Reason wold bycause
I haue writen so often to the, that thou shuldest the better
5910 vnderstande me: but thou arte so flouthfull, that though
I call the, thou wylte not here: nor though I stryke the
thou wylte not feele. Nowe vnto comme to the pourpose,
thou knowest welle Piramon howe nere we be in paren-
tage, aunciente in frendeshyppe, stedfaste in loue, and
5915 tender of hartis: and whan so euer thou puttest in expe-
rience, that one true frende shulde proue an other. Thou
remembrest wel, whan we were at Rodes, that we dwelled
to gyther in one house, and dyd eate at one table, and all
that thou thoughtest I dyd it in effecte: and that I sayd,
5920 thou neuer gaynsaydest. Certaynly thou were in my hart,
and I in thyn entrayles: I was thyn, 7 thou were myne.
We beinge to gither, hit semed to all other, that we were
but one, and of one wyll. What is it my frende Piramon,
Thou wrytest, how thou arte heuy, and yet thou doest not
5925 shewe the cause why: thou complaynest y^e thou art almost
deed, and thou shewest me not who taketh thy life fro the.
If thou wylt not shewe to me thyn yll destenies, sith thou
arte

(*f. 95) *arte my frende, I wyll thou knowe, that I demaunde it of right, if thou wylte not, I wyl that thou know, that y pitiefull goddis haue determyned, that all pleasures and 5930 profyte shall departe fro my house: and that all heuynes and damages shall be regystred in my persone. Sythe I am prince of all honour, beinge in tribulation, yf thou woldest, thou canste not scape out of my seignourie. For if thou complayne, that thou arte vnhappy in fortune, thã 5935 I esteeme my selfe to be happy in vnhappynesse. I demãde one thyng of the. Whan haste thou sene me haue sufficient, and thou nede? Whan haste thou sene me slepe, and thou wake? and whan hast thou trauayled and I rested? Of trouth sith the goodes and persones are theyr owne 5940 propre, the trauayles and yl aduentures are always common. One thyng thou oughtest to knowe, if in myne amitie thou wylte perceuer, that all my goodes are thyne, and all thyn euylles are myn, syth thou arte borne to lyue easly, and to be gentilly ordred and entreated, and I do 5945 lyue for to trauayle. I saye not this faynyngely: for thou haste hadde experience of me, that whan Jamaría thy syster dyed, that was no lesse vertuous than fayre, thou sawest wel whan she was buried deed, I was buried quick: and at the fowne of my teares thyn eies daunced. Sithe 5950 thou holdest suche suretie of my person, surely thou maist discouer to me thy payne. Yet as often as I haue demanded it, there hath not fayned reasons fayled in the. I require the, and desyre the agayne, and in the name of the goddis I pray the, and in their names I coniure the, that 5955 thou dispose all thy sorowes into myn entrayles. For the waye that thou goest I wyll not leaue one pace to go fro the same: if thou go, I wyll go, if thou rest, I wyl reste: yf thou worke, I wyll worke: if thou leaue of, I wyll do the same: if thou wylt dye, thou knowest well, I wyl not 5960 lyue

Bb. iii.

(*f. 95^b) *lyue. Regarde frende what thou wylt do. For thyn euyls and myn, tourment bothe one harte. If thou haue disple-
 fure, all thynges displease me: if thou wepe, I sweare fro
 hensforthe neuer to laughe: if thou discharge the of thy
 5965 peyne, fro hens forth, I shall take it for myne: if thou go
 alone, I wyll forsake company, and forthwith lyue soly-
 tarily. What wylte thou that I shulde desire? For al that
 euer thou wylte I wyll. Thou complaynest, that in al thy
 trauayles thou canst fynde no parent to remedye the, nor
 5970 frende to counsell the. I swere to the my frende Pyramō,
 that of these two thynges I haue as moche pouertie in
 my hous as thou haste sorowe in thyn. I knowe well the
 remedy shulde come by ryches, 7 by counsell, and consola-
 tion of theym that be wise. And by reason of my heuy de-
 5975 stenies, slouth hath takē fro me the knowlege of wisdom:
 and fortune wyll not permytte me to haue great rycheffe.
 Certaynely I wepe for thy myserie, and yet there is but
 smalle remedye in me. Thou sayest in thy letter, that thy
 neighbours and frendes in promisyng, haue behight the
 5980 many thynges: but in gyuyng they do nothyng. Hereof
 I meruaylle: For the vertuous hande is not bounde to
 make the tonge a fole. Truly though our fete daūce, our
 handes shulde werke at the sowne of the tongue: our lyfe
 endeth in fewe days, and our renoume in fewer. Promys
 5985 is an auncient custome among the sonnes of vanitie, and
 of custome the tonge speket hastily, 7 the handes worke
 at leysure. Nowe let vs speke more particularly.
 ¶ Thou oughtest not to complayne, in that thou fyndest
 not but in a fewe, that dyuers haue founde in the alone.
 5990 Custome is to receyue forthewith and merily, and to giue
 flowely with ylle wylle and repentaunce. They that be
 presumptuous do the one, and they whiche be slouthfull
 doo the other. The Grekes saye: that he that promyseth
 and is

(*f. 96) *and is longe in fulfyllynge, is but a flacke frēde. We Romayns say, that he is moch better that denieth forthwith, 5995 bycause he wyll not begyle him that asketh. In this case I say: He that may gyue and gyueth not, is a clere ennemie: and he that promifeth forthwith, and is longe or he do it, is but a suspecious frēde. What nede wordes to our frēdes, whā we may succour them with workes? Is it not 6000 right, to whom we giue our hartis, ȳ which is ȳ best thing within vs, that we giue him our tonge, that is the worst thyng of all our vices? In good sothe the goddis wyll not suffre in the place of amitie, to desyre any thyng of our frende in haste, that he dryue it of with longe delayinge. 6005 Plato in his lawes sayth: We cōmande, that in our gouernynge that politicke counsayle be gyuen to them, that be in prosperitie, to thentent that they decay not: 7 to succour them that be in heuynes and trouble, to thētent that they dispaire not. Certaynly vnder these wordes are com 6010 prised dyuers great sentēces. Thou knowest wel my frend Piramō, that swete wordes comfort the hart but litel that is in tribulation, but if there be somme good workes therewith. I wyl not denie, but that they to whom we haue giuen oure good wylles in the tyme of our prosperytie, be 6015 bounde to gyue vs of their goodes, 7 to shewe vs fauour in our aduersite. I demande one thinge of the: Wherfore holdest thou it a presumptuous lycence to demande? And reprouest on the other part the libertie of denieng. Truly as there is shame in the demādinge, there is obligation in 6020 some thing to deny: an importunate mā is not worthy to haue mercy. Thou maiste knowe, if thou know it not my frēd Piramō, that to attain to euery thing ȳ is demāded, belongeth only to the goddis. To giue euery thing ȳ is demāded is no signe of any seruāt. And to deny any thing is 6025 of liberte. To wepe for ȳ is denied is the cōditiō of tirātis:

And

(*f. 96^b) *And to conne no thanke for that is gyuen, is the condition of the Barbariens: and to haue euer a stedfast hope of that is denyed, is the guyse of the Romaynes. One of
 6030 these thinges, wherin Gayus Cesar shewed him selfe to be of hygh courage was, that he had moste greattest ioye whan the senate refused any thyng desired by hym. Oftentymes he sayde: There is nothyng wherin Rome giuethe me more glorye and renowme to my persone, than
 6035 whan I shewe my selfe moste hafty to demaunde, 7 they moste styffe to denye me: to thentent that after they shuld knowe what is my power to abyde, and howe lyttel theyr strēgth is to resist. Me thinke it is better to haue recourse to the goddis with vertues, than to displease them with
 6040 quarelles. And to gyue contentation to thy reposed wyll, whan thou seeest thy selfe in tribulation, and that thou demaundest of the goddis and of men to be frustrate, thou oughtest to measure it with a right measure, and to peyse it in a right balaunce, the greate quantitie that hath bene
 6045 giuen to the, and the lyttell quantitie that hath be graunted the. O howe vncourteyse be we to the goddis, and of smalle remembraunce to men, whan we mynishe with forgetfulnes, that we haue receyued of them: and that lytel that hath ben refused vs, we augment it with complayn-
 6050 tes. Frende Pyramon, I am begyled if thou be not fyfty yeres of age, and all that season thou haste done nothyng but receyued gyftes: and yet for all that I haue nat sene the do one day of seruice. Certaynly it is no reson to complayne of .viii. dayes of yll fortune, beinge fiftie yeres of
 6055 age. Thou sayst in thy letter, howe thou haste moch peyn, bycause thou knowest all thy neighbours to be enuious. By good soth I haue payne for thy payne, and of thy meruaylyng I haue great meruayle. For al admiration procedeth but by surmountyng of ignorance, and faulte of experi-

(*f.97) *experience. Doth the quicke vnderstandyng of men rule ⁶⁰⁶⁰ the lyfe of thē that be mortal, that they nede not to thinke of the trauayle to come, hauyng in their handes hasty remedy? If they be hungrye, they may eate, whan they are colde, they may warme theym: if they be flepy, they may flepe: whan they be wery, they may rest: Whan they are ⁶⁰⁶⁵ fycke, they may be healed: whan they are heuy, they maye reioyce, in suche maner, that the thoughtfull lyfe paffeth, some to make tyltes and lyfles, some to make armure and scaffoldes, some to inuent newe gynnes, and some to repayre bulwarkes. I say the world 7 the fleshe do nought ⁶⁰⁷⁰ els but fyghte ageynste vs, and we haue nede at all times to defende vs fro them. All these remedies are against the trauayle of the fleshe. But what shall we do, that the cursednes of enuy extende not amonge all these? Cursed is that welthe, that euery man enuieth. Certainly ageynste ⁶⁰⁷⁵ enuy no fortresse can defend, nor caue to hide, nor hye hill to mount on, nor thycke wodde to shadowe in, nor shyppe to scape in, nor hors to beare away, nor money to redeme vs. Enuy is so venymous a serpent, that there was neuer mortall man amonge mortalles, that coude scape fro the ⁶⁰⁸⁰ bytynge of her tothe, and scratchyng of her nayles, foylyng of her fete, and poysonyng of her poyson. I swere to the my frend Pyramon, that such as fortune lyfteth vp with great ryches, she full of crueltie gyueth theym profounde bytynges. Enuie is so enuious, that to them, that ⁶⁰⁸⁵ of her are mooste denied, and sette fardest of, she gyueth mooste cruell strokes with her fete. This vnhappye enuye prepaireth poyson secretly for them that be in rest amōge dyuers pleasures.

¶ I haue redde dyuers bokes of Hebrewe, Greke, La- ⁶⁰⁹⁰ tyn, and Caldee: And also I haue spoken with many very wise men, to se if there might be foude any remedy ageynst
an

Cc.

(*f. 97^b) *an enuious man. I confesse the trouth: Rede all that can be redde, and imagine all that can be, demaunde all that
 6095 can be demaunded, and ye shal fynde none other cure ageinst this curfed enuie, but to banysh vs fro all prosperitie, and to lye with aduerse fortune. O howe vnhappy are they that be in prosperitie: for iustly they that be sette vp in hygh estates, can not flee fro the perylle of Scilla
 6100 without fallynge into Charibdis. They can not scape the peryl, without castyng their treasours into the see. I saye that the malady of enuie wyl not suffre them to scape fro dethe: and the medicine that is applied to them, wyl not assure their lyfe. I can not determyne me, whiche is the
 6105 beste, (or to say more properly the worste) extreme myserie without the danger of fortune, or extreme prosperite, that is alwayes thretned to falle. In this case to be so extreme I wyl not determin me, fith in the one is a perillous lyfe, and in the other renoume is sure.

6110 ¶ I shal tell the, what wise Cicero sayde, whan he was pursued with many at Rome: Beholde ye Romaines, I holde you not for so good, nor my selfe so ylle to saye the trouthe always, nor always to make lyes. I am certain, that ye bere me none enuie, for that I am not as ye be, but
 6115 it is bicause ye can not be as I am: In this case I had rather that myn ennemies had enuy at my prosperitie, than my frendes at my pouertie.

¶ This oratour spake after the appetite of them that be in prosperitie, leuyng to gyue remedy to them that be sorrowful. And after this Cicero had sene the felde of Farfalye, he toke other counsell and remedy, suche as pleased hym in Rome. For if Cesar had granted him his goodis, yet y turned not his credēce and renoume. Surely frend
 6120 Pyramō I wote no remedy to gyue the ageinst enuy, fith
 6125 thou seeft al the world ful therof. we se how we be the sons
 of

(*f. 98) *of enuie, and we liue with enuie, 7 die with enuy: 7 he that leueth most riches, leueth the gretest enuie. The auncient wise men couceled rich men, that they shuld not haue pore folkes nere them: 7 they admonished the poore, that they shulde not dwell nere to the ryche. And trewely it is good ⁶¹³⁰ reason. For richesse of ryche men is the sede of enuie to y poore. And that for the poore lacketh, and the riche hathe to moche, causeth discord amōge the people. I swere by y goddis immortal frend Piramon, though they that be yll wold y I shulde swere falsely, as moch as riches without ⁶¹³⁵ thought norifheth couetise, so moch the enuious norifheth enuy therby. I counsaile the one thing, 7 that is, that it is no good counsell to flee enuie, and to auoide the vertu cōtrarie to the same. Homer saithe, y in his tyme there were two Grekes extreme in all extremities: The one was ex- ⁶¹⁴⁰ treme in riches, 7 therfore he was persecuted by enuie, 7 y was Achilles: 7 the other was fore noted of malice, but no man had enuie at him, and that was Thiestes. Certainly I had leuer be Achilles with his enuy, thā Thiestes without it. Thou knowest well, that we Romaines serche not ⁶¹⁴⁵ but for reste in our lyfe, and for honour after dethe. And lithe it is so, it is not possible but the man that euery man enuieth his renoume ought to be exalted in the rest of his lyfe. And lithe I see these two thynges in the, suche as be thy frendes taketh lytell thought, for that thyn ennemies ⁶¹⁵⁰ murmure agaynst the. Thou wrytest to me, howe they of Lyons do well, and are merye, excepte thy selfe, that arte heuy, and full of penyuenes. And sith they shewe not to haue pleasnre [sic] at thy displeasure, shewe not thy selfe displeased with their pleasure. For it may chaunce one daye ⁶¹⁵⁵ they shall be sorowfulle, whan thou arte merye: Thanne thou shalte be quite with theym. In an ylle persone there can be no greter euyll, nor in a good man a greater faute, than

Cc. ii.

(*f. 98^b) *than to be displeased with an nother mans welthe, and to
 6160 take pleasure at an other mans harme. And in case that
 all do vs damage with enuie, yet moche more a frend thā
 the enmie. For of myn enmie I wyl be ware, and for fere
 he wyll withdrawe: but a frende with his amitie may be-
 gyle me, and I by my fidelitie shal not perceyue. Among
 6165 all mortall ennemies there is none wors than a frend that
 is enuious of my felicitie. Pyramon my frende, I wylle
 conclude, if thou wylt withdrawe thy selfe fro ennemies,
 than kepe company with thyn owne familiar frendes. I
 wote not what to write more to the, but with all my harte
 6170 I lamente thy heuynesse. Thou knowest howe thy niece
 Brufia was flayn with a dagger by her owne husbande,
 I had great compassion for her deth, and for the renoume
 that she lefte behynde her. Flauius Priscus thyn vncle is
 newly made Censure. The proceffe betwene thy brother
 6175 Fornion and Britio is determyned by the senate: and hit
 pleaseth me righte welle, that they be frendes, and euerye
 man well content. The boke intytuled the consolation of
 heuynes I haue ended, and layd it in the Capitol. I haue
 writen it in Greke, and that is the cause that I sent it not
 6180 to the. But I do sende the a ryche swerde, and a fayre gir-
 dell. Faustyne my wyfe dothe salute the, and sendeth thy
 wyfe two sclaues. The goddis be my keepers, and comfort
 the in thy present heuynesse. Marke the man fortunate, to
 Pyramon fore discomforted.

¶ A letter sent by Marcus the emperour to Cor-
 nelius of the trauayle of warre, and
 vanitie of triumph.

¶ The seconde letter.

Marke

(*f.99)* **M**Arke emperour of Rome to the Corne- 6185
 lius my faythefull frende, salute to thy
 persone, and good fortune to thy desy-
 red lyfe. As thou in tymes passed haste
 ben perteyner of my traueyles, I haue
 sente to calle the to gyue the pleasure of 6195
 my triumphes. By the haboundance of
 rycheffe, diuerfitie of captiues, fierfnes of capitayns that
 we haue brought to Rome, thou mayst perceyue what pe-
 rils we haue suffred in this warre. The Parthes ar good
 men of warre: and as euery man findeth in their owne lōd 6195
 defendeth their houses with stronge hert: and surely they
 do lyke good men. For without reason we dye of affection
 to take other mens goodes: and they with reson do labor
 to defende that is their owne. Lette no man take enuie at
 the Romain capitayn, for any triumph that is giuen him 6200
 by his mother Rome: For for one daye of honour, he is a
 M. dayes in dispaire of his lyfe. I wyll not speake that
 I myght say of them that be in warre, and dwel in Rome,
 ben cruel iuges of their owne fame. And sith that the pro-
 pre renoume of a man lyeth in other folkes tongues, it is 6205
 not sayde bycause his persone hath meryted, but bycause
 that they do shewe their enuie. But our foolyshenes is so
 folyfhe, and the reputation of men so vayne, that for one
 vayne worde, more than for our profytte, we put our lyfe
 in daunger, and lay our honour to guage [sic] with trauayle, 6210
 rather than to lyue, and to assure our renoume with reste.
 I sweare by the goddis immortall, that the day of my tri-
 umph being in the chariot, I was as penfiue as I myght
 be. O Rome cursed be thy foly, 7 wo be to hym that hathe
 brought vp in the so moche pryde. And cursed be he that 6215
 hath inuented so greatte pompe in the. What greater or
 more vnegall lyghtnes can be, than that a Romaine ca-
 pitayn

Cc. ii. [sic]

(*f. 99^b) *pitayne, bicause he hath conquered realmes, altered peafibles, destroyed cities, caste downe fortresses, robbed the
 6220 poore, enryched tirantes, shedde moche bloode, and made infinite wydowes, shulde for recompence of all these damages be receyued with great triumph? where hast thou sene a greater folly? Infinite nōbre is destroyed in warre,
 7 one alone shal bere away the glorie therof. And though
 6225 such miserable conquerours merited not to be buried, yet went I through the stretes of Rome. By the immortalle goddis (as a secrete betwene the and me, that whan the chariotte triumphalle came, and the vnhappy prifoners charged with irons: and I remembringe the infinite treasures yll gotten, and heryng lamentations of the widowes sorowfully wepinge for the dethe of their husbandes, and the remembrance of our manyfolde frēdes deed. [sic] though I reioyced me openly, I wepte droppes of blood secretly. I can not tell what persone taketh pleasure in
 6235 hym self of an other mans damage. In this case I praise not the Affiriens, nor I enuy not the Perfians, nor am cōtent with the Lacedemoniens, nor approue the Caldeens, nor content me with the Grekes: I curse the Troyans, 7 condempne them of Carthage, bycause they folowed not
 6240 the zeale of Iustice, but what they dyd in their tyme was with rage of pryde, wherby they and their realmes were broughte into sclaunder, and was occasion to lese vs. O cursed Rome, cursed thou hast ben, and cursed thou shalt be. For if the fatal destenies deceyue me not, 7 myn vnderstondynge fayle me not, and that fortune holde not faste,
 6245 we shall se in tyme to come, Rome shall be in lyke case as other realmes be nowe in our dayes. And where as nowe with tyranny thou arte lady ouer all seignouries, it shall comme by Iustice, that thou shalt tourne to be bounde
 6250 to theym that are nowe vnder thy bondage. O ylle fortunate
 nate

(*f. 100) *nate Rome: I say it bycause that vertue is so dere in the, and makeft folye foo greatte cheape. Peradventure thou arte more autentike than Babylon, fayrer than Hely, rycher than Carthage, ftronger than Troy, better peopled thanne Thebes, more ftores with fhypes than Corinth, ⁶²⁵⁵ more delicious than Thyre, more inexpugnable than Aquilie, more happy than Numance: we fee howe they all are peryfhed, for all their vertues and valyāt defenders, and thou hopeft to abyde perpetually ftores with them y be vicious, and peopled with fuche as be full of vyce. O ⁶²⁶⁰ Rome marke this for certayne, that the glorie that thou hafte at this houre was firft theirs: and that diftruction that nowe is theirs, hereafter fhall be thyn. My dere frēde Cornelius, fhall I fhewe the, the losse of the Romaine people, but I can not tell it the without wepynge? I the ⁶²⁶⁵ emperour of Rome commaunde, I make decrees for the warre (if any countreye aryfe) by fownyng of a trompette to make menne to reyse theyr baners, and to create newe Capytaynes: And hit is a thyng very euydent to fee, that whan they reyse their fterderdes, and haue leue ⁶²⁷⁰ to make and affaylle ennemyes, chyltern leaue their mothers, Studentes leaue theyr fcholes, feruauntes forlake theyr mayfters, and offycers their offyces, to the entente that vnder the colour and crafte of goinge to warre they fhoulde not by [sic] chaftyfed by Iuftyce: They haue no feare ⁶²⁷⁵ of the goddis, nor reuerence to the Temples, nor obedience to theyr fathers, nor loue nor awe of the people, and loue to lyue ydelly, and hate iufte labour, and theyr exercyses are damageable: Somme do robbe the churches, fomme make quarelles and ftryues, and fomme breake ⁶²⁸⁰ gates open and beare the goodes awaye, fometyme they take theym that be at lybertie, and delyuer theym that fhulde be pryfoners: They paffe the nyghtes in playes, and

(*f. 100^b) *and the days in blasphemies: Finally they ar vnfete to do
 6285 wel: 7 are holly disposed to do yl. What shal I say of their
 negligence? I am ashamed to write it. They leaue their
 owne wyues and take other mens, They dyshonour the
 daughters of honeste men, and begyle yonge maydens,
 They enforce their hostesses, and neyghbours wyues:
 6290 and worste of all, the women that do go with theym, sette
 them agog that doo tarye. And so in this maner none of
 these women that so go scapeth without losse of honour,
 and the other ar striken with vices in their hartis bicause
 they tarie. Thinke surely Cornelius, that the entreprises
 6295 are smalle, where as women doo go to warre. Thou knowest,
 that the women Amazones haue made greter warre
 in Grece, than the cruelle ennemies, and not for bycause
 they had not men ynowe, but bycause they were so many
 women. Pyrrhus was ouercome by Alexander, The va-
 6300 lyant capitayne Hanyball was lorde of Italy, as long as
 he suffred no women to come in his warres. And whan he
 was enamoured of a faire yonge damoyfell of Capue, he
 was fayne forthwith to turne his backe to Rome, bycause
 Rome clenfed the feld fro lecherie. For the same cause Nu-
 6305 mancie was caste to the erthe. And I my selfe haue sene in
 the warre of the Parthes .xvii. M. horsemen .lxxx. M.
 fote men, and .xxxv. M. women. And our besynes wente
 so, that fro our hoste I sent awaye Fauistine my wyfe, and
 so dyd other senatours their wyues home to their houses,
 6310 to he [sic] entent that they shulde serue them that were olde, 7
 brynge vp their chylderne. The daye that a Patrician is
 approued by the Senate, and ledde aboute Rome by the
 Consules, the egle is hanged at his brest, and his raymēt
 is reade, and he after ryseth in suche pride, that he remem-
 6315 breth not the pouertie of the tyme passed, but thynkethe
 to be emperour of Rome forthwith. Beholde than what
 they

(*f. 101) *they do. They writh their berdes, 7 ruffle their heres, boy-
stous their wordis, they change their clothes, 7 roll their
eyen that they may seeme the fiercer. And finallye they
loue to be feared, and hate to be loued. And wottest thou ⁶³²⁰
not that they wyll be feared? On a day beinge at Penta-
polyn, a capitayne of myn, not seing me, yet I hard him
sweare and blaspheme, sayinge to a woman his hostesse:
ye villaynous people wyll not knowe the capitaynes of
warre: I wyll thou knowest mother that the erthe neuer ⁶³²⁵
trembleth, but whan it is thret of a capitayne Romaine:
and god neuer causeth the son to shyne but there as we be
obeyed. But nowe frende Cornelius fith I haue blasfoned
his vaunt, harken his vertue and worthynes. I swere to
the, that the fayde capitayne for all his bolte, beinge in a ⁶³³⁰
cruel batayle, was the first alone, that fled fro the batayl,
and lefte the standerde, wherin he dydde inough to cause
me lose the feld. But whan it was done, I caused to strike
of his heed. It is an infallyble rule, that they that shewe
them selfe most fiercest, in effecte are most cowardes. ⁶³³⁵

¶ In dyuers bookes I haue redde, and of dyuers I
haue herde, and in many I haue seene, that hit canne not
fayle in a man sufferynge and pacient, to haue vertue and
force: And it is meruayle that he is stronge and valyant,
that can not suffre. What shall I saye more of these gre- ⁶³⁴⁰
ues and damages, that these men of warre do in passing
through realmes, and of theftes and robberies that they
doo in the houses, where as they lodge? I ensure the, the
worme in tymbre, nor the mothes in the clothes, nor the
sparcle in the towe, nor the darnell amonge the corne, nor ⁶³⁴⁵
the wesell amonge the grayn, nor the caterpyllers in fruit
trees, dothe so moche damage, as one companye of men
of warre dothe amonge the poore people. They leaue no
cattayle vnflayne, no gardeyne vnrobbed, no wyld beest
vncha-

Dd

(*f. 101 b) 6350 *chafed, nor no mayde vndefloured: and yet that wors is,
 they eate without payment, and they wyl not serue with-
 out payment: nor no man can conuerse and endure amōg
 them. Whan they ar payed, by and by they play it away:
 if they be not payed, they robbe and grudge. And the case
 6355 is come to so great corruption, that if thou sawest it, thou
 woldest saye, that eche of them were the heed of rumour,
 and the begynninge of stryfe, poyson to vertues, Pyrate
 of rouers, and capitaynes of all wretched theues. I saye
 not this without wepyng. It is the greattest mockyng
 6360 of all mockeries: and the case goth to such losse and par-
 dition, that these myscheuous people are our homely 7 fa-
 miliar enmies, 7 yet there is no emperour that can haue
 lordshyp ouer them, nor Iustyce chaftise theym, nor feare
 withdrawe them, nor law subdue them, nor shame refreyn
 6365 them, nor dethe that can kyll them: for they be men reme-
 dyleffe: They ouer renne, and eate, and dispoyle euerye
 man. O howe sorowfulle I am for the Rome, that was
 not wont to haue in the such ylle aduentures. Certainly
 in the auncient tyme, whan thou were peopled with right
 6370 and trewe Romainys, and not as thou arte now with ba-
 stardes childerne, than the armies, that went fro Rome,
 were as well disciplyned and morigerate, as the scholes
 of the philosophies, that were in Grece. The olde auncy-
 ent histories wytnesse, that kinge Philyp of Macedonye,
 6375 and his sonne Alexander, were happy in warre, bycause
 they kepte their armies so well ordered, that it semed bet-
 ter, to be a senate that ruled, thā an armie that wold fight.
 I swere to the by myn honestie, that fro the tyme of Quin-
 tus Cincinatus, vnto the noble Marcus Marcellus, in
 6380 the whiche tyme was the greattest prosperitie of Rome,
 the common people hadde greatte glorie as longe as di-
 sciplyne of knyghtehode was well corrected: and we be-
 gan

(*f. 102) *ganne to lose, whan our capitaynes beganne to deserue to be depraued and condempned. O curfed be thou Abye, and curfed be the day, that we had conqueste of the. The ⁶³⁸⁵ goodnesse that hath folowed therby we see it at our eye: and the damage that is come by the shall alwayes be sorrowed. In the we haue wasted our treasures, 7 thou hast filled vs with thy vices: In chaunge of stronge and vertuous men, thou hast sent thy wantons to vs: We haue ⁶³⁹⁰ ouercome thy cites, and thou triumphest of our vertues: we haue beaten downe thy fortresses, and thou hast destroyed our good customes: by force thou art becom ours, and with our good wylls we are nowe thyne: Uniuersally we are lordes of thy realmes, and we are iuste subiectis ⁶³⁹⁵ to thy vices: Fynally Abye thou shalt be the sepulchre of Rome, and thou Rome shalt be the syncke and gutter of the fylthynes of Abye. Certaynly Rome ought to haue bene content with the landes of Italye, whiche is the nauyll of the worlde, without conqueringe the landis ⁶⁴⁰⁰ of Asie, to bereue them from other. I lyke wel all thingis that I haue redde of my predeceffours, sauinge that they were prowde, as we their successeffours be to hardye. And I sweare vnto the, that yet peraduenture after the peyn, we shall becomm vertuous and good. All the rycheffe ⁶⁴⁰⁵ and tryumphes, that our forefathers haue broughte out of Abye, the goodes and the rycheffe, and they also with the tyme at laste hadde an ende: but the wantonnes and vices that are in vs their chylderne, dothe remayne styll vnto this daye. I wolde to god that the Pryncis knewe ⁶⁴¹⁰ what an outragious thyng hit is to inuente warres in straunge landes and countreyes, and what trauayle they serche in theyr persons, and what thoughtes in their mindes, and what murmure and mocyon in their subiectis, what ende and wasting of their riches and their treasures, ⁶⁴¹⁵

What

Dd. ii.

(*f 102^b) *what pouertie to their frendes, what pleasure to their enemies, what damage to their natyue countreys, 7 what poyson they leaue to their owne enheritours? I sweare to the, that if I had knowen that I do knowe, I wyll not
 6420 say but by bloudde shedde they be taken, if they had offered them selfe with good wyll and shedynge of teares, I wolde not haue taken them. The trouth is, that our capitaynes neuer flew .xx. M. men of Asie, with theyr armure that they bare out of Italye, but they losse mo than a .C.
 6425 M. Romaines with the vices that they brought to Rome: As eatynge openly in the palayes Aufonios, suppyng in their houses secretly, the women to clothe them as mē, and the men paynted as women, The patritiens bearyng Meafques, The Plebeyens vsynge smelles, and the em-
 6430 perours to weare purple. These .vii. vices of Asie, Asie sent for a presēt to Rome. Seuē noble capitayns brought them, I leaue to shewe their names, leest I shulde shame them with their faultes, sythe they were so noble men by their high dedes. Nowe ye princis beholde what profytte
 6435 it is to take straunge realmes with your warres: I leue the vices that they recouer, and the vertues that they lese, with the pardicion of their trefure that they loue. For certayn there is neyther kyng nor realme brought to extreme pouertie, but by warrynge a straunge realme with finall
 6440 extreme conqueste. I demaunde of the myn owne frende Cornelius: What causeth princis to lese their treasure, 7 require them of other? Whan their owne can not suffyse, than they take fro churches, serche dyuers loones, reyse tributes, and inuent newe subfydies, gyue and spende on
 6445 straungers, and make him selfe hated of his owne, pray euery man, and haue nede of euery man: aduenture his persone, and aduenture his renoume? If thou knowest not this, I wyll tell the, if thou wylt here me. These princis

(*f. 103) *cis counsell with men, they lyue with men, and finally at the laste they are men. At one tyme by pride that surmoũ- 6450
teth them, an other tyme by counfeyll that fayleth them, some imaginenge by their fantasies, some sayinge, that yf he haue great goodes, he ought to encrease his fame, and that no memorie shuld be of him, if he inuented no warre, and that the emperour of Rome by right is lorde of al the 6455
erthe. And in this maner as his fortunes is bafe, and his thoughtes high, the goddis suffreth that whā they thinke iustly to wyne an other mannes iustely, iustely they lose their owne. O princis, I can not tell what begyleth you, for where as ye may be ryche with plesure, ye wyl be pore 6460
with warre: where as ye may be beloued, ye wil be hated: where as ye may play and sporte your selfe, and reste in a sure lyfe, ye wyll commytte your selfe to the chaunces of fortune: and where as other haue necessitie of you, ye put your selfe to be in the necessitie of other. And though the 6465
prince make no warre, he shoulde not suffre his people to warre: Euery man ought to leaue the warre. Frend Cornelius, I demaunde of the, whether is more trauayle to his persone, or damage to his realme, a kynges ennemies or els his owne armie? His ennemyes robbeth on the co- 6470
stes, but our men robbe all the londe: The enmyes maye be refysted, but we dare not speake to our owne mē: The ennemies enuade vs on one day, and recule backe agein, but our garisons robbe daily and abydeyth styll. The strā-
gers haue some feare, but ours are shameles: and at the 6475
laste the farther our ennemies goo, the more they waxe lyberall, and our armies of men euery day encrease in crueltie, in suche wise, that they offende the goddis, and be importunate to their princes, and noyfull to the people, lyuyng to the damage of euery man, and be vnprofyta- 6480
ble to all meu [sic]. By the god Mars I fwere to the, and as I
may

Dd. iii.

(*f. 103^b) *maye be holpen in the warres, that I gouerne with my hande, I haue mo complayntis daily fro the senat on the capitaynes that ben in Illyrike, than on all the ennemies
 6485 of the Romaine people: I haue more feare in maynteynyng one standarde of a hundred men, than to giue batayle to l. M. ennemies. For the goddis and fortune dispatcheth a batayle in an houre, be it good or bad, but with these other I can do nothyng in al my lyfe. Thus it hath
 6490 ben my frende Cornelius, and thus it is, and thus it shall be. Thus I founde it, thus I holde it, and thus I shall leaue it: Our fathers dyd inuent it, and we susteyne hit, that be their chyldren, 7 for yll it shal abyde to our heires. I saye to the one thyng, and I thinke I am not deceyued
 6495 therin: To endure the great damage and no prouffite of these people, I thinke it is a gret folly in man, or els a gret punishment of the goddes. Be the goddis so iuste in all iustice, and so true in all veritie, that they wyll suffre vs without reason to do yll in straunge landes, to whom we
 6500 dyd neuer good, and in our owne houses to haue shrewde tournes of them, that we haue alway done good? These thinges frend Cornelius I haue writē to the, not bicause I thinke it nedeful that thou shuldest know it: but my spirit resteth in shewyng of it. Panutius my secretarie went to
 6505 visite this lande, and on the way I gaue hym this letter: I do sende to the two horses, I thinke they be good. The armure and iewels that I wōne on the Parthes, I haue departed them. Howe be it I sende the a chariot of them. My wyfe Fauptyne saluteth the, and sendeth to thy wyfe
 6510 a riche glasse, 7 an ouche of precious stoncs to thy daughter: I beseeche the goddis to gyue the good lyfe, and me a good dethe. Marcus thy louer writeth to the Cornelius his frende.

To

(*f. 104)

*¶ To Torcatus beinge at Gayette in confo-
lation of his banyshement.
The .iii. letter.



Arke of mount Celio, companyon of the em-
pire, to the Torcate beinge at Gayette, patri- 6515
cien Romaine, salute to thy person, and ver-
tue and force ageinst aduerse fortune. It is a
thre monethes syth I receyued thy letter, the
whiche myn eies myght not make an end to rede, nor my
handes to answere. I am so heuy for thy heuynes, so peyn 6520
full for thy peyn, and so hurt with thy wound, that where
as thou wepest with thyn eies outwardly, I wepe with
my hart inwardly. I wote what difference is betwene the
tree and the crope, and the dreme fro the trouthe: I here
of thy tranayles [sic] by straunge persons, and I fele them in 6525
myne owne person. But where as true frendes be, the pey-
nes are in cōmon. The great infortunes oughte to be suf-
fred for one thyng, bycause they declare who are the true
frendes: I knowe by thy letter, howe thou arte banished
from Rome, and all thy goodis confiscate, and that for 6530
pure heuynesse thou arte sycke in thy body. I wolde go se
the, and counsell thy persone, bycause that thou myghtest
see, with what harte and wyl I doo wepe for thy mysad-
uenture. But if thou take me for thy true frende, beleue
me as I beleue the, that is howe moche I feele thy myf- 6535
aduenture. Of trouthe as thou arte banyshed bodily, soo
am I banyshed inwardely in my harte. And yf thy goo-
des or substaunce be taken away fro the, I am robbed of
a good frende and companyon. And if thou lackest thy
frendes, I am abydyng amonge myn enemies. Though 6540
I myght remedy by workyng of my power, thy banysh-
ment: yet I wyl counsel thy spirite with certayn wordis.
If I

(*f. 104 b) *If I be not forgetfulle, I neuer sawe the content in this lyfe: bycause thou were euer belie in thy prosperitie, and
 6545 wery of any aduerfitie. And as now I se the dispayre, as though thou were but newe come into this world. I haue knowen the this .xxxii. yeres in great ioy: and nowe thou complaynest of .vi. monethes that fortune hath toured her whele. O Torcate, now thou mayst knowe, that ver-
 6550 tuous men feare more two dayes of prosperitie, than two hundred of aduerse fortune. O howe many and oftentimes, and in howe many cities thou and I haue sene flyp fro their prosperytes, charged with vyces of other and straunge enmities? In suche wise, that their vaynglorie
 6555 and flypper prosperitie endured but two dayes: and the hurtes and losse that they haue hadde, and the cruell and extreme enmyties the whiche also that they haue wonne, lasteth to this daye in their heires. Contrarye wise we see some set in the height of tribulations, the whiche haue escaped by castynge away vices, clothinge them with ver-
 6560 tues, wery of euyll warkes, folowyng goodnes, beinge frendes to all, and ennemies to none. What wylte thou that I shulde say more? They that are happye, are ouercome in peace, and they that are vnhappy, do ouercomme
 6565 other in warre. Therefore my frende Torcate, it semeth to me no lesse necessitie to gyue good councelle, than to prosper with great prosperite, to remedy them that are in gret heuineffe. For as wery are they that go the playn way, as they that colteth the highe mountaynes. By thy letter I
 6570 perceyue, that what time thou hopedst thou haue ben in most quietnes and rest, this yll fortune and chance felle on the. Be not abashed therof. For thoughe that all newe chaunces causeth newe thoughtes presently, yet therby cometh more cause of stedfastnes in tyme to come. Certaynly the
 6575 tree beareth not so moche fruit there as it spryngeth first
 as

(*f. 105) *as it dothe whan it is newe fette in an other place. And al good smelles are more odoriferous, if they be wel medled and chaufed togyther. I pray the tell me abidyng in the world, being a childe of the same, and louyng the worlde, what hopest thou to haue of the worlde, but worldly thinges? The worlde shal always be the world. At this houre thou arte worldly, and shalt be worldly, and shalt be entreated, as the worlde is accustomed to entrete them that be worldly. If thou knewest thy selfe and thy weakenes, if thou knewest fortune 7 her mutation, if thou knewest the men and their malices, if thou knewest the world and the flatteringe therof: thou wolde reyse the fro the hande therof with honour, and not be chaastyed with infamy. O howe we hope to sprede by fortune? O how often without respecte vnwares we passe this lyfe? O howe often we trust the bobaunce of this worlde: and we trust therein as moche as though it neuer begiled man. I say it not bicause I haue harde it sayd, nor bicause I haue redde it in bokes: but for we se it dayly with our eyes: some decaye and lese their goodes, other falle and lose their credence, some falle in fighthe, and lese their honour, and other arise and lose their lyues, and some thinke, that all are free by priuilege, where as neuer none were priuyleged. O my frende Torcate of one thyng I am certayne, and let euerie man take it for a warnyng: Men by whom we be borne be of so yll disposition, and the worlde so fierse and cruel, with whom we lyue, and the glydinge serpente fortune so full of poyson, that they hurt vs with their fete, 7 byte vs with their tethe, and scratche vs with their nayles, and swelle vs with theyr poyson: so that the passinge of the lyfe is no lesse than takynge of deathe. And in case thou haste sene somme lyue longe without any falle of fortune, thinke not it is well: for it is not by good aduenture, but the

Ee

(*f. 105^b) *the more his yl fortune. The worlde is so malycious, that
 6610 if we take not hede to prepare agaynst his wrinche, it wil
 ouerthrowe vs to our greater losse and hurt. Moche so-
 ner dye they that ben helthful with the infirmities 7 syck-
 nes of few days, than they that be weke with their lāgour
 of many yeres. I say this bycause I hold it for most sure-
 6615 tie, that the myserable man, that maye not lyue withoute
 myseries, shulde fele the peynes by lyttell and lyttell, and
 not al at ones. We ete dyuers thynges by morsels which
 if we shulde eate hole, wolde choke vs. In lyke wise in di-
 uers dayes we suffre dyuers trauayles, whiche al togyder
 6620 wolde make an ende of vs in one day, and than fythe the
 goddis wyll permytte, that thy myffortune shall fall, and
 that the ryuer of thy decay ouerflowe her chanel, 7 where
 thou wenest to be most sure, thou shalt be in gretest peryl:
 we shall minister to the a syrope, to the entent y thou lose
 6625 not thy good renoume, though thou haue lost thy goodis
 that be nought. Tell me I praye the Torcate, why com-
 playnest thou as he that is sycke? why criest thou lyke a
 foole? why syghest thou as a desperate man? why wepest
 thou as a childe? Thou hast gone an yll way, and com-
 6630 playnest of thy reste. Thou arte clothed to goo throughe
 busshes, and thou sayest that thy gownes do teare. Thou
 walkest amonge the stons, and arte sorye bycause thou
 fallest. Thou hast leaned and thought not to fall, and fi-
 nally thou arte sette with the worlde, and thynkest to be
 6635 free with heuen. Wylte thou haue sauconduite of For-
 tune, that is ennemye to many? She can not gyue the na-
 turalitie, whiche is mother to all thinges. I wyl aske the
 one thyng: I put the case that the see had promysed the
 alway in suretie of her, and the lkye clere wether, the so-
 6640 mer snowes, and the wynter flowres: It wyll not be of a
 suretie Torcate. If nature can not fulfyll this, being
 thy

(*f. 106) *thyn owne mother, thinkest thou than, that fortune wylle gyue it the, whiche is thy vniuste stepmother? kepe this rule for certayne and neuer forgete it, that al natural cour[-]les are subiectes to mutation euery yere. And all worldly⁶⁶⁴⁵ folke that truste on fortune, shall suffre eclyps euery moment. And than lyth naturall thynges can not be always in one case, of necessitie the goodes of fortune muste peryshe, lythe they be superfluitie. Right vniuste shulde the ryght wife goddis be, yf they had made perpetuall that,⁶⁶⁵⁰ whiche is damageable to so many: Or that which is profitable, to haue created it fallyble. I wyl speake no more of thy prosperitie in tymes pастe, but nowe I wylle come to the banyshment that thou suffrest presentely. Suspicious fortune made a fayre at thy gate, knowynge what⁶⁶⁵⁵ she solde: and thou wyft not what thou boughtest: She made a dere a [sic] bargayne, and solde it dere to the: she hath gyuen the lowre for swete, and the swete is tourned in to lowrenesse for the: she hath gyuen the yuell for good, and hath tourned thy good to yl. And finally she hath begyled⁶⁶⁶⁰ the at a iust price, not wenyng to the, that she wold haue done the damage: and though that she was malicious in sellyng to the, thou were no lesse folysshe in the byenge therof: for the more there is in fortunes shoppe, the more suspecte is the marchandyse. O howe vnhappy we be, for⁶⁶⁶⁵ in that market is nothyng solde but lyes. And she trusteth nothyng but vpon the pledges of our renoume: and at last wyl not be payde but with the shotte of our lyfe, and that is the moste greattest and myscheuous wounde.

It is openly knowen to euery man as to the, that where⁶⁶⁷⁰ as they thynke not to leese theyr wares, false Fortune in that they purpose, to their myshappe lyeth in awayte, and is redy to bye theym. Thou makest me very sore abashed Torcate. I haue reputed the ryght wyfe and vertuous,
and

E. ii. [sic]

(*f. 106^b) 6675 *and nowe I take the for a losfe foole. In good soth whan
 I sawe the yonge in Gayette, I iudged the worthy to go-
 uerne Rome: and nowe that thou art olde, thou deseruest
 nothyng but to be caste in a galey as a sclaue. O how ma-
 ny thinges are there to knowe a man by? There is not so
 6680 high a toppe of a hylle, but hit is trodden with fete [sic]:
 nor soo depe a see but hit is founded with leade? And in a
 hundrede yeres one manne can not attayne to knowe an
 other mannes hart. Telle me I praye the, what lokedst
 thou for of fortune, after so greatte welthe? Lyuyng to
 6685 the worlde, thynke to be in the worlde. The childerne of
 vanitie go and walke so longe, that at lasfe their difordy-
 nate desires can not take fro the worlde their antike vila-
 nies and shamefulnes, the whiche fortune dothe not with
 them that she hath reyled vnto the skyes, thynkest than,
 6690 that she shall bowe with the to the lowest parties? O fole
 Torcate, thoughtest thou to passe the see without peryll,
 to eate flesshe without bones, To drinke wine withoute
 lyes, to walke in the wayes without findyng stones, To
 bye wheate without chaffe? In good soth, if thou though-
 6695 test to bye yl goodes without hyndrance of thy good fame
 and maynteyne thy good renoume without losse of yl got[-]
 ten goodes, I wold wytte of the, what thou dyddest hope
 to do, sythe so longe season thou haste made a face in the
 world. Xxxiii. yere thou hast ben in the grace of the world,
 6700 nowe it is tyme fro hensforth to fall at some discord ther-
 with. Abelle, kynge of the Affiriens, hoped but seuen
 yeres of good prosperitie. Quene Simiramis but one-
 ly fyxe. Abell kynge of the Lacedemoniens fyue. Eutrete
 kynge of the Caldeens .iiii. Alexander kynge of the Gre-
 6705 kes .iii. Amylcar the great of Carthage but ii. and our
 Gayus Cesar Romain but one onely, and many before
 and syth not one yere: and syth thou were the moste vn-
 knowē

(*f. 107) *known of lygnage, The groffest of vnderstondyng, and the leest of power, the darkest of fame, and the most weke in merites, wherfore than complaynest thou of fortune? ⁶⁷¹⁰ If thou haddest ben vertuous in al these .xxx. yeres, thou haddest neuer eaten without thoughte, nor neuer spoken without suspecion, nor slepte without stertinge, thinking what thou haddest to do, and wherin fortune myght begyle the. He that so longe is besette aboute with so many ⁶⁷¹⁵ enemies, I can not tell howe he shulde take any sure slepe. Ah Torcate Torcate, the worlde hath so many falles, and we knowe so yll howe to continue amonge theym that be worldly, that scantly we are fallen whan our handes and fete lyke sclauens be so fast tied, that we can not lose them. ⁶⁷²⁰ It fylleth our persons ful of vices, strengtheth our synnes to wickednes, weaketh our hartis in vertues, and finally rendreth our spirytes in a traunce, and maseeth our vnderstandyng, and chaungeth our taste, and suffereth vs as beastes to shewe our euylles that we fele with way- ⁶⁷²⁵ lynges, all though as men we durst not shew it. And that this is true, it appereth, that whan we see, that we lose, we lament and complayne, and none can helpe hym selfe. This smalle lesson I wryte to the, to the ende that thou lyue in lesse thoughte. The horse colte that thou dyddest ⁶⁷³⁰ sende me, leapeth very well: The Spanyell that thou sent to me, is well, but he is wylde: The calfe was very fatte, and I wolde haue eaten it forthewith, but my wyfe Faustyn besyly prayed me to kepe it, and thynketh that it was stolne in a gardeyne. I sende to the .ii. M. sexters for to ⁶⁷³⁵ succour thy [sic] in thy trauayles. And as touchyng thy banishment at tyme conuenient I shal dispatche thy matters with the senate. The consolation of the goddis, and the loue of man be with the Torcate. The sodeynnes of euils and the yre of the furies be seporate fro me Marcus Au- ⁶⁷⁴⁰ relius

Ee. iii.

(*f. 107^b) *relius. Faustyn my wife greteth the: and in lykewyfe fro her parte and ours, to thy mother in lawe, and thy wyfe haue vs recommended. Marc of Rome sendeth this wrytynge to Torcate of Gayette.

¶ A letter to Domitius of Capue to comforte him in his banysshement.

The fourth letter.

6745 **M**Arke oratour Romain, borne on mount Celio, to the Domitian of Capue salute and consolation of the goddis consolators. In this right colde wynter there arole in this land a myghty gret winde, and by reason of the great wynde arole
6750 great quantitie of waters, and the waters haue caused great humidities, and great humydities brede dyuers maladies and diseases: and amonge all the infirmities of this lande I haue the goute in my hande, and the ciatica in my legge. For the helth of my wyfe Fau[-]
6755 stine I can neyther go nor wryte. I saye it bycause I can not write to the so longe as the case wolde require, and as thy thanks meryteth, and my desire coueteth. It is shewed me by occasion of a hors thou hast hadde stryfe with Patricio thy neyghbour, 7 that thou art banished fro Ca-
6760 pue, and set in the prison Mamartyn. Thy goodes are cō[-]fisked, and thy chyl dren banyshed, thy house cast downe, and haue put thy neuewe out of the senate, and banyshed the the senate for .x. yeres. It is tolde me that all the daye thou wepest, and wakest by night, in company thou diest,
6765 and doest loue to reste solytarielye, Thou hatest pleasure, and louest penyuenes: And I haue no meruayle: for sorrowfull hartis lyueth with teares and wepynge, and be
mery

(*f. 108) *mery 7 laugh in dieng. I am right sorie to se the loft: but moche the more y for a so smal a thyng thou shulde be cast away, as for a hors to lese al thyn estate. O how variable ⁶⁷⁷⁰ is fortune, and howe sone a mysadventure falleth before our eies? Fortune gyueth these euyls, 7 we se it not: with her handes she toucheth vs, and we fele it not: she tredeth vs vnder her fete, and we knowe it not: she speket in our eares, and we here her not: she crieth aloude vnto vs, and ⁶⁷⁷⁵ we vnderstonde her not: and this is bicause we wyll not knowe her: and fynally, whan we thynke we are mooste surest, then are we in mooste peryll. Trough it is, that with a lyttell wynde the fruyte falleth fro the tree: and with a lyttell sparcle, the house is settè a fyre: a small rocke bre- ⁶⁷⁸⁰ keth a greatte shyppe, and with a lyttell stone the legge is hurte. I say that oftentimes of that we feare not cometh greatte perylle. In a close Fistula rather than in an open the surgens doute the peryll: In depe styll waters the pilote feareth more than in the greate hye waves: Of se- ⁶⁷⁸⁵ crete enbuschement rather than of open armies the warrior doubteth: I wyll not onely say of straungers, but of their owne propre, Not of ennemyes, but of frendes, not of crewelle warre, but of peace, not of open damage or sclaunder, but of secrete peryl and myschiefe, a wyse man ⁶⁷⁹⁰ oughte to beware. Howe many haue we seene, that the chances of fortune coude not abate, and yet within a short whyle after vnwares with greatte ignomynous shame hathe ouerthrowe them? I wolde witte of the, what reste can a persone haue, that trusteth euer vpon the prosperite ⁶⁷⁹⁵ of fortune, syth for so lyghte a cause we haue sene so great a stryfe in Rome, and suche a losse to thy hous. Seynge that I se, I wyll not feare the wyndes of her trauayles, nor beleue in the clerenesse of her pleasures, nor her thonders that shall feare me, nor trust vpon her flatteringes: ⁶⁸⁰⁰ nor

(*f. 108^b) *nor thanke her for that [she] abydeth with me, nor be sorye for that she taketh fro me, nor wake for any trouthe that she sayth to me, nor ryle for any of her lesynges, nor laughe for any thyng that she desireth of me, nor wepe for gyuing
6805 me leaue, if thou knowest not the cause of this I shall tel the. Our lyfe is so doubtfull, and fortune so waywarde, that she doth not alway threate in strikyng, nor stryketh in thretenyng. The wyfe man gothe not so temperately, that he thynketh at euery steppe to falle, nor lyue with so
6810 smalle a thought to thynke to ouerthrowe in euery playn pathe. For oftentimes fals fortune shaketh her weapon, and striketh not, and an other tyme striketh without shakynge. Beleue me of one thyng Domitius, That parte of the lyfe is in mooste perylle, whan with lyttel thoughte
6815 or care men thynke them selfe most sure. Wylt thou se the trouthe therof. Aduyse the of Hercules that scaped fro many perylles by see and by lande, and yet dyed betwene his lēmans armes. Laomedon peryshed not vnder Troy, but was flayne in his house. Great Alexander dyed not
6820 in makinge warre ouer al the erth, but he was ended with a lyttel poyson. The couragious Caius Cefar saued hym selfe in .lii. battayles, and after in the senate was flayne with .xxxii. strokes of penkniues. Asclipio brother of Pom[-]peie, perished not flotyng .xxii. yere vpon the see, but he
6825 was drowned after in drawyng water at a welle. Tenne capitayns that Scipio had with hym in Affrike, that vāquished many harde batayles, as they were mockinge on a bridge, they fel fro the brydge and were drowned. Good Drufio that had ouercome the Parthes, the day of his tri[-]
6830 umph goinge to his chariot there fell a tyle that claued asunder his heed, so that vayneglorye was the ende of his good lyfe. What shuld I tel the more? Thou knowest wel that Lucye my syster hauynge a nedel on her bosom playenge


(*f. 109) *enge with her chylde betwene her armes, the chylde with his hande hytte the nedell fuche a stroke into her bodye, ⁶⁸³⁵ that he flewe his mother. Gneo Ruffyn the confull sent ageinst the Germayns, of our tyme was so valyaunt in armes, that none of our predeceffours surmounted him: yet he kembynge his olde whyte heares, one of the tethe of the combe entred into his heed, wherby grewe an im- ⁶⁸⁴⁰ posture, by occasion wherof he ended his honorable life for so small a case. Howe semeth the Domitius? As I do tel the of so small a nōbre, I coude recyte infynite ex-āples. What misfortunes fel after good fortunes? what myfchaunce after great glorie? what myfaduenture after ⁶⁸⁴⁵ great happe? what great euyll they take of their deathe after the begynnyng of great welthe in the lyfe. I beinge as they, knowe not what to desyre, but they beinge as I am wyll rather chuse the laborous and honourable dethe, than an yll dethe and an honourable lyfe. To my ⁶⁸⁵⁰ semynge he, that wyll be a man amonge men, and not a beaft amonge bestes, ought to trauayle fore to lyue well, and moche more to dye better. For at the fynall ende an yll dethe putteth great doubte of the good lyfe: and the good deth excuseth the yll lyfe. I haue wrytten to the at ⁶⁸⁵⁵ the begynnyng of my letter, that by reason of the humidities, the gowte greueth me ylle. But to satisfie thy desire, I wolde wryte with my hande more at lengthe. Two days the loue that I bare to the, hath fought with the payne that I endure. My wylle wolde write, but my ⁶⁸⁶⁰ fyngers can not holde my penne. The remedy is, syth I may not as I wolde, that thou wylte take as thyn owne that I may do, as myn owne dede. Faustine my wyfe saluteth the, who by reason of my diseases is halfe ylle at ease. It is shewed her, that thou hafte greate payne of a ⁶⁸⁶⁵ hurte of thy face, she hath sent the a boxe with baume, that

Ff

(*f. 109^b) *that thy hurte shall nat appere in thy vilage, if thou canst fynde any grene almondes or new nuttis, Fauistine prayeth the to sende her some by this bearer. I haue but lytell
 6870 store of money, therefore I send the a gowne and thy wife a kyrtell. No more but I pray the goddis to giue the that I desire for the: and to giue me that thou desirest for me. And beside that I do write to the with my hande, I gyue to the myn owne propre herte.

¶ A letter sent fro the emperour to Claudius and Claudyne his wyfe, bycause they beinge olde lyued as yonge perſones.

¶ The .v. letter.

6875  Arke of mount Celio to the Claudius and Claudine husbande and wyfe, dwellynge in my warde, I desire helthe, sendyng you this letter. The trouthe is, bycause ye are my frendis, 7 vnder my charge, I enquire
 6880 of them that come fro you of your estates: and by theym that go to you, I sende recommendations to you bothe: yf ye haue my good wylle demaunde it of your hartis. And yf in your stomacke ye repute and take me but as a suspicious frende, thanne I thynke my selfe
 6885 euen cleane condempned. The cruelle forgetfulnesse, the whiche may be cauſer of myne absence, peraduenture banysheth the good dedes that ye haue receyued of my perſone. If in any thyng I haue entreated you with lyes, than I require that ye entreate me nothyng with trouth.
 6890 But if I haue bene alwayes your good neyghbour and frende, yf ye haue any nede of myne honour, than be to me as good. Gayo Furion my frende, as wel as your parent, paſſyng this waye to Alexandrye, hath shewed me
 many

(*f. 110) *many thinges the which were done in Rome: and amōge
 other he shewed me one thyng, that caused me to laugh ⁶⁸⁹⁵
 whan I herd it: and yet it was right greuouse to me, whā
 I thoughte theron. Some thynges we take sodeynly in
 sporte and mockerie, the whiche afterwarde well confide-
 red, maketh vs very sorie. He shewed me, howe that ye
 seme to euery man right auncient, and very yong in your ⁶⁹⁰⁰
 doinge: for ye aray your selfe dayly with newe apparell,
 as ye shulde go to weddinges: and where as men do ho-
 nour you as ancient persons, ye shew your selfe wanton:
 and whan folke renne to se gewgawes, ye are not the last.
 There is no lyghtnes in Rome, but it is registred in your ⁶⁹⁰⁵
 house. Thus ye gyue your selfe to plesures, as they that
 thynke neuer to haue displeasure. And finally whan ye
 shulde lyfte vp your handis, ye entre newly into the wa-
 ges of the worlde. Trewely my neyghbours and frendis
 to speake with due reuerence, I am ashamed of your vn- ⁶⁹¹⁰
 shamefastnes, and am no lesse sorie for your fautis. There
 be dyuerse greuouse faultes, that are made lyghte by the
 honeste withdrawinge of them. And some other that are
 but smal fautes, 7 fyndyng no ways to leue them are este-
 med very great. By all the goddis, I can fynde none oc- ⁶⁹¹⁵
 casion, howe for to excuse your euylles: but I see inowe
 wherewith to condempne them. Wherfore pardone me, yf
 that I am so vnhonest to speake so moche, if ye be not ho-
 neste in your lyuyng. In good sothe I denaye not, but
 that thou Claudius haste ben right free and lyberalle of ⁶⁹²⁰
 thy persone, and thou Claudine ryght faire of vylage,
 7 many persons for the beautie of thy forheed haue ben cu[-]
 rious to haue had y to wife: but I wold wyt of y youth of
 the one, 7 beautie of the other, in vsing al your liues in va[-]
 nite, what goodly trinkettes ye hope to were in the strait- ⁶⁹²⁵
 nes of the Sepulchre. O great foles ye and foles agayn.
 Do ye

Ff. ii.

(*f. 110^b) *Do ye not knowe yet, that the tyme fleeth with mouyng
of wynges? The lyfe trauayleth on her way without lif-
tynge of her fete: fortune stretcheth her without styrring
⁶⁹³⁰ her armes, 7 the world voydeth it selfe saying nothinge,
the fleshe consumeth without felyng, and our glorie passeth
as it neuer had ben: and finally deth assaileth vs er
euer he knocke at the gate. Certaynly it is impossible for
to make synewes of blode, of veynes to make bones, of a
⁶⁹³⁵ craggy rocke a playne way, and of possible to make im-
possible: I mene y none shal think, but that the grennelle
of youthe, shall waste and wydder in auge: O worlde,
what a worlde arte thou? so lytel is our force 7 our weake-
nes so greute, that without resistyng drownest vs wyl-
⁶⁹⁴⁰ lingly in the depenes of thy peryllous whirlepoole: and
hydest vs in the thickest of thy mountaynes: and ledest
vs out of the brode way wandryng by thy narrow pathes,
and bryngest vs into the rugged waye. I do meane, that
they that be greatest in fauour, thou bringest into daun-
⁶⁹⁴⁵ ger, to the entente that with one stroke of thy fote thou
mayst ouerthrowe them. O worlde .lii. yere I haue bene
in the, and yet thou neuer saydest one trouth to me, and
I haue taken the with .x. M. lyes. I neuer desyred no-
thyng of the, but thou dydest promyse it me, but thou
⁶⁹⁵⁰ neuer gauest me any thyng promysed: I neuer treated
with the, but thou begyledst me, I neuer arryued at the,
but thou lost me: I neuer sawe thyng in the, wherby I
shulde loue the. For all that we se in the, is worthy to be
abhorred. And beside this, I wote not what is the worlde.
⁶⁹⁵⁵ O what faute is in vs thy worldly wretches? For if thou
hate vs we dare not hate the: if thou braule with vs, we
muste be styll: if thou spurne at vs we muste suffre the:
yf thou beate vs with a staffe, we say nothyng: And yet
if thou woldest haue vs gone we wyll not go. And worste
of

(*f. 111) *of all is, that we had rather serue the for nothyng with ⁶⁹⁶⁰
 trauayle, than the goddis with prayer and reste. I swere
 to the by the immortall goddis, that often tymes I make
 accompt of my yeres passed: and an other tyme I reuolue
 my bokes to see what I haue redde. And lykewyse I de-
 maunde of my frendes to gyue me counsel to know wher ⁶⁹⁶⁵
 in it is that I wolde speake. I beinge at Rhodes redinge
 Rhethorique, My lorde Adrian kepyng me there, at the
 age of .xxi. yere, my yonge fleshe, and no lesse weake thā
 tender, at the firste worke I founde solytarinelle, and the
 solytarines with libertie adored the worlde: In adorynge ⁶⁹⁷⁰
 I felte it, in felynge I folowed it, in folowing I ouertoke
 it, in ouertaking I toke it, in takinge I proued it, in pro-
 uynge I tasted it, in tastinge I foude it bytter, in fynding
 it bytter, I hated it, in hatynge it, I lefte it, in leauynge
 it, it retourned, and retournynge I receyued it. And in ⁶⁹⁷⁵
 this maner .lii. yeres we haue eaten of one breadde, and
 dwelled in one hous. Whā I saw it displefed, I serued it,
 whan it sawe me thoughtfull it chered me, whan I sawe
 it in prosperitie, I demaunded it, whan it sawe me merye
 it begyled me. And thus we be to gyther vnto this daye, ⁶⁹⁸⁰
 not gyuyng me leaue to go, nor I wyllynge to departe
 fro it. O worlde thou hast so many countenaunces in thy
 vanytie, that thou ledest all wandryng in vnstables.
 Sith we suffre the to take vs, thou wilt neuer deliuer vs:
 if we withdraw our fete fro the snare of fortune, forthwith ⁶⁹⁸⁵
 thou fettrest our legges fast with irons: and if by chance
 we fyle the yrons, anon thou manaclest our handes: and
 though the way be straye, the pathe sharpe, the iourneye
 longe, and our fleshe weake, yet our bodies are euer ladē
 with vices, and our hartes fulfilled with thoughtes and ⁶⁹⁹⁰
 penyuenes. Of one thyng I haue great meruayle, and
 I can not deuyle what it is: without any constreynt to the
 contra-

Ff. iii.

(*f. 111^b) *contrarie, we go surely ouer the bridge, and yet we wylle go an nother waye, and though the same way be sure, yet
 6995 we wyll aduenture into the gulfre: if the wayes be drye, yet wyll we go throughe the dyrte and myre and plaffhe: hauynge meate for our lyuynge, we serche for poyson to kylle vs, we serche to be losse, and may be assured: without interest we commytte synne, feinge payne commynge
 7000 withall: and fynally to the intente that we shulde be taken for good, we shote at the whyte of vertues, and hyt the butte of vyces. One thyng I confesse, though it be myn owne shame, Paraduenture in tyme to come it shall be profytable to som other: In .l. yeres of my lyfe, I wold
 7005 proue all the vices of this lyfe, to se if any thyng myght haue satisfied the humayn malyce: And after I had sene all thyng, I founde that the more I dyd eate, the more I dyed for hungre: The more I slepte, the more sluggy I was: the more I dranke, the more thyrst I hadde: the
 7010 more I rested, the more wery I was: the more good I hadde, the more couetous I was: the more I fought, the lesse I founde: And finallye I neuer toke payne for any thinge, but I was euer lette: and than anone I hadde appetyte to an other. Lette no man thynke to lyue in the
 7015 fleshe, and satisfie the fleshe. It hath power to take from vs our lyfe: and we haue no power to take from it the disordinate couetyse. I wolde fayne knowe of the goddis, why our dayes shuld haue an ende. O cruel goddis what is this? We can neuer passe one good lyfes day, we do but
 7020 taste it, and so passe our lyfe: and lyfe is but a dreame, and deathe waketh it. Lette euery man knowe, that the worlde taketh our wylle, and we with our good wyl giue it therto: and it taketh our wylle to the ende to contente vs, and prayse that we prayse, and the tyme passeth soo,
 7025 that we lyue after the cursed tyme. To attayne vertues
 we

(*f. 112) *we haue good defire: but to attayne to vices we putte to all our warkes. This haue I layde for you Claudius and Claudyne, that in thre score yeres ye wylle not yssue nor goo oute of the pryson of the worlde: Hauynge your feete putrified with yrons and chaynes. What is than ⁷⁰³⁰ to be hoped of yonge perlonnes whiche be of fyue and twenty yeres olde? Except my memorye fayle me: whan I was with you, ye hadde your newewes lonnes of your chyldren maryed, and nyeces doughters of your doughters maried: and me thynketh whan the guynes come, ⁷⁰³⁵ the seafon of cheryes is not comme: and whanne the newe wyne is tounned, the drye huskes are caste oute. Canne ye suffre dyuers newewes lonnes to your chylterne in your howse, and fewe yeres in your perlonnes? Seldomme we see the fruyte and the flowre to gyther: ⁷⁰⁴⁰ for whan the one is ripe and in seafon, the other is cleane gone and auoyded.

¶ In this case I thynke meruayle, howe ye can be of manye yeres, and seeme to be yonge. I knewe none other thyng, but whanne ye maryed Lamberte your doughter to Drufio, and Matryne your nyece, doughter of your doughter, with Lamberte, that were all lyttelle and yonge chylderne: and sythe that ye be of a good aeye, and lacke good, may gyue vnto eche of theym twentye yeres of your aeye in stede of theyr dowrie. And so ye ⁷⁰⁵⁰ shall vnlade you of yeres, and charge you with other mennes goodes and substaunce. No lesse this mattier passeth in my thoughte, than the shorte clothe dothe in a false weuers handes. Ye haue strayned it on the tentours, and drawen hit on the perche for to lengthen the lyfe. If ⁷⁰⁵⁵ ye were made fayre clere cordwayners waxe, and swete of smelle, that ye myghte be drawen out alengthe, hit were well doone: but ye are but as fruyte of almondes,
femynge

(*f. 112^b) *femyngre drie without, and worme eaten within. For the
 7060 loue that I haue to you, and for neyghbourheed that ye
 haue had with me, I desire styll frendshyppe of you, that
 lyke as I knewe you yonge and very yonge, so to knowe
 you olde and very old. I say not that ye surmoût in age,
 but your wytte fayleth you. O Claudius and Claudine,
 7065 I wylle ye knowe, that to lusteyne youthe, and to deface
 age, to length the lyfe, and driue away dethe: it is not in
 mens handes that desireth it: it is in the goddis that doo
 giue it, whiche accordinge to iustyce and our couetyse, gi-
 ueth vs lyfe by weight, and deathe without measure. Ye
 7070 may know that our nature is corruption of our body, and
 our bodye is putrifaction of our wytte, and our wytte is
 guyde to our soule, and our soule is mother of our desy-
 res, and our desires are fleers of our youthe, 7 our youth
 token of our age, and our age spyre of our dethe, and deth
 7075 the house of our lyfe, wherin to [sic] youthe goth on fote, and
 fro age we canne not flee on hors backe. I wolde wyte a
 thinge of you: what finde ye in this lyfe? wherfore dothe
 lyfe content you after .lxxx. yeres of aage? eyther ye haue
 ben good or yl: if ye haue ben good and vertuous, ye shal
 7080 not reioyce you with yll goddes: if ye haue ben yll, than
 as well desire dethe, to the entent ye shulde be no more yl:
 or els iustly ye might be flayn by iustyce. For he ȳ hath bē
 yll tyl .lxx. yeres of age, in hym there is no hope of amend-
 ment. Whan the couragious great Pompeie, and Caius
 7085 Cesar were ennemies, and beinge in cruell ciuil batayles
 Rome was infamed and theym selfe losse: The annales
 shewe that suche as came in fauour of Julius Cesar out
 of the west, and the succours of Pompeie out of the east,
 amonge other there came certayne people out of Barba-
 7090 rie, dwellyng among ȳ moūtayns Riffees toward Inde:
 Their custome was whan they came to thage of .l. yeres,
 to

(*f. 113) *to make great fyres, and brenne them selfe quick in sacri-
 fyce to their goddis, and the same daye the parentis and
 [chil]dren wolde make great feaste, and eate of the fleshe halfe
 halfe [sic] brent, and drinke wine with the ashes of the bones. 7095
 This was sene with the eies of Pompei, bicause that som
 accomplished the yeres of fiftye in his campe. O golden
 worlde, wherin were suche men. O happy people that in
 all the worldes to come, hath left such a memorie of them.
 They dispised the worlde and forgatte them selfe. What 7100
 strokes gaue they to fortune? what delytes for the fleshe?
 and howe lyttell sette they by their lyues, and yet more, to
 set so small store by dethe: O what bridell was this for the
 vicious, and what hope for the vertuous, what confusion
 for them that loued this lyfe, and what ensample, not to 7105
 feare dethe, haue they lefte vs? And sith they dispised their
 owne propre lyfe: It is then to be thought, that they died
 not to thentent to take other mens goodis, to thinke that
 our lyfe neuer shal haue ende, therefore our couetyse neuer
 hath ende. O glorious people, and .x. M. tymes blyssed, 7110
 that lefte their sensualitie and vanquyshed the naturalle
 wylle, beleue not that ye se, but gyue fayth to that ye ne-
 uer sawe, as they that se nothing go ageinst the fatall de-
 stinies: who gothe againste the waye of fortune, gyue a
 wrynche to the lyfe, robbe the body at the deth, wyne ho- 7115
 nour of the goddis, not that they shulde length your lyfe,
 but to take the reste of the lyfe. Archagatus surgien, and
 And [sic] Anthonius the phisitien, and Esculapius the father
 of medicines, I thinke wanne but lyttelle in that lande.
 Who commanded these Barbariens to take sirope in the 7120
 mornyng an [sic] to take pylls at nyght, and to refreshe them
 with mylke, to take clere barley to anoynt their lyuers, to
 day to be lette blode, and to morowe to take a purgation,
 to eate one thyng, and to absteyn fro many thynges? Thā
 me

Gg

(*f.113^b) 7125 *me thinke that they beinge of .l. yeres of age, and you of .lxxx. at the leaſte, ſhulde be egall with them in wyſedom. And if ye wyl not take dethe in good worth, yet at the left amende the yll lyfe. I remembre wel of a long tyme, that Fabricius our neybour wyllled vs to beware of a mocke-
 7130 rie, the whiche if it be not broken, there ſhall folow great diſhonour. And ſithe he ſhewed me ſoo good a leſſon, I wyll pay you with the ſame money. I wyll ſhewe it you, if ye poore aged folkes do not knowe it: ye be ſuche, that your eyes are bleared, your noſes droppynge, your hea-
 7135 res whyte, your heringe dulle, your tongue falteryng, your tethe waggyng, your face wryncled, your fete ſwol- len: your ſhulders croked, and your ſtomake diſtemperid, finally if the graues coude ſpeake, they myght rightfully calle for you to come, and inhabyte in them. Of trouth it
 7140 is great compaſſion to beholde yonge ignorance: that open their eies to knowe the infortunes of this lyfe, whan it is tyme to cloſe them, and to entre into the graue. And therof cometh that it is in vayne to gyue counſel to vayn yong people. For youth is withoute experience of that it
 7145 doth, 7 is ſuſpect of ſ̃ it hereth, 7 wyl not beleue ſ̃ is ſayd, and diſpraiſeth other mēs couſel, 7 is right poore of their owne. And therefore I ſaye Claudius and Claudyne my frendes, I fynde without compariſon none ſo ylle an ignorance of goodnes that holdeth theſe yonge perſones,
 7150 as is the obſtination of theſe aged perſons in yl. The definition of yll, is a man not to knowe that he oughte to knowe: yet it is wors to haue the knowlege of wyſedom, and to lyue lyke a brute beaſte. O ye olde goutye people, ye forgette your ſelfe, and renne in poſte after the lyfe, and
 7155 ye neuer regarde what ſhall falle, tylle ye be ſuche as ye wolde not, and without power to retourne backe, 7 hereof cometh, that ye lacke of lyfe, he[ſic] wyll ſupplie it with folly.
 Than

(*f. 114) *Than awake ye that be flombring, haue no force to flepe, open your flepy eies, and accustom you to do wel: Take that is nedeful for you: and finally appoynt you betimes ⁷¹⁶⁰ with dethe, or he make execution of your lyfe. Lii. yeres I haue knowen theym of the worlde, yet I coulde neuer knowe none so olde, nor so putrified in their membres, but that their hartes were hole to thinke vnhappynes, 7 their tongues hole to make lyes. Take hede ye poore olde per- ⁷¹⁶⁵ sons, me thinke fith somer is paste, ye hafte forward with the tyme: and if ye tary a smalle seafon, yet ye make haft to take lodgyng. I meane that though ye haue paste the day in the see with peryll, the night of dethe wyll take you at the porte of helth. Mockes do passe with mockynges, ⁷¹⁷⁰ and trouth with trouthe: though I haue fene you ryghte yonge and hardy, nowe I se you very olde: Though the knyght passe his cours, yet it is not his faute if the horfe be not well reyned: but at the ende of his cours, he wyll trymme his hors: Let not that begyle you, that of custom ⁷¹⁷⁵ hath begiled men: That is ye shalbe as wel esteemed thereby, as though ye had moche moneye. I beleue ye folowe dyuers, and yet they all haue enuy at you. But trufte me, that at the ende, honour is gyuen to a yonge persone pore 7 vertuous, rather than to an olde person ryche 7 vicious. ⁷¹⁸⁰ The ryche may haue power to be more esteemed with pore people, and accompanied with ryche and couetous: but the vertuous poore person shalbe better esteemed and lesse hated. What can be greater confusyon to a persone, or more shame to our moder Rome, than to se in dyuers pla- ⁷¹⁸⁵ ces the olde people behaue and appoynt theym as yonge folke, as though they lyke the vyne leues dyd newly burgein? What thyng is it to see the olde persones nowe in oure dayes, brayde and make fayre theyr whyte heares, trymme and kembe their beardes, weare strayte shoues, ⁷¹⁹⁰ their

Gg. ii.

(f. 114^b) *their hosen garded, their shertes frounced, their clokes of
 scarlette, their bagges embrowdred, their chaines of gold
 about their neckes, fringes of gold and syluer about their
 apparell, estrige fethers vppon their hattis lyke grekes,
 7195 perles and rynges on their fyngers lyke Indiens, their
 gownes long lyke flamine prestes, and finally worst of al
 whan dethe hath gyuen them day, than they answere that
 newly they wyll serue a lady? O how many haue I kno-
 wen in Rome, that were highly renoumed in theyr youth.
 7200 And after through wanton lyghtnesse they were but losse
 in their age: and worst of all, they losse their renoume in
 theyr age, and the fauour of their parentes, and the pro-
 fyte of their children. Certaynely Guagyn [sic] Caton of the
 ancient linage of the Catons was in Rome a priest of the
 7205 law .v. yeres, 7 prouost .iii. yeres, and Censure .ii. yeres, 7
 dictatour one yere, and Confule .v. tymes, 7 whan he was
 past the age of .lxv. yeres, than he began to serue Rosane
 doughter of Gneus Curcius a lady ryght fayre 7 yonge:
 and he doted so farre in her loue, that he spent all that he
 7210 had to serue her, and wold wepe lyke a chyld whan he saw
 her. It fortuneth this lady fell sycke of a feuer, and she li-
 sted to eate newe grapes, and it was in springe tyme, whā
 there was none nipe as than in Rome. He sent for some to
 the felde of Danubius that was a .M. and .v. C. myle
 7215 thense, and this was shewed to the senate, and they orde-
 ned that Rosana was closed in with the virgins vestales,
 and the old man was banished perpetually out of Rome,
 and his children lyued in great pouertie, and the father
 dyed infamed. I beleue that ye haue herde of this. There
 7220 were dyuers that reputed for a greate vilanye the dede of
 the olde louer, and prayed the sentence of the senate. But
 I thinke if Guagin had had as many yonge persons in
 his banishment, as there was old amorous persons that
 toke

(*f. 115) *toke by hym example, I thinke there shuld not be so many men losse, nor so many women so yll married. And therefore ⁷²²⁵ the beste is, that suche people, whan they be warned by their seruantes, and reprobued by their parentis, and desired by their frendes that they make not excuse 7 say, how they be not amorous but in mockery. Whan I was very yōg both of age 7 wyt, on a nyght I met with a neyghbor ⁷²³⁰ of myn nygh to the capitol. I was his neuew 7 son to his sonne, 7 I sayd to him. My lord Fabricius ye ar amorous thus and thus: He answered me, I do it but for pastyme. Certaynly I had meruayle to mete him at that houre, 7 I I [sic] was abashed of that answere that he gaue me. In them ⁷²³⁵ that be fore aged and of sadnes and grauitie suche requestes ought not to be called amours, but rather dolours, not a pastyme but a losse tyme, no mockery but a folyshenes. For in loue with mockerie foloweth the trouth of infamy. To the Claudius and Claudine, I demaunde of ⁷²⁴⁰ you olde louers, what is it to be polyshed and arrayed as ye be so gayly, but the bronde of the tauerne, where there is nothyng but vinegre, fayre egges 7 nothing in them. gylte pylls and bytter in taste, an olde botell, and a newe stopell, a hole wounde ranced vnderneath, the fygure of ⁷²⁴⁵ an oxe to take partriches, a flyppre way, where no fote is sure, and finally an olde louter is as a knyghte decayed, y helpeth to lese money 7 can helpe no man fro peryl. Of trouth the old lecherous louter is as a fwyne with a white heed and a grene taylle. Than me thynke ye that be my ⁷²⁵⁰ frendes and neyghbours, ye take no hede in brekyng the wynges out of feson whan the fethers be gone: and yet ye begyle me not, to say that there is tyme inough. Beleue me, that that maye be done in the day, leaue it not tyll the nyght of your age. For the blunt knyfe cutteth but yl with ⁷²⁵⁵ the edge, and he that is wont for to eate the fleshe, can not eate

Gg. iii.

(*f. 115^b) *eate the boones. Than lette vs comme to the remedye to redresse this dommage, that is, yf the howse begynne to falle, shone and staye it not with pieces of slender tymbre, 7260 but with streight pyllers of the lyfe, that we haue to yelde the goddis, and to men by good fame. And if the vyne of all our vertues be redy to be gadered, at the least lette vs gather that is lefte vs by vnderstondynge. And sithe the waters of our reste are waisted with our yll werkes, lette 7265 vs water them with newe muste of good desires, and thā the good goddis wyl be content with the seruices that we ought to do for the merites and rewardes that they do to vs, so that if we desire to attayne golde for our werkes, yet to pay vs with the copper of our good desires. And finally I say to you Claudius and Claudyne, if ye haue offered the meale of your youth to vyces, offre now at this tyme the branne of your age to the goddis. I haue wrytten thus largely to you as I thynke: and bycause ye shal not be taken as cowardes, nor I for hardy, gyue no part 7275 of this letter to any person.

¶ And I desyre you to haue me recommended vnto all my neyghbours in Rome, namely to Drusine the honorable wydowe. I sende to the two thousand sexters, thou shalte gyue a thousande [sic] of them to Gaurina the dough- 7280 ter of thy doughter. I sende it to her for a pleasure that she dydde me at a feaste. Fauptyne my wyfe is very lycke. Thou shalte gyue the other thousande to the Uestale virgines, that they maye praye for her vnto the goddis. To the Claudyne, Fauptyne my wyfe sendeth a coffre, but 7285 by the goddes I canne not telle what there is within it. Nowe that ye be aeged, I beseeche the goddes to sende you and me and my wyfe for to ende the reste of our dayes in a good lyfe. Marke your neyghbour and frende hath wryten this with his owne hande.

A letter

(*f. 116) *¶ A letter sente fro Marke the Emperour to Labinia a Romain widow for to comfort her for the deth of her husbände. The .v. [sic] letter.

MArke of mounte Celio, firste Confule Ro- 7290
mayne sent ageynste the Daces, to the Labinia Romain lady, wyfe to my good frēde Claudine, salute to the and consolation of the goddis consolatours. I thynke welle, thou haste suspecte, that I haue so lytel set 7295
by the, sith in thy profounde 7 greuous hurtes my consolation hath ben flouthefull. But I remembre thy noblenes, whiche can neuer fayle: and my good wyll, the whiche hath euer desired to serue the. I am in suretie that thy great vertue shulde put away the suspecte. For thoughe 7300
I am the laste to comforte the, yet I am the firste that feleth thy dolours, and shall not be the laste to remedy thy troubles. And in case that ignorance is the end of al vertues, esperance for al vices, as wel somtime great plesure taketh away rest fro the wise folkes, 7 sclādreth the inno- 7305
centes: moch better among vs latyns we fynd with ignorance of vices, more thā the grekes do with the knowlege of vertues. If ȳ we be ignorāt, we haue no payne to abide it, nor sorow to take it. I say it bicause I haue knowē, ȳ I wold not know, and that is the trauayles ar at an ende of 7310
Claudin thy husbände, 7 now beginneth the sorow of Labinia. I haue knowē it certayn days, 7 wold not discouer it to ȳ, for it shuld haue bē cruelte. She ȳ hath ben in trouble so lōge a space with absēce, ȳ I shuld haue giuē knowlege of the deth of such an entierly desired husbād, 7 it had 7315
ben no reson, that she of whom I haue receiued so many good dedis, shuld haue of me so yl newes. And sith ȳ hour ȳ I knew, that ye wyft therof, my payne hath ben double.
I fele

(*f. 116^b) *I fele his dethe, and nowe I fele in his dethe my solytarines, and thy defolation. Thou hast reason to wepe, not for that he is with the goddis in reste, but for vs myferable persons lyuinge in the power of so many ylls, therefore we shulde not cease to take payne and sorowe. O Labinia, oftentimes I haue thoughte, for what thyng I myght fyrste wepe, for the ylle that lyueth, or for the good that dyeth. For as moche hurteth the yll that is found, as the good that is losse. It is greatte payne to se these innocentes dye, and surely it is no lesse payne to se the malicious people lyue. But of that that of necessitie muste nedes come, whan it cometh we ought not to sclander hit. Shewe me Labinia, dost thou nowe know of how good conuersation the goddis be, to whom we hope to go, and howe yll the men be, with whom we are conuersant, that as the yll are borne to dye, in lykewyse the good dyeth to lyue. For a good man alway lyueth in dyenge, and the yll alwayes dyeth in lyuinge. And than sith the goddis hath caused him to come to them, than it is no great thyng that they haue taken fro the. I am in certaine thy desired husband Claudyn, and my true frend, seing where he is, and remembrynge what he hath scaped, had rather to be styll there as he is, than to returne ageyn to the. Of trouth the remedies for wydowes is not to thynke of any companye passed, nor of the solytarines present, but to thinke of the rest that they hope to come to. If hythervnto thou hast bē in payne abydinge in thy howse, nowe reioyce the bycause he abydeth for the in his, for thou shalt be moch better en, [sic] treated amonge the goddis than here amonge men: nor consent not to thynke, that thou haste losse hym all onely. For syth we all reioyced of his lyfe, we are than bound to wepe for his dethe. The greattest sorowe to a fycke harte amonge all other sorowes, is to se other reioyce at his dolors.

(*f. 117) *lours: and contrarye wyfe, the greattest ease amonge all greues of fortune, is to se that other feleth their sorowe. Al that my frend wepeth for me with his eies, and al that he feleth of my sorowes, dischargeth somewhat myn in- 7355 warde payne. The bokes in the tyme of Auguste the emperour sheweth, howe as he was nere to the ryuer of Danubius, he founde a maner of people, hauynge this custome. The same houre whan a husbände taketh a wyfe, or a louer, they wold swere by their goddis neuer to wepe 7360 nor sorowe for any maner of infortune, but to forget their owne propre troubles, and to dye to remedye their louer, 7 so in lykewise eche to do with other. O glorious worlde, O right happy age, O people of eternall memorie, wherein the men were so humble, and their louers so true, that 7365 wolde forgette their owne sorowe, and wepe for other. O Rome beyng Rome: O tyme yll spent: O lyfe yll applyed, O small thought rechelesse, Is in these dayes the hartes present separate from welth, and assured without remedy in euyl, that men forgettyng that they be men, 7370 tourne them selfe to beastes? I desire to gyue the lyfe, and thou dyest to take awaye my lyfe: Thou wepest to se me laugh, and I laugh to se the wepe. And thus without profyte of any of vs we lese, and we reioyce in lesynge of our selfe. By the lawe of an honest man I swere to the Labi- 7375 nia, if thy remedy lay in my handes, as thy sorowe dothe at my herte, thy pytiefulle wepynges shoulde not hurte me, nor thy heuy and wofull solytarynes of thy husband: but syth thy remedy and my desire can not be accomplyshed, and that with dethe, nor with them that be deed we 7380 haue no power, than remyt it into the handes of the goddis, who can moche better delyuer vs than we can chuse. We se by experience naturall, that some syckenes is healed by wordes, that be sayd to vs, and somme by wordes that

Hh

(*f. 117^b) 7385 *that be layde to vs, and some with wordes do leaue other
 medicins. I say this, bicause the hartis that be in peyne
 make a lee of thoughtes, somtyme comforted with bene-
 fitis done to the person, more than with wordes spoken in
 their eares: an other tyme the sorowfull herte is more cō-
 7390 forced with wordes of a frende, than with all other serui-
 ces of the worlde. O how sorowfull am I, for in all these
 am I false, confiderynge the highnes of the honourable
 lady Romaine, and the smal abilitie of me Marc of moūt
 Celio, I fe my selfe so vnable to comforte the, and to re-
 7395 medy the I lack substance, I haue made the a fore woūd,
 the whiche wolde be taken in worthe. I wyll not paye the
 with ynke and paper, the whiche I may do with my per-
 sone, for he that gyueth counsell with wordes, may reme-
 dy with workes, if he shew hym self a frende in tyme past,
 7400 and taken in suspect to be an ennemy in tyme to come. If
 thou hast reputed me hytherto for thy neighbour and pa-
 rent to thy husbande, I pray the nowe to take me for [sic] thy
 husbande in loue, and for thy father in counsell, and for
 sonne in seruyce, and for aduocate in the senate, in suche
 7405 maner that I hope thou shalt say, all that I haue losse in
 many, I haue founde in Marc alone. And bycause that
 in greuous conflyctis, where as crafte and subtyltie is
 forgotten, the vnderstondyng is altered, and the reason
 withdraweth, than there is as moche necessitie of good
 7410 counsell as of a meane remedy. Claudyn nowe deed was
 my frende, and I Marc alyue am his, and also by thy de-
 seruyng thou mayst commaunde me what thou wylte:
 and for the loue that I haue to the, thou mayste desyre of
 me any thyng nedefull. I pray the eschewe the extremitie
 7415 of the Romaine wydowes. For in all extremities lyeth
 the vice, for al such weryeth them selfe, 7 anoyeth the god-
 dis, 7 lefeth them that be aliue, 7 doth no profit to them y
 be

(*f. 118) *be deed, but they put suspect to them y be il, as did Fulvia wife to nable [sic] Marc Mercello, she seing her husband buried in the felde of Mars, scratched, her vilage, and tare 7420 her heer, 7 brake her tethe, 7 at euery pace swounded, 7 two senators held her by the armes, bicause she shuld not hurt her self: Thā said Flauio Cenfurio, let her alone, for this day she wil folow the iourney of widowes, 7 so it was, for whiles y the bones of Marcello were a brēning, she was 7425 entreting to mary an other husbād, 7 yet more to be notid one of the senatours y led her, gaue her his hande, as one Romain to another bi perpetual mariage. This case was so foule, 7 takē of euery mā for a gret vilanie, 7 al the Romans there present were abashed, 7 were in suspect neuer 7430 after to beleue widow in Rome. I say not this Labinia, bycause thou wilt do so: for by the god Mars I swere, the hart of Marc hath of y no such suspect, nor thy great age wyl not suffre it, nor the auctoritie of so sadde a matrone wyll demande it. I require the right hartily, forgette not 7435 the honestie that oughte to be in a Romaine woman, nor retrace that is requisitte in a wydowe: for if thou be wydowe of 'folytarines, that thou felest by him that is deed, than comfort the of the reputaion [sic] that is holden of the by them that be liuing. I wyl say no more to the at this time, 7440 but that thy renoume may be suche with all men, to caste suche a bridell vppon theym that be ylle, to cause them to be stīl: and to them that be good, to gyue them spurres to serue the. And if ye wyll thus do, take no thought for any besynes that ye haue in the senate. My wyfe Faustin gre- 7445 teth the, and oftentymes wepeth for this mysaduenture. I send the money to pay thy creditours. The goddis that haue gyuen reste to Claudine thy husbāde, giue comfort and consolation to Labinia his wyfe. Marc of mounte Celio hath writen this with his owne hande. 7450

A letter

Hh. ii.

(*f.118^b) *¶ A letter sente by Marc the emperour to Cyncinatus his frende, bycause he beinge a gentylman became a marchant.

The .vii. letter.



7455

Arc Edillis Censure, to the Cincinatus of Capue sende salutation for thy person, force and vertue ayenst sinyſter fortune. Syth the feaſt Bèreſcinte, moder of the goddis, I haue ſene no ſeruaunt of thy houſe, nor letter of thy hand, that I haue redde, the whiche putteth me in great ſuſpection of thy helthe, and that thou arte in ſome peryll, or els thou diſprayſeſt our amitie. Diſcharginge
 7460 not thy ſelfe with ſo lyttell thoughte, nor forgette vs nat with ſo great recheleſnes: for thy trauaylle can not be ſo omche [sic] in writing, as it ſhuld be conſolation to me to rede thy letters. And if thy hande waxe ſlowe from trauaylle of writynge, yet enforce thy harte for myn eaſe, wherein is
 7465 ſemblaunt of true frendes. In that I wyl put the fro annoyauce, and thou to do me pleaſure: thou knoweſt wel the ſmall diſtaunce that is betwene Capue and mount Celio, was not the cauſe of our frendeſhype, but the ſpace hens to Illirico ſhuld not cauſe vs to be ſtraungers. The
 7470 delycate wyneſ ſent out of their owne countrey to ſtrangers take the gretter myght: and the farther that the perſons of true frendes be ſeperate, the ſooner they ought to vnyte 7 ioyne togyther their mindes. Shew me I pray y Cyncinate, ſyth thou haſt euer founde me true, why haſt
 7475 thou any ſuſpect of my deſire? The grene leues outward ſheweth, that the tree is not drye inwarde: and the good werkes openly notiſieth the inwarde hart ſecretly. Where it is not perfite, there is alwayſ breakyng and faylyng in ſeruice:

(*f. 119) *seruice: for he that perfytly loueth, perpetually and faithfully serueth. And I am as moche astonied of thy flouth, ⁷⁴⁸⁰ in demaundyng somewhat of me, as of thy cowardyle to write. I wyll confesse to the one trouthe, if thou haddest as moche hardynes as wyll and thought of the small efecte of my letter myght satisfie to the greatenes of thyn vnderstondyng, it shulde abyde than for yl done, but not ⁷⁴⁸⁵ for shorte, as he that throweth his speare. In tyme paste whan I was yonge, and thou olde, thou in thy counsels, 7 I with my money eche gaue to other: but at this houre that thy heed is whyte, men reken the to be olde, 7 yet thy workes accuse the to be yonge. Reason is that I succour ⁷⁴⁹⁰ thy pouertie with money, 7 to remedy thy lyghtnes with counsell. For the good wyl that I haue to the, and for the lawe of amitie that I owe to the, I wyll aduertise the as a vertuous man ought to do, and that is to remembre the benefites that he hath receyued, and to forget the iniuries ⁷⁴⁹⁵ done to hym: esteeme moche his owne smalle power, and holde the greatnes of other at nothyng: fauour the good and diffimule with the euyl: be great with the greatest, and communicalle with your inferiours: presently doo good dedes, and also of them that be absent speake good ⁷⁵⁰⁰ wordes: The greuous losses of fortune, holde them in smalle estimation, and the small losse of honour, hold that in great estimation: for one thyng aduenture not money. and for dyuers doubtful aduenture not a certayntie: and finally be frende to one and ennemie to none. These thin- ⁷⁵⁰⁵ ges ought he to haue, that amonge good, wyl be accompted good. I knowe well thou hast left to be pretour of the warre, and nowe thou haste sette thy selfe by lande and by see to vse marchandise. Thou makest me fore abashed, to conquere thyn enemies as a Romain, and now to take on ⁷⁵¹⁰ the the office, to persecute thy frendes as a tyrant. Wylte thou

Hh. iii.

(*f. 119^b) *thou do yll to thy neyghbours, and leaue the straungers?
 wylt thou take away the lyuynges fro hym that gyueth vs
 liuing, 7 take away the deth fro him that takith away our
 7515 life? wylt thou to them that be mouers and strangers giue
 moderation, 7 fro them that be sobere take away their rest?
 Thou wylte giue to them that take away fro vs, and take
 fro them that gyue vs: delyuer them that be condemned
 and condempne innocentis. Thou wylt be tiraunt to the
 7520 common welth, and not defender of the countrey. Than
 lithe to all this he aduentureth hym that leaueth dedes of
 armes, and becometh a marchaunt: I studye soore what
 hath meued the to leaue chivalrie, wherin thou haste had
 great honour, and nowe to take on the an office, wherby
 7525 foloweth so moche shame and rebuke. Surely I thinke
 in the none other excuse, but that thou art olde, and canst
 not clymbe the mountaynes, and nowe thou syttest styll
 and robbest the places. To olde men olde malady, whan
 outwarde force fayleth theym, than forthwith they arme
 7530 them with malyce inwarde. I say it by the fore couetous
 persons as thou art now. One thyng I wyl say thou hast
 taken an office, wherby al thy felowes haue robbed in di-
 uers days. Thou shalt gyue accompt therof in one houre,
 ye and after the tyme shall come, that thou shalt lese all in
 7535 a moment. For the goddis permyt that one shall be a cha-
 stisement of diuers, and longe tyme chastifeth all. Howe
 is it my frende Cincynate, that in the howse of thy father
 Cincinate were speares, and not writynges hangynge? I
 haue sene his halle full of armnre [sic], and not with fardels, 7
 7540 portall and gates ful of knightes, 7 not marchantis. Cer-
 tainly there haue I sene the scole of noblenes, and not as
 it is now the denne of theues. O Cincinate curled be so vi-
 layn an office, the marchātis liue porely to die ryche: 7 let
 vs say ageyn curled be it, bicause the couetise of one that
 is yll,

(*f. 120) *is yll, wolde be accomplysshed to the preiudice of many ý 7545
 be good. I wyll not hurt the by thy predeceffours, but I
 wyl aduertise the of thy myserie and of thy successours. If
 thou thinkest, ý thy vertue shuld holde to the ende of the
 worlde, as the worlde holdeth to the, as it semeth by thy
 white heares, hold me excused of the trauayle in perſwa- 7550
 dyng the to here me. How be it, it is reson that the gate of
 ſo great a cauſe be knocked at with the hāmer of ſom war-
 nyng, 7 to bring it to good reson, of neceſſitie it muſt paſſe
 the mylle, and to make clere the vnderſtāding from tyme
 to tyme, of very nede there requireth counſel. Diuers ty- 7555
 mes wyſe mē fayle bicauſe they wold fayle, but if the thin-
 ges be of ſuche qualitie, that wyſedom ſuffiſeth not to aſ-
 ſure them, than it is nedefull, that his wyll be vntied, and
 his vnderſtōdinge diſſolued, and his owne propre opi-
 nion voyde, and than incontynent to take a threde to the 7560
 aduylſe of an other. Take good hede Cincinate, where as
 the fōūdatiōns be not wel edified, the buildynges ar in pe-
 ryl. The dongeon of this world wherin we chyldren of va-
 nitie do abyde, is founded on the grauell. For let it be ne-
 uer ſo ſumptuous, yet a lyttell blaſte of wynde wyl cauſe 7565
 it to ſhake, and a lyttell heate of proſperitie wyl open it,
 and a lyttell rayne of aduerſitie wyll diuide it, and with-
 in a ſhort whyle or ſpace, whan we leaſt take hede, it wyll
 falle all flatte on the erth. If the pyllers be of ſyluer, and
 benches of gold, and though the benchers be kynges, and 7570
 continue a thouſande yere: 7 rule into the entrayles of the
 erthe: yet they can fynde no ſtedfaſte rocke nor mōūtayne
 wherin to clooſe the goodes of their predeceffours, and
 their eſtates perpetual. The goddis immortal haue made
 al thinges cōmunicable to mē mortal, except īmortalite: 7 7575
 therfore they be callid īmortal, bicauſe they neuer dy, 7 we
 be called mortal and fallyng, bicauſe we all take an ende.
 How

(*f. 120^b) *How stronge so euer the walles be, yet great age caueth
 it to falle to ruiue[sic]. Two thinges semeth to be fre, the whi-
 7580 che fortune can not set abacke, nor the tyme cause to be for-
 gotten, 7 they be these: The good or yll renoume among
 men, and the payne or rewarde that they that be good or
 ylle haue of the goddis. O my frende Cincinate, thus a-
 cheueth the perlonas, but the goddes neuer. What grene
 7585 or rype or rotten holdeth any season the fruite of the tree
 floured? I esteeme it nothinge bycause it must dye by na-
 ture. Howe be it dyuers tymes in leaues and flowres we
 beare the frost of some malady, or the blast of some enui-
 ous myshappe. Longe is the webbe in making: but that
 7590 is made in many days, is cut a fonder in a moment: Sem-
 blably it is a pitous thyng to se a man dye with so great
 trauayle, and to be sette in the state of honour, and after
 whan we, neyther regardynge the one, nor the other, and
 yet we se it perish. And without any memorie of any thing
 7595 abidyng. O my frende Cincinate, for the loue betwene
 vs I pray the, and by the immortal goddis I coniure the,
 beleue not the worlde, the which vnder the colour of a ly-
 tell golde, to hyde moche fylthynes, and vnder colours of
 trouthe to chaunge vs into a. M. lyes, and for a shorte de-
 7600 lyte to gyue vs a. M. displeasures. To them whom it she-
 weth most loue, it begyleth with greattest tromperies: to
 whom the worlde giueth moste goodes it procureth moste
 damages: to them that serueth it with mockeries, hit re-
 wardeth with true recompences: and to them that loue it
 7605 truly, it giueth them goodes of mockeries: finally whan
 we slepe mooste surest, it waketh vs with greatte perylle.
 What wylte thou say than of the worlde, shewe me? One
 thyng I wyll telle the, and me thynke thou shuldest not
 forgette it: and that is, men oughte not beleue the vayne
 7610 vanities that we se with our eies, rather than the greatte
 mer-

(*f. 121) *meruayles that we here with our eres. One thing I haue regarded, and by long experience I haue knowen it, that but a fewē houſes paynted, nor ſtalles reſed vp we haue ſene in Rome: but of a ſmall tyme they take no thoughte for the walles, but they haue cruelle enmities with theyr⁷⁶¹⁵ neyghbours, and great anoye of their heires, and importunate ſhame of their frendes, and double malice of their ennemies, 7 enuious profite in y^e ſenate, and ſometyme to put a gouernour out of poſſeſſion they ſet foure in honor: and finally all that with great thought hath be gadered⁷⁶²⁰ for their chyld, whome they loue wel with great reſt, ſome time an other heire enioyeth it, of whom they thinke leeſt. It is a iuſte ſentence, that ſuche as begyle dyuers with yl dedes in their lyfe, ſhuld be begyled of their vayn thoughtes at their deth. Cruel ſhulde the goddis be, and ryghte⁷⁶²⁵ greuouſ for men to ſuffre (that the yll that haue gathered for one heire in the preiudye of dyuers y^e be good) ſhulde enioye it many yeres. Me thinke it ſhulde be a ſouerayne folly to be borne wepynge, and to dye ſighyng, and to lyue laughyng. The rule to gouerne al partes ought to be e-⁷⁶³⁰ gall. O Cincinate, who hath begyled the, that for a potte full of water, thou haſte nede of a greatte laake of this worlde to paſſe thy wretched lyfe? wylt thou flee away the ſkynne of thy handis with the corde of thoughtes, breke thy body in batayle with great trauayle, and aduenture⁷⁶³⁵ thyn honour for one potte of water? What wylte thou more that I ſhuld ſay? but that to fyll a potte of thy goodes thou wylte ſuffre a. M. perylles. And in the vyle exercyſinge of thy marchandyſe, thou doubteſt not for leſing of thy credence. And fynally I ſwere to the, thou ſhalte⁷⁶⁴⁰ abyde deed for thurſte, as though there were no water in the feldeſ. If thou wylt do by my counſayle, deſire dethe of the goddis, to reſte the as an aeged wyfe man: and de-
maunde

(*f. 121 b) *maunde not rycheffe to lyue yll as a yonge fole. I haue
 7645 fore wepte for many, that I haue seen in Rome departed
 out of this worlde, and for the I haue wepte droppes of
 blode, to se the returne newly vylely to the worlde. My
 amyte and the credyte of the senate, the bloud of thy pre-
 decessours, the auctorite of thy person, and the honour of
 7650 thy countrey oughte to refrayne thy coueytousnesse. O
 frende, the whyte heares sheweth honour and wyfdome,
 the whych shuld exercise and be occupied in noble dedes.
 Regarde, it vayleth more to folowe reason by the wayes
 of them that be good, than the comyn opinion, whiche is
 7655 the large waye of theym that be yll. For thoughe the one
 be strayte for the fete, it refoth no dufte for to blynd the ei-
 en as the other dooth, to lyghte yonge perfonnes, whych
 procure lyghtnesse: ygnoraunce excuseth theym, but the
 difordinate couetife of the olde perfons, caufeth theym to
 7660 occupye theyr lyfe with trauayle, and to take deathe with
 greate anoyaunce, and in the one as welle as in the other
 abydethe greatte infamy. O Cincinate take this counel
 of a frende: Charge not thy lyfe with takynge of these
 vayne goodes, fith thou hafte soo smalle a morfell of thy
 7665 lyfe. For fuche as thou arte, we fe confume, and wafte,
 and not to quicken: put no truſte in frendes in the preſent
 proſperite, for it is a pronoftication of an euylle fortune.
 And fyth thou arte in a hafarde lyke a foole, me thynke
 thou oughteſt to deſcende a fote lyke a ſage perfone. And
 7670 thus euery man wyll ſaye, howe Cyncynate is diſcended
 and not fallen, [.] I wyl ſaye no more, but the goddes be thy
 ſauègarde, and defende bothe the and me from gylefulle
 fortune. My wyfe Fauſtine ſaluteth the, for that I ſhuld
 write this letter, and hath coniured me to write this worde
 7675 to the, that is, ſhe ſayth thou oughteſt to haue wyt, whan
 thy necke is full of heare, and I thinke thou oughteſt in-
 continent

(*f. 122) *cōtinent to take a barber 7 shaue away the heere, that thy wyt may come forth, [.] I wolde thy couetyse shulde forsake the, 7 folye Faustine, 7 the gowte me, 7 y soner our soules may departe fro our fleshe, than gile shuld remaine in our hartes. Marc of moūt Celio writeth this with his hande.

¶ A letter sente fro Marc the emperour to Catulus cenforius, that was sorofull for the death of his sonne .Ueriffimus.
The .viii. letter.

Marc cenfure newe and yonge, salute and reuerence to the Catulus cenforius olde and aunciente. I haue written two letters to the, and thou haste made aunswere to none of theym. If it be bycause thou couldest not, I holde my peace: If it be bycause thou woldest not, than I complayne me: If it be for forgetfulnes, than I accuse the: If it be bycause thou setteste lyttelle by me, than I appeale the: If thou haste dreamed, that thou haste wrytten, I saye beleue not in dreames: And if thou wylte not it shulde vayne to gloryfye me as a frende, yet thou mightest take it write in aduertising 7 repreuinge as the father to the son. Yong vertuous persons are bounde to honour auncient wise men, 7 no lesse olde wyse men oughte endoctrine the yonge people and very yonge, as I am. A iuste thyng it is that the new forces of youth supply 7 serue them that ar worne by age. For theyr long experience mocketh our tendre age 7 natural ignorance. Youth is il applied, when it surmōteth the force of the body, 7 faylleth the vertues of the soule: age is honored, wherin the force drieth outward, wherby vertues quickneth the more inward. we mai se the tre whē the fruite is gadered, the leaues fallen, and flowers drye than

Ii. ii.

(*f. 122^b) *than more grene and perfyte are the rootes. I meane that
 7705 whan the first feson of youth is passed, which is the Sommer tyme, than cometh age called wynter, and putrifieth the fruite of the fleshe, and the leaues of fauour fall, and the floures of delyte are wyddered, 7 the veynes of hope dried outwarde, than it is right, that moche better the ro-
 7710 tes of good workes within be good. They that be old and auncient ought to prayle their good werkes rather than their white heares. For honour ought to be gyuen for the good lyfe, and not for the whyte heade. Glorious is that common welthe, and fortunate is that prince, that is lord
 7715 of yonge men to trauayle, and ancient persons to coucell. As to regard the susteynyng of the naturalitie of the life, in lykewise ought to be consydered the polycie of gouernaunce, the whiche is that al the fruites come nor drie not al at ones, but whan one begynneth an other fayleth. And
 7720 in this maner ye that be auncyent teachynge vs, and we obedient, as olde fathers and yonge pulletes, beinge in the neste of the senate: Of some their fethers fallyng, and other yonge fethered: and where as the olde fathers can not flye, their trauayles are maynteyned by their tender
 7725 chyl dren. Frende Catulus, I purposed not to wryte one lyne this yere, bycause my penne was troubled with thy flouthe: but the smalnesse of my spirite, and the greatte peryll of myn offices always called on me to demande thy counfel. This priuilege the old wise men holdeth in their
 7730 houses where they dwell: They are alwayes lordes ouer them that be symple, and are sclauers to them that be wise. I thynke thou haste forgotten me, thynkyng that lythe the dethe of my dere sonne Uerissimus, the tyme hath ben so longe, that I shulde forgette it. Thou hast occasion to
 7735 thynke so, for many thynges renneth in tyme, that reason can not helpe. But in this case I can not tel whiche is the
 greateft

(*f. 123) *greatest, thy trumperie or my dolour. I sweare to the by the goddis immortall, that the hungry wormes in the entayles of the vnhappy chylde, are not so puissant, as are the cruell dolours in the hart of the father fore wounded. 7740 And it is no comparifon, for the fon is deed but one tyme, 7 y heuy father dieth euery moment. What wilt thou more that I fhulde fay? but that one ought to haue enuy of his deth, 7 compaffiō of my lyfe, bicaufe in dienge he liueth, 7 in lyuinge I dye. In yl fortunes in cafe of lyfe, 7 in y sub- 7745 tyll aduerfes of fortune, where as her gyles profyteth but lyttell, and her ftrength leffe, I thynke the beſte remedye is to fele it as a man, and diffimule it as difcrete and wife. If all thynges as they be felte at herte fhulde be ſhewed outwarde with the tonge, I thinke that the wyndes fhuld 7750 breake the harte with fighynges, and water all the erthe with wepynge. O if the corporall eies ſawe the hurte of y harte with a true woūd I ſwere to the, there they fhuld ſe more of a droppe of bloudde ſweatyng within, than all the wepyng that is made outwarde. There is no compa- 7755 ryſon of the great dolours of the bodye, to the leefft payne that the ſpirite feleth. For all trauayles of the body, men may fynde ſome remedy, but if the heuy hart ſpeake it is not harde: if it wepe, it is not ſene: if it complayne, it is not beleued. What ſhall the poore harte do? Abhorre the 7760 lyfe, wherwith it dieth, 7 deſire deth, wherwith it lyueth. The high vertues amonge noble vertuous people confiſteth not al onely to ſuffre the paſſions of the body, but alſo to diffimule them of the ſowle. They be ſuche that altereth the humours, and ſheweth it not outwarde: It brin 7765 geth a feuer without alteryng the poulce. It altereth the ſtomake: It maketh vs to knele to the erth, it ſuffreth the water vp to the mouth, 7 to take death with out leauyng of the lyfe. And fynally it lengtheth our lyfe, to thentente that

I. iii. [sic]

(*f. 123 b) 7770 *that we shulde haue the more traueyle, and denyethe vs
 our sepulture, to thentente that we shulde not reste vs.
 But confiderynge, if I be troubled with tribulations, as
 well am I lette with cōfolations. For euer I haue eyther
 defyre of the one, or werines of the other. I take this
 7775 remedye to diffimule with the tongue, and to wepe with
 the eyes, and to fele it with my harte, I passe my lyfe, as
 he that hapethe to lese all that he hath, and neuer to reco-
 uer that is lost: I say this, though ye se me not nowe make
 funerall wepynges and waylynges, as I dyd at the deth
 7780 of my sonne, yet thynke not but it doth brenne by harte, so
 that with the inwarde greате heate is consumed the hu-
 myditie of the eyes outewarde, for it brenneth all my spi-
 rytes inwarde. Thou mayste knowe what an honoura-
 ble father suffrethe to lese a good chylde: In all thynges
 7785 the goddes be lyberall, excepte in gyuyng vs vertuous
 chyl dren: where there is abundaunce of greatte estates,
 there is greatteste scarcitie of good inherytours. It is a
 greате hurte to here, and greater to see, how these fathers
 clyme to haue ryches, and to se theyr chyl dren discend to
 7790 haue vycyousenes. To see the fathers honour theyr chil-
 dren, and the chyl dren to infame theyr fathers, yea and
 the fathers to gyue reste to theyr chyl dren, and the chyl dren
 to gyue trouble to theyr olde fathers, yea and sometyme
 the faders dye for sorowe that theyr chyl dren dye so soone,
 7795 and we se the chyl dren wepe bycause theyr fathers dye soo
 late. What shoulde I saye more, but that the honour and
 ryches that the fathers haue procured with gret thought,
 the chyl dren lese it with lyttell care. I am certayne of one
 thyng, that the fathers may gather ryches with strength
 7800 and crafte, to susteyne theyr chyl dren, but the goddes will
 not haue durable that that is begon with euyll intention,
 and is founded to the preiudice of other, and is possessed
 with

(*f. 124) *with an euyll heyre. And though the heuy deftenyes of the father permit, that ȳ riches be left to theyr chyldrē to serue them in all theyr vyces for theyr pastyme, at laft according ⁷⁸⁰⁵ to theyr merytes, the goddes wil that the heyre 7 heritage shulde peryshe. Marke what I saye, I had two sonnes, Comode 7 the prince Ueriffimus, the yonger is deed, that was gretest in vertue. Alway I imagined, that while the good liued, I shuld be poore, 7 now that the yl remaineth, ⁷⁸¹⁰ I thinke to be ryche. I shal shew the why, the goddes are so pyteful, that to a poore father they neuer gyue yl child: 7 to a riche fader they neuer giue a good childe. And as in al prosperite alway there falleth some finestre fortune, eyther loone or late, therwith fortune doth arme and apparel vs, ⁷⁸¹⁵ wherin she leeth we shal fal to our gretest hurt. And therefore the goddes permit that the couetous faders in gaderynge with great trauaile shuld die with that hurt, to leue their riches to their vicious chyldrē yl impliēd. I wepe as moch for my child ȳ the goddes haue left me, as for him ȳ ⁷⁸²⁰ they haue taken fro me. For the small esteeme of hym that liueth maketh immortal memory of him ȳ is deed. The yl rest 7 cōuersatiō of them that liue cause vs to fyghe for the company of them that be deed. The yll is alway desyred for his ilnes to be deed, 7 the good alway meriteth to haue ⁷⁸²⁵ his deth bewayled. I say my frend Catulo, I thought to haue lost my wit, whā I sawe my son Ueriffime die, but I toke comfort ayen: for eyther he of me, or I of hym must se the ende. Confidering ȳ the goddes did but lene him to me 7 gaue him not, 7 how they be inheritors, 7 I to haue the ⁷⁸³⁰ vse of the fruit. For al thing is mesured by the iust wil of ȳ goddes, 7 not by our disordinat wils 7 appetites. I think whan they toke away from me my childe, I restored him to another, and not that they haue taken myne. But sith it is the wil of the goddes to giue rest to the good childe, ⁷⁸³⁵ and

(*f. 124^b) *and hurte the father bycause he is yll, I yelde thankes to them, for the season that they haue suffred me to enioye his lyfe: And for the pacience that I haue take for his deth, I desyre them to mytigate therewith the chastisement
7840 of theyr yre. And I desyre, sythe they haue taken away the lyfe fro this chylde, to cause good customes to be in the prynce .myne other sonne. I knowe what heynesse thou hast take in Rome for my sorowe. I pray to the goddes to send y ioye of thy chyl dren, 7 that I maye rewardē
7845 the with some ioye, for that thou hast wepte for my payne. My wyfe Faustyne saluteth the: and thou woldeste haue compassion to se her: For she wepeth with her eyes, 7 sigheth with her harte, and with her handes hurteth her selfe, and curseth with her tonge. She eateth nothyng on the
7850 daye, nor slepeth in the nyghte. She loueth derknesse, 7 abhorreth lyghte, and therof I haue no meruayle: for it is reason, that for that was noryshed in her entrayles, she shulde fele sorowe in the same. And the loue of the moders are [!] so strange thoughe her chylde be deed and layed in sepulture,
7855 yet alwayes she hath hym quicke in her herte. It is a generall rule, that the person that is enterly beloued causeth euer gret greife at the deth. And as for me I passe the life ryghte sorowfully: thoughe I shewe a ioyful face, yet I wante myrth at my harte. And among wyse men be-
7860 ynge sorowfull: and shewynge theyr faces mery, is none other thyng but buryenge the quicke, hauynge no sepulture. And I swere by the goddes immortall I fele moche more than I haue sayd. And dyuers tymes me thynke I shuld fall downe, bycause I dare not wepe with myn eies,
7865 yet I fele it inwardely. I wolde fayne comyn with the in dyuers thynges. Come I praye the to Bryette, to thentēt that we maye speake together. And syth it hath pleased the goddes to take my chylde fro me, that I loued so well,
I

(*f. 125) *I wolde councel with the that art my louyng frende. But fewe dayes passed there came hyther an ambassadour fro ⁷⁸⁷⁰ the Rodes, to whome I gaue the mooſte parte of my horſes: 7 fro the fortheft parte of Spaine there were brought me .viii. of whiche I ſende the .iiii. I wolde they were ſuche as myghte pleaſe the. The goddes be thy ſafegarde, and ſende me and my wyfe ſome ioye. Marcus Aurelius ⁷⁸⁷⁵ ryght ſorowfull hath written this with his owne hande.

¶ A letter ſente by Marc the emperour to
 Marcurino being at Sannye nowe
 called Benauente.
 The .ix. letter.

MY ſpecialle frende and auntyente companyon, a meſſager of thyne, 7 a lackey of myne wente oute together at Capue, the one bare my deſyre and affection to ⁷⁸⁸⁰ the, and the other broughte a letter to me. And if thou loke well, thou mayſte ſe my harte as ful of thoughtes, as I ſe thy letter ful of complayntes. Thou doſt ſend to comfort me in my feuer tercyan, I thanke the greatly therof, and ⁷⁸⁸⁵ hit is come in a good ſeaſon. For the goynge of the feuer out of my poulſe, and the ioye of thy letter to my ſpyrite is all one. And ſurely if this caſe be leſte in my hande, and that my feuer retourne not, than thy conſolatiō ſhal ſerue. Lo beholde the meſery of man, that preſumeth to take a- ⁷⁸⁹⁰ way realmes from other, 7 yet can not take the feuer oute of my bones. Thou knoweſt well that we loue togeder, and of a longe ſeaſon thyne amyte hath truſted in me. My trouthe byndethe me, that thyne ylles ſhoulde be myne, and my goodes thyne. And there is true loue, where be ⁷⁸⁹⁵ two

K. k

(*f. 125 b) *two bodyes seperate, 7 but one harte together. And than
 is but a bytter loue, where the hartes be as ferre afonder,
 as the ~~fra~~ungenes of theyr perfones. Take hede I praye
 the, that our loue be not inuenimed with vnkyndnes, nor
 7900 our remembraunce enpoysoned with smalle thoughtes,
 and I beinge another then thou arte here, 7 thou being a-
 nother than I am there, in maner that myne absence with
 thy prefence, 7 my prefence with thy absence may speke to-
 gether. Thy messager hath shewed me the losse of thy go-
 7905 des, and by thy letter I knowethe[sic] anguysshe of thy per-
 sonne. And it hath ben shewed me, that thou haste hadde
 a shyppe peryshed, and that thy factours lyke wyle men,
 to saue theyr personnes dydde throwe thy marchandise in
 to the see. Me thynke thy shyppe hathe eased the of thy
 7910 charge. But I thynke, as it semeth by the, they threw not
 so many fardels in to the see, as thoughtis into thy harte.
 And accordynge as thou were before, I shoulde be more
 bounde to serche for thy leade and tynne, thanne for thy
 harte. Thy leade is sonken to the bottome, but thy coun-
 7915 selle is spredde abroad ouer all the worlde. If thou shul-
 deste nowe dye, and thy bodye be opened, for trouthe I
 thynke, that thy hart shuld be rather found drowned with
 thy leade, than alyue with thy bodye. O Mercurius, at
 this houre thou feleste no malady of any feuer tercian, as
 7920 I doo, for the harte of thy bodye, and the dolour of thy
 spirite causeth the to haue a quartayne. And this euyl is
 not in the body, but in the shyppe, nat on the erthe, but in
 the see: Not with phisicians, but philosophers I counsel
 the to seke helth: For there thy lyfe is drowned where thy
 7925 leade is sonken. Be not angrye, for thoughe thou haste
 not thy lead with the, thy lead hath the with it. Oftentimes
 auarice seketh out the auaricyous, and somtyme the aua-
 ricious seke auarice. It is shewed me, thou arte sory, by
 cause

(*f. 126) *cause thy damage can haue no remedye: 7 doest thou not know, that where no remedy is, thou oughtest to take pa- 7930
 icence [sic]? O Mercurius, nowe thou knowest, y whan thou dyddest aduenture thy goodes to the suspecious rockes, and thy desires to the depe wawes of the see, and thy courageous auarice to the importunate wyndes 7 thy leed to straunge waters: and as ioyous and desirous as thy fa- 7935
 ctours went forth in trust of wynnynge, as moche nowe thou arte sure of the losse: and thus is thy desire drowned, and thy hope scaped. Doest thou not remembre, that Socrates castynge into the see not leade but golde, not a lytell, but a great deale, not goodes of other mennes, but of 7940
 his owne, not by fortune, but by his wysedome, sayinge, I wyll drowne these gylefull rycheffes, to the entent that they shall not drowne me: but I thynke if a man shulde see the do soo, he shoulde here the saye: O my swete rycheffes, I had rather drowne my selfe, than other shulde 7945
 drowne you? This auncient wyle man durste not truste in golde, and thou wylte truste on leade: caste lottes amonge your goddis, he of Athenes and thou of Rome. Whiche of you hath most fayled, or elles is most assured? he that caste his golde fro the erthe into the see, or thou 7950
 that woldest brynge thy leade out of the see vpon the erth? I knowe that the auncient Romainys wyl say it is he, and the present couetous folke wyll say, it is thy selfe, and I thynke in this thou art disprayed in the prayse therof, 7 y dispreised is alowed of all men. Thy messager told me, y 7955
 thou were right sorie and heuy, 7 cryest out in the nyght, callyng on the goddis, 7 wakest thy neyghbours, cōplaynyng on fortune. I am sore displeased for thy heuynes, bicause sorow is nexte frende to thy solytarines, 7 enmye to cōpany, 7 heire of desperation. I am sory for thy crienges 7960
 in the night: for it induceth folly. For the night coueringe
 all

Kk. ii.

(*f. 126^b) *alle the worlde with derknes, thou alone wylte discouer
 thy hart with crienges. I am not plesed, that thou callest
 vpon the goddes, bicause they haue taken some thyng fro
 7965 the: bycause thou were aloft, they haue brought the lower:
 Nor I am not pleased, that thou awakest thy neighbours
 for thy ryches that caused them to enuye the, thy pacience
 shuld moue them to cōpassion. Nor I am not cōtent, that
 thou shuldest so complayn on fortune, for the thing so wel
 7970 knowen of many, shulde not be infamed by one alone. O
 Mercurius remēbre, ȳ with thē, with whom truce is takē,
 thou wylt entre agayn in to the feld of defiāce. We vnbēde
 7 thou wylt spend thy speres. Thou neuer camest into the
 felde, and yet thou woldest enioy the triumph. Al be stop-
 7975 ped, 7 thou woldest passe surely. Thou yeldest thy selfe to
 fortune: And doest thou not knowe, how she beteth down
 the hygh walles, and defendeth the olde rotten howses, 7
 peopleth where there lacketh people, 7 vnpeopleth where
 as people be? Of enmyes she maketh frendes, and of fren-
 7980 des enmyes, and dispoileth the vanquyshers, 7 crowneth
 them that be ouercome. Of traytours she maketh trewe
 men, and trewe men she maketh suspecte personnes. And
 fynally fortune is luche a maystresse, that she ruleth real-
 mes, ouercommeth armes, beatethe downe kynges, exal-
 7985 teth tyrauntes, to the deed gyueth lyfe, and to somme re-
 noume, and to some shame. Why styckest thou to her?
 Doest thou not remembre the worde that the kynge of the
 Lacedemonyens hadde at his gate, sayenge, This is the
 house of the puttynge downe of fortune. In good soothe
 7990 these were hyghe wordes and of greate vnderstondynge,
 he knewe fortune moche better than thou, sith he rekeneth
 his house at fortune dispositions, and not for enheritāce,
 and if he hadde losse any thyng, as thou haste doone, he
 thoughte that she restored it to other as theyrs, and had
 not

(*f. 127) *not taken his. Reason holdeth confidence, to argue thy⁷⁹⁹⁵ treason by that she deposeth the fro thy heyghte to be an heryter: for he that lyueth heryteth deathe, and not death the lyfe, for all dyeth, and it heryteth al in theyr life. Wylt thou take vengeance of that hath giuen the so moch pein. Therefore take this counsell: be frende to fortunes enmy,⁸⁰⁰⁰ the whiche is the graue: Ouer them that be borne, 7 not ouer them that dyeth is her empyre. O howe many great lordes haue ben the thoughtes of thy harte soo as many wormes shalbe in thyn entrayles? What greater victorie may be, than she that ouercometh all lyuers, shalbe van-⁸⁰⁰⁵ quyshed of the all onely by death. I say one thing to the, that all onely he that is closed in his graue, is assured of all thynges of this lyfe. Thy messager shewed me, that this sommer thou woldest come to Rome, and nowe that hit is wynter, thou wylte sayle in to Alexandrye. O my⁸⁰¹⁰ frende Mercurio, whan thy lyfe draweth to an ende, thou begynnest to be auaritious. Thou shalt fynde two cities in this worlde in two extremytees, Rome the heed of vice, and Alexaundry the ende of al vertues. I say of thy merchaundyse, in Rome thou dooste charge thy bodye with⁸⁰¹⁵ vices, and in Alexandrye thy harte with thoughtes. I swere by the othe of a iust man, that thou shalt haue more desyre of that thou leauest, then contentation of that thou bearest away. Thou remembreth not, howe it is wynter, and thou muste passe the see, and but if the pylottes lye to⁸⁰²⁰ me, the calme season mooste sure is the vygill of the more vnfortune. Thou wylt saye thy shyppes be voyde, 7 therefore they shall goo more surely, I beleue they shall goo more charged with auarice, than they shal come with silk. O what a good chaunge shall it be, if the auarice of Ita-⁸⁰²⁵ ly myght be chaunged for sylke of Alexandry. I knowe surely theyr sylke wyll lade a shyppe, and our auarice will lade

[Kk. v. [sic]]

(*f. 127^b) *lade a hole flete. Great is that couetyse, whiche the shame
of the worlde dothe not repreue, nor the feare of deathe
8030 stoppe, nor reason appoynt. I say it, bycause that he whi-
che in suche a tyme offreth hym selfe to peryl, eyther coue-
tyse surmounteth hym, or elles vnderstandynge faylethe
hym. And bycause I can fynde none other excuse sufficiēt
to excuse me to the, but that thou arte as moche knowen
8035 by the see, as vnknownen to the goddis, that is the vnsta-
ble wawes knoweth the wicked harte and vnrestfull, and
the harde rockes vnruly men: and one wynde knoweth an
other wynde. I pray the shewe me, what thou wylte goo
serche? Wylt thou go into the gulfe of Arpino for to seke
8040 thy leade? Than take hede and thynke how the fyfhe hath
eaten thy harde leed, and let them not eate thy softe fleshe.
Thou wylte peraduenture go seke thy goodis with peryl
of thy lyfe, and to leaue renowme at thy deathe. Knowest
thou not, that suche renowme is a salve for a rewme, a
8045 baume for a swownig [!], lyght to a blynd person', a nyghtin-
gale to the deafe? I wyll discover the enbuffhement, er
thou fall therin. Thou sekest thought for thy selfe, enuye
for thy neyghbours, spurres for thyn ennemies, wakyng
for theues, peryl for thy body, damnation for thy renome,
8050 the endynge of thy lyfe, flyght for thy frendes, procelse for
thy children, and curlyng for thyn heires. And bycause
the feuer hasteth towarde me, I leaue my penne to wryte
any more. My wyfe Fauptyne saluteth the, and is soore
displeased for thy losse. I sende the a prouision, to the en-
8055 tent that a shyppe maye be gyuen the, bycause thou shul-
dest not lose thy wytte. If thou be in Alexandrie, returne
not by Rhodes, leest the Pyrates take the. The goddis be
thy saufgarde, and to me and other to gyue good lyfe, and
good name with straungers.

A letter

(*f. 128) *¶ A letter sent by Marc the emperour to Antigonus
comfortinge hym in a sorowfull case.

¶ The tenth letter.



Arke pretour Romaine Edyle Cenforine, cō- 8060
panyon of the empire, to the Antigonus ban-
nyshed sendeth gretynge to thy part, 7 good
hope of the senate. I beinge in Champayne,
thy heuy case was shewed me, 7 at this houre
in the temple of Jupiter was thy pitieful letter delyuerid 8065
to me. I fele as moche as thou felest, and am hurte with
as many woundes, as thou arte separate fro neyghbours
of thyne: in lykewyse I am banyshed fro my wyttes, and
wepe at this houre for the, as thou in my trauayles haste
wepte for me: and I fele for the, as thou in my trauayles 8070
haste wepte for me: and I fele for the as thou haste felte
for me. For to frendes afflycted with sorowe, we ought to
gyue remedy to their persons, and consolation and com-
passion to their hertes. I swere to the by the lawe of good
menne, in this case I haue not ben vncourteys of ancient 8075
tyme, nor cruell at this tyme to fele it. As I redde the ly-
nes of thy letter, I coude not hold my hādis fro shaking,
nor my hert fro sighing, nor myn eien fro weping, to se the
smal thing that thou sendest to demāde, 7 moche more for
lacke of power to send to the. The gretteft infortune of al 8080
infortunes, is whan a man may do lytle, 7 wold do much.
And the greatetest fortune of all fortunes is, whan a man
may do moch, 7 wyl do but lytle. In this I wyl se if thou
hast forgotten our amitie, 7 aduenturest at one tyme, y I
haue trusted in the diuers times. Thou knowest wel, that 8085
the yōge days in my youth al thinges were dischargid fro
my hert, 7 charged them to thin vnderstōding. Thā it is a
iuste thyng that thy traueyles shuld be discharged fro thy
wyll

(*f. 128^b) *wyl and charged vpon my harte. And in this maner thou
 8090 and other shal see and here, that my handes shalbe as re-
 dy to remedy the, as my teeres of wepyng are for thy da-
 mage. Nowe come to the rest of euyl fortune. Thou gy-
 uest me knowlege, that the goddes haue taken a dought-
 8095 downe thy houle, and the senate hath gyuen a sentence a-
 gaynste the, wherby thy goodes are losse, and thy person
 banyshed. The goddes be to me as propyce and meke, as
 they haue ben cruelle to the. I am loore abashed of that
 my spirite hath conceyued in this, as of the losse that thou
 9000 7 thy wyfe haue felt, yet am I not abashed of the monstre
 that feareth the people, nor of the strymblynge that hathe
 shaken downe thy houses, nor of the fyer that hath brente
 thy goodes, nor of the goddes that haue permytted suche
 thynges to falle: But I am a bashed [sic], that there is so mo-
 9005 che malyce in the and in thy neyghbours: For the whiche
 iustely ye do deserue to haue so horryble and cruelle cha-
 styfementes: Beleue me in one thyng Antygonus, and
 doubte it not, if men lyued lyke men, and chaunged not
 the rule of conditours, the goddes wolde then be always
 9010 as goddes, not to cause vs to be borne of our mothers to
 gyue vs so cruel chastifemētes by the hand of monstrous
 beastes. Certaynely it is iuste and moſte iuste, that brute
 beastes be chaſtyfed by other brute beastes, and the mon-
 ſterous by other monſterouſe beastes: and ſuche as offend
 9015 with greates fautes, to be punyſhed with greates paynes.
 I ſay to the one thyng, the whiche ſemeth a newe thyng
 to the, and that is, the euyl perſonne offendethe more by
 infamy, than the goddes gyue theym payne for it, rather
 than for the offence that is comytted agaynſt them, as the
 9020 goddes naturally be pytiefull, and alway haue the name
 therof, ſo we are alwayes euyl and our euernes 7 ſhame-
 full

(*f. 129) *full werkes deserue to haue fore chaſtifemēt. The ſymple folkes call the goddis cruell, in that they ſe theyr chaſtification openly, and for they ſe not our ſecrete yneſſe. Than the goddis haue reaſon to complayn, bicauſe we with our ſynnes offend them, 7 they by our cruelnes are infamed. An ineffable rule it is, that the pitieful goddis do not punyſhe extremely with extreme chaſtyfementis, ſythe that firſte the vicious men do extremely with extreme vyces. The tyme that Camillus was banyſhed Capue, and that the frenche men poſſeded Rome, Lucius Clarus conſule was ſent by the ſenate to the oracle of Apollo, to demande counſell what the Romaine people ſhuld do to be delyuered out of their greate peryll. And there this conſule was .xl. dayes within the temple on his knees before Appollo, offeringe right ſtraunge ſacrifices, and ſhedde many teares with wepynge, and yet he coude haue none anſwere: and ſo with no ſmal inconueniences he returnid to Rome. Than the holy ſenate ſent out of euery temple two preſtis and whan they were proſtrate on the erthe, Apollo ſayde: As one begynninge is correſpondent to an other begynnyng, and one place to an other, Meruaylle thou not, though by the reaſon of an extreme demaunde, I ſhewed my ſelfe extreme to anſwere. Ye Romaines ſithe ye fayle men, ye come to ſeke to the goddis, for the occaſion whereof we wyl gyue you no good counſayle whan ye haue nede, nor permytte that men ſhulde fauour you whan ye go to ſeke for them. Regarde my frendes, not for the ſacrifices that ye haue offred to me, but for the amytie that I haue had with your fathers in tyme paſt, I wyl diſcouer to you a ſecrete, the whiche is, that ye ſhall ſay to the Romaines fro me .vii. thynges. The fyrſte is, lette neuer man leaue the goddis for an other man, for feare that the goddes departe fro the myſerable man in his moſt greateſt neceſſitie.

Ll

(*f. 129^b)⁹⁰⁵⁵ *tie. The .ii. is, that more auaylleth to holde the parte of one of the goddis immortall, that is in heuen, than with all the mortall men in the worlde. The .iii. is, that menne shulde beware to anoye the goddis, for the ire of the goddis doth more damage than the iniquitie of all men. The
⁹⁰⁶⁰ .iiii. is, the goddis neuer forgetteth a mā at any tyme, but if the goddis be forgotten by men a. M. tymes. The .v. is, that the goddis do suffre that one shall be persecuted by an other that is ylle, or they haue firste persecuted one that is good. And therefore ye are strykē with the feates of
⁹⁰⁶⁵ the frenche men bicause ye haue persecuted and banished Camyllus your naturalle neyghbour. The .vi. is, if the men wyl haue the goddis fauorable in the tyme of warre, they muste serue them fyrste in tyme of peace. The .vii. is that the pitiefull goddis lendeth not to any realme some
⁹⁰⁷⁰ extreme chastisement, but if it be for some extreme offences commytted in the same realme. And shewe to the Senate, that I wold make none answere to Lucius Clarus, bicause they sent so yll a man to their god Appollo as ambassadour, the which they ought not to haue done. Ye Ro-
⁹⁰⁷⁵ mayns take this counsell of me, and if ye fynde it yl, take no more of me. In a straunge message sende alwayes the most eloquent men: 7 in your senate sette the wyfest men: And commytte your hostes to valyant capitayns: and to your goddis sende alway the most innocent men. The iust
⁹⁰⁸⁰ goddis neuer appealeth their ires ageinst vniust mē: but if the requirers be very innocente and meke. For a fowle vessell is not made cleane but with faire water. For with foule hādes it is hard to make the vessell clene. The goddis be so iust, that they wyll not gyue iust thynges but by
⁹⁰⁸⁵ hādes of iust men. Finally I say, if ye wyl driue the frēche men your ennemies out of your landis, firste caste out the passiōs fro your hartes. Thynke for trouth, that the god-
dis

(*f. 130) *ids [sic] wyll neuer driue your ennemies out of Italy tyll Camyllus 7 al the gyltleffe that be banyshed, be returned ageyn to Rome. Certaynly the cruell warres that the goddis permytteth at this tyme present, is but a warnyng of the chastifementes for offences passed. For that the yl men haue done to the īnocētis in diuers days, after by ŷ hādes of other that be yl, the payment is made in one day.

This anfwere Apollo made to the priestes flamynes that were sent to hym out of Rome, which thing made the senate fore abashed. I remembre that in the boke of the anfwere of the goddis, in the annales of the capitol there I founde it: the whiche boke the first day of euery monethe was redde by a senatour, before all the other senatours of the senate. Therefore frend Antigonus, as the god Apollo sayde, if thou wylte not beleue me, that am thy frende, beleue the god Apollo. O Antigong behold how ŷ vnderstāding of vayne men are but bestly to the spiritis of the goddis, whiche are secret 7 hid: and where as they speke, all other ought to be styll. For one counsell of the goddis is more worth in mockerie, than al the councels of mē though they be nener [sic] so true. Of whens thinkest thou that this cometh? I shal shewe the: The goddis are so perfyte in all bountie, 7 so wise in all wysedome, and we are so yll in all malice, 7 so simple in all symplenes, that though they wold erre, they can not bicause they be goddis: and we ŷ wolde be assured, erre, bycause we be men. And herin I se what a brute beast man is: for al these mortal men are so entier in their owne wylles, that they wyl lose more in following their owne opinion, than wyne by the counsel of an other manne: and the worste of all is, that they take suche a bytte in doinge yll, that there is no bridel that can refreyne them. And they are so slowe to do wel, that there is no pricke nor spourre that can moue theym forward.

Thou

Ll. ii.

(*f. 130^b) *Thou doest complayne of the pitiefull goddis, and of the
 sacrate senate. Also thou complaynest of ioyfull fortune.
 Thre thinges there be, that one of theym is inough with
 one stroke of a stone, to take away thy lyfe, and bury thy
 9125 renoume. And whan eche of them hath drawen the a part,
 than all togyther wyll stryke on the with stones. Thou
 hafte taken greatte compeditours, and yet I knowe not
 what thy worthynes is. I shal shewe the some strengthes
 and valyant[n]es that the auncient barons had, and therby thou
 9130 shalte see, what they of this worlde doth holde.

¶ The felawe of Scipio Nafica toke a serpente in the
 mountayns of Egypt, whiche after it was flayne, flayed,
 and the skynne mesured in the felde of Mars, it was .vi.
 score fote of length. Hercules of Thebes proued his force
 9135 with the serpente Hydra, And in strykyng of one of his
 heedes, there sprange out .vii. other heades.

¶ Mylon the gyaunt to execute his strengthe was accu-
 stomed euery day to ouertake a bull with rennyng a fote,
 and caste hym downe, and made many courses with the
 9140 bulle, as it were an other naked yonge man: and yet, that
 was more meruayle, he with one stroke of his fyfte flewe
 the bulle, and the same day wolde eate hym all togyther.

¶ On mount Olympe Cerraftus the giaunt of the naciō
 of Grece, wrasteled with mo than .l. M. men, and none
 9145 coude styre nor shake him. And if Homere begileth vs not
 of this gyaunt, he was of luche fame and dedes, that e-
 uery foure yeres, there was a custome, that all nations of
 the worlde went to wraastle at mount Olympe. And therof
 came the rekenynge of the Olympiades.

9150 ¶ In the second warre punyke amōg the captiues of sorow[-]
 ful Carthage, Scipio brought a mā, a lorde of Mauri-
 tayn ryght strong and fierse to behold: and in celebratyng
 a spectacle in the palayes of Rome, whiche was than of
 great

(*f. 131) *great renoume, there were innumerable beastes ronne at:

This captiue prifoner lept into the parke, and kylled two ⁹¹⁵⁵ beares, and wraftled with a lyon a great whyle: fynally beinge fore hurte with the lyons pawes, he ftrangled the lyon with his handes. This was a monftruons [sic] thyng to fe, and nowe it femeth incredyble to be beleued.

¶ In the yere .CCCC xx. of the fouñdation of Rome, Cu- ⁹¹⁶⁰ rio Ledente a renoumed capitayne, commynge fro Tarēt againft Pyrro kynge of the Epirotes: he was the fyrft y brought .iiii. Oliphātes to Rome the day of his triumph. Stages and places were made for .xxx. M. men to fe the rennyng of thefe Olyphautes: and in the myddes of ⁹¹⁶⁵ the paflyme, the plankes brake, 7 flewe mo than .v. M. perfones. And amonge them there was a Numātian, the whiche bare vpon his fhulders a planke with mo thanne iii. C. men tyll that he and they were fuccoured.

¶ Gayus Cefar beinge yonge, fleinge the companye of ⁹¹⁷⁰ Sylla, bycaufe he was perteyninge to Marius, he being among the Rodiens wan his meate with courfyng 7 run[-]nyng of horfes, with his handes bound behynde hym. It was a monftruous thyng to fe, as the annales wytnes, howe he wolde guyde the horfes with his knees fo fafte, ⁹¹⁷⁵ as though he had drawen them with the reynes of their bridelles.

¶ In the .xv. yere that the capitayne of Cartageniēs entred into Italy, our auncient fathers fente to the realme of Frigie for the dyeffe Berecynthia mother of the god- ⁹¹⁸⁰ dis: and whan ſhe arryued at the porte Hoſtie, the ſhyppe that ſhe came in, ranne vpon the lande, and by the ſpace of .iiii. dayes .xxx. M. men, that came in the army coude not remoue it: by chance came thither one of the virgins veſtales named Rea, whiche with her gyrdylle tyed to the ⁹¹⁸⁵ ſhyppe, drewe it to the lande as eaſily as ſhe wolde haue drawen

(*f. 131^b) *drawen a threde from the dystaffe. And to the intent that we shulde beleue suche thinges, as we here were done in times past, we may know it by dedes done presētly in our
 9190 days. I remembre whan my lord Adrian came fro Dacie he dydde celebrate a spectacle in Rome, wherin there was mo than .ii. M. wylde bestis. And the thinge most notable y we haue sene, there was a knyght borne by the riuer Danubio, who toke a hors, 7 ranne into the parke, and flewe
 9195 so many wylde bestes, that there fledde fro him lyons, leopardes, beares, olyphantes, and we dyd fle fro them: and he flewe mo of them than they dyd of men. These strāge thinges I haue recyted to the, that of all these I am not so abashed as I am of the, to se the redye to doo armes ageinft
 9200 the goddis, and against the senate, and ageinft fortune. These thre are gyauntes in vertuous valyauntife, and happy at al tymes: and they be suche as commaunde them that commande other. The goddis by their naturalyte and power clofe vp the furies, and gouerne the sterres:
 9205 And the senate with their Iustyce ouercometh realmes, and subdueth tyrantes: and fortune with her tirāny taketh them that they leaue, and leaueth them that they take: and honoureth them that they dishonour, and chastyleth them that serue her: she begyleth euery person, and
 9210 no person begyleth her: she promyleth moche, and fulfylleth nothing: her longe is wepynge, and her wepinges is longe, to them that be deed amonge wormes, and to them that lyue in fortunes, at them that be present she spurneth with her fete, and threateth them that be absent. All wyse
 9215 men shrinke fro her, but thou lyke a foole shewest her thy face. Of one thyng I am abashed of the, to complayne of the senate, 7 yet I meruayle not: for in conclusion they be but mē: yet of trouth in thinges of Justice they ought to be more than men. And to complayn on fortune, I meruayle

(*f. 132) *uayle not a lyttel: for in the end fortune is fortune amōge ⁹²²⁰
 mortalle men. And all the heuens is of an auncient qua-
 relle, and whan we are besette with mooste greattest qua-
 relles, than she striketh vs with most greuous hurtes. I
 haue great wonder, that thou being a Romain cōplaineſt
 on the goddis, as if thou were one of the Barbariens. We ⁹²²⁵
 Romainys are not ſo moche renoumed among al nations
 for the multitude of realmes that we haue ouercome, as
 we are for the greate churches and ſeruices that we haue
 made. Thou complayneſt, howe the goddis haue broken
 thy houſes with an erthequake, 7 haue ſlayne thy dough- ⁹²³⁰
 ter felawe in thy banyſſhement, and all in one daye. But
 thou doſt not remembre the offences that thou haſt cōmit-
 ted in dyuers caſes. O my frend Antigong, thou knoweſt
 not that out of our yl proceſſes comith forth good ſentēces
 and thou knoweſt not y our wicked workes are but a wa- ⁹²³⁵
 king of true Juſtice: nor thou knoweſt not, y the fierſe cha[-]
 ſtiſementis is but a preſſe that haſteth the great cōmingis
 of our yonge deſires? and knoweſt thou not that it is no-
 thinge that the goddis do chaſtiſe openly, to that they do
 diffimule in ſecrete? Doſt thou not know, that in conclu- ⁹²⁴⁰
 ſion the goddis be goddis, 7 the mortalles are mortalles,
 and they may do vs more good in one day, thā we can do
 ſeruice in a .C. M. yere? Doeſt thou not knowe, that the
 leaſte ylle done by the handis of the pitiefull goddis, is
 more goodnes than al the welth y may come by the hādis ⁹²⁴⁵
 of the cruel men? Thā wherof doſte thou cōplayn? I pray
 the be ſtyl. And ſith thou art amonge ſtrāgers, ſuffre. And
 thou wilte haue honour, diſhonour not the goddis of the
 Romainys. For the vniuſt mē do gret iniuſtyce to ſpeke yl
 of them that be iuſt, 7 ſpecially of the goddis, for they are ⁹²⁵⁰
 moſt iuſt. Certainly as Cicero ſaith, the greateſt faut in a
 man that is good, is to approue the yl rather than y good:
 and the

(*f. 132^b) *and the moſte greateſt euyl in an yl man is to condemne
 the good for the yl. Thou knoweſt not how iuſte the god-
 9255 diſ be. Of trouthe they chaunge not for any prayer, nor
 leaue not for any thretenynges, nor mocke not by wordes:
 nor be not corrupt with gyfteſ. Great ought thyn offence
 to be, ſith the erthe hath taken vengeance for the goddiſ:
 and thy innocente doughter hath payde the faute, for the
 9260 offence of her father. O Antygonuſ, doſt thou not know
 that in all thynges the goddiſ may werke after their own
 opinion and wyll, excepte in Iuſtyce: for in that they be
 goddeſ of all they oughte to be egall to all? And if theyr
 bountie doth bynde them to rewarde vs for goodneſ, no
 9265 leſſe their iuſtyce conſtreyneth them to chaſtiſe vs for our
 ylles. It is a greate cuſtome, and a ryghtouſe Juſtyce,
 He that wyllynge draweth to lynne, ageinſte hiſ wyll is
 drawen to peyne. I ſay it bycauſe thy doughter hath leſte
 to do ſome good openly, or elleſ ſhe hath done ſome ſecret
 9270 ylle, ſythe in her youth her lyfe is bereued from her father
 for enſample of chaſtiſement to other. And in the ende of
 thy letter thou complayneſt, that the peyne that men doth
 to the, is more greater than the offence that thou haſte
 done to the goddiſ. And if it be thus frende Antygone,
 9275 thou oughteſt to haue no diſpleaſure, but pleaſure, no he-
 uynes but ioye. And I ſwere to the by the immortall god-
 deſ, I wolde gladly chaunge my lybertie for thy captiui-
 tie, and the ſtate of Rome for thy banyſhement of Sycile.
 And I ſhall telle the why: He is honoured amonge them
 9280 that be honoured, that fortune abateth without faute: and
 he is ſhamed amonge them that be ſhamed, that fortune
 inhanceth without merite. For the ſhame is [not] in the incon-
 uenientes that is done to vs by men, but it is of the offēce
 that we commytte ageinſt the goddiſ. And in lyke caſe the
 9285 honourable honour reſteth not in the dignities that we
 haue

(*f. 183) *haue, but in the good workes, wherby we meryte. And therby the wordes seme trewe, that the .xi. emperour of Rome bare written in a ryng on his finger, whiche sayde thus: More is he to be honoured, that deserueth honour, than he that hathe it and deserueth it not. These wordes ⁹²⁹⁰ are greatly to be noted, and spoken by a great lorde. Thā retourne to the purpose. Thou complaynest of the wronges and greues that men do to men, and leue the goddis, I haue no meruayle: for as the goddis do neuer vniuste thynges, so the menne neuer lyghtly do any thyng iuste. ⁹²⁹⁵ Note this that I say, and forgette it not. The senate gy-ueth an open peyne, and publysheth the secrete faulte, in suche maner that with the peyne they hurte vs, and with the faute they shame vs. The goddis are more pitiefull: for though they giue vs peyn, yet they kepe the faut close. ⁹³⁰⁰ A my frende Antigone, though the goddis gader togyder the flouthe and wyckednes, that we commytte secretly, Beleue me and doubte not, the goddis gyue lyfe to many the whiche men bereueth. Therefore I thinke, that thou shuldest thynke and wyshe, that syth the goddis haue suf- ⁹³⁰⁵ fred the ylles that thou hast done secretly, that thou maist suffre open chaastyfement that men haue gyuen to the. For otherwise thinkynge to put away the peyne, thou shalt abyde charged with infamy. I haue writen to the this lōge epytyle, to thentent that thou shuldest haue some thyng to ⁹³¹⁰ passe the tyme with. Certaynly the greattest easement to ease hym that is in trauayle is to exercyse the wauerynge harte with some good occupations. I wyll write no more to the at this tyme, but as touchynge thy banyshement, truste me I shal bringe the at one with the senate. I sende ⁹³¹⁵ Panutius my secretarie to the, gyue as moche credence to his wordes, as to my letters. And he bringeth a gowne to the, and therwith my harte and wylle for to comforte the.

Salu-

Mm

(*f. 133^b) *Salutation, peace, and good age be with the: and the ire
 9320 of the goddis and yll fortune be separte fro me. Marke,
 my household, wyfe, and chyldren salute the as thyn own.
 And we salute all thy family as our owne. Thoughe the
 halfe of my letter be not of my hande, comforte the, for
 my harte is entierly thyne. Thou knowest howe I was
 9325 greuoufly hurt in the warres of Dacye in my hande, and
 in moyste wethers one of my fyngers flepeth. Thus I
 make an ende as always thyn owne.

¶ An other letter sent by Marc the emperour to the
 same Antygonus ageinst cruell iuges.
 The leuenth letter.

9330 **M** Arc beinge sicke to the Antygonus being ban-
 nyshed, I desire salute for hym, and reste for
 the. To eschewe the enuious trauaylles of
 Rome, and to se certayne bokes of Hebrewe
 that were brought to me fro Helya, I came
 hyther to Sanya: I made great haste in my iournayes,
 howe be it at Salon the feuer toke me: and the .xx. day of
 9335 June I receyued the seconde letter, and the same houre
 the feuer quartayne toke me. I thynke none of vs bothe
 had the better hande. For neyther my longe letter dydde
 put away thy trauayle, nor thy short letter dyd put awaye
 my feuer. And though as now the felyng of thy trauaile
 9340 minisheth that I had, the more brenneth the desire to re-
 medy the. Therefore I wyll say some thinge to the, but not
 that I fynde any consolation that thou haste nede therof.
 In the lawe of Rhodes I haue founde these wordes: we
 commaunde, that none be so hardy to gyue counsell with
 9345 out remedy: for the wordes to him y is in trouble gyueth
 smal consolation, whā there is no remedy. Also the herte
 that is in sorow, hath more rest shewing his own greues,
 than

(*f. 134) *then herynge the consolation of other. Tou [sic] layest in thy letter, that the cēfures are right rigorous in that realme: and therefore all that nacion hath yl wyl with the senate. I ⁹³⁵⁰ beleue well they haue good occasion therof: for dishonoured mē make the ministres of Iustyce to be rigorous, and namely they of that yle. For there is an ancient prouerbe that sayth, lyghtly all these ylls [sic], are yl, and the Syciliēs worste of all. Now adays the yl ar myghty in their ylnes, ⁹³⁵⁵ and the good with theyr vertues are kepte so close, that if there be not some bridel by Iustyce, the yl shuld possede al the worlde, and the good shuld fynyshe shortly. But finally to consider how vnable we be born, 7 ar enuirōned with so many ylls, beinge subiect to so many miseries, I mer- ⁹³⁶⁰ uaile not of the inhumanities that the humain people cōmitteth: but I am ashamed of the cruell Iustice that our Cenfures do, not as Romainys, but as cruel tyrantis. Of one thyng I am sore abashed, and greatly it troubleth my wittes, seyng naturally 7 of right the Iustice of the god- ⁹³⁶⁵ dis is good, and we offēdyng them, 7 we that haue iustice but lend [sic] to vs, yet we glorify vs to be cruell: so ȳ the goddis do pardon iniuries done to thē, wherby fame of mekenes abideth to them: 7 we chaſtyle the iniuries of other, wherby we wyn the fame of tyrantis. In good soth there ⁹³⁷⁰ is no mā amonge men, nor humsyn [sic] amōg the humayns, but he is as a brute beaſt, 7 wylde amonge wylde beaſtis, that nameth him self to be of the fleshe, and hath no pitie to hurte other fleshe. Nor considereth not, that the goddis hath made hym a meke beaſt 7 lowly by nature, 7 he beco- ⁹³⁷⁵ meth a fiers serpent by malyce. In the .xii. yere of the fouñdation of Rome, Romulus the first kyng sent a cōmandement into al places 7 realmes nygh to him: as to the Uolgues, Samites, 7 Ruffiens[?], to Capue, Tarentis, 7 Alba-noys: to thentent that all such as were banyshed troubled ⁹³⁸⁰ and

Mm. ii.

(*f. 134^b) *and persecuted in their realmes, shulde come to Rome, 7 there they shulde be receyued and well entreated: and excepte the hyftories lye, Rome was more inhabyted in ten yeres, than Babylon or Cartage in a .C. yeres. O glorious herte of Romulus that fuche a thyng inuented: and glorious tongue, that fuche a thyng commaunded: and glorious was the cite or countrey, that fouded them vpon fuche mercye and pitie. I haue founde dyuers letters of dyuers realmes of the oriēt, sent forth mencionyng thus:
 9385 We the kyng of Parthes in Afie, to the conscript faders of Rome, and to the happy people of Italy, and vnto all theym of that empyre, hauyng the name of Romaines, and surname of clemency, Salutation to your perfones. We sende peace and tranquillitie to you, as we demaunde
 9395 the fame of the goddis.

¶ Thus than regarde, what glorious tytle of Clemency our predeceffours Romaines hadde: and what example of clemency they haue left for al emperours to com. Take this for certayne, that the Censures or minyfters of Iustyce, forgettyng the pitie of the Romaines, shall be reputed cruelle, as Barbariens, Nor Rome shall nat repute them as her naturall chyldren, but as cruell ennemyes: and not for augmentours of the common welthe, but infamours and robbers of clemency.

9405 ¶ Whan I was of the age of .xxxvii. yere, beinge in the yle of Crete, nowe called Cypres, in wynter tyme, There was a mountayne called Archadio, whervpon foure pylers were sette, and a sepulchre of a kyng of worthy fame and in his lyfe pitiefull and ful of mercy: and as one shewed me, there were certayne wordes written in greke letters rounde aboute the sepulchre sayng thus: I haue taken to me always this counsaile, where as I myghte do but lytel good, I neuer dyd harme: 7 that that I myghte
 haue

(*f. 135) *haue with peace, I neuer stroue for: Suche as I myght ouercome with prayer, I neuer feared with thretnynges: 9415 where as I myght remedy secretly, I dyd neuer chaftise it openly: them that I myght correcte with warnynges, I neuer hurted with beatynges: Suche as I chaftyfed openly, I fyrst aduertyfed secretly: and fynally I neuer chaftyfed one, but I forgaue foure: I am right sorowfull 9420 bycause that I haue chaftyfed, and am glad bycause that I pardoned, In as moche as I was borne as a man, and my fleshe is here eaten with wormes, and bycause I haue lyued vertuously in my lyfe, my spirite shal now rest with the goddis. 9425

¶ Howe thynkest thou my frende Antygonus, what an Epitaphye was this? And howe glorious was his lyfe, fythe the memorie of hym vnto this daye abydeth so immortal? And as the goddis may helpe me in al goodnes, and defende me fro yl, I haue not so great delyte at Pom[-] 9430 pey with his armye, nor at Gaius Iulius Cesar with his Gaules of France, nor at Scipio with his Affrycans, as I haue at the king of Cypres with his sepulchre. For that kynge hath more glorie in that mountayne beinge deed, than all the other had in all their lyues with all their try- 9435 umphes, that euer they had in Rome. I say not, but that the wyckednes of yll people shulde be chaftyfed: for without comparyson, he is wors that fauoureth the yll, than he that commytteth the yl: for the one procedeth of wekenes, and the other of malice: But it semeth to me and to al 9440 other that be wyse, that as the lyn is natural and the chaftyfement voluntary, so oughte the rygour of Iustyce to be temperate: So that the mynisters shulde shewe compassion rather than vengeance: wherby the trespassours shulde haue occasion to amende theyr synne passed, and 9445 not to reuenge the iniurie presente. O whatte places and realmes

Mm. iii.

(*f. 135^l) *realmes haue ben losse, not for the ylnes that the yl people hath cōmitted, but rather by the difordinate Iustice that the ministers of iustice haue exercised? Thinking by their
 9450 rigour to corecte the damages passed, wherby hath rylen sclauanders and strife, neuer none such hard of afore. Whā a prince sendeth any person with the charge of Iustice, he ought to say to hym these wordes, suche as August Cesar layd to the gouernours of Affrike: I put not the confidēce
 9455 of myn honour into thy handes, nor cōmitte to the my iustyce to be a distroyer of innocentis, nor an executour of synners: but that with one hande thou shuldest helpe the good to maynteine them therin: 7 with the other hande to helpe them that be yll to reyse them fro their noughtynes.
 9460 And myn intention is to sende the forth to be a preceptour of orphans, and an aduocate for wydowes, a surgien for all woundes, a staffe for the blynde, a father to euery person, to speke fayre to myn ennemies, 7 to reioyce my frēdes. In this maner I wolde thou shuldest vse thy selfe in
 9465 euery place, so that by the fame of pitiefulnesse, such as be myn shalbe in rest 7 content to be my subiectis, 7 that strāgers shalbe desirous to come 7 serue me.
 ¶ This instructiō August Cesar gaue to a gouernour of his, bicause it was shewed him, that he was somewhat cru[-]
 9470 el in y realme. Certainly they were short wordes, but they were right cōpendious: And wold to god they were written in the hartes of our iuges. Thou writest, how that ile is sore troubled by reson of the censures 7 iuges therof. It is a noyfull trauayle to receyue the auctoritie of Iustice
 9475 into the hande of an vniust man: and it is a thyng not to be suffred, that one with tirāny shuld tyrannye dyuers other: not with the lyfe, but with the auctoritie to corecte good mē, therby to be called a good cēsure. The auctoritie of his office giuē to hym by his prince ought to be his accessarie

(*f. 136) *cessarie, and his good lyfe for principall: in suche maner, ⁹⁴⁸⁰ that by the rectitude of his iustice the yl shuld fele the execution therof. Al that haue auctorite shuld tempre it with wisedome 7 purenes of liuyng. It is a great goodnes to the cōmon welth, and great confusion for him that chaftileth with payne, Whā the miserable is chaftified, 7 he that ⁹⁴⁸⁵ doth chaftile seeth nothyng in hym wherby he hath deserued to be chaftified. And cōtrary, it is great flackenes in a prince to cōmaunde, and great shame to the cōmon welth to consent, and great inconuenientes and reprove to the iuge to execute: whan a poore wretche for a smal faute is ⁹⁴⁹⁰ put to more payne for the same smal faut done in one day, than is giuen to them that be great for many tyrannies, that they haue committed during their life. These be they that peruerte the common welth, and sclandre the worlde and put them selfe out of auctoritie. ⁹⁴⁹⁵

¶ In the .iii. yere that great Pōpeie toke Elia, the which is nowe Jerusaleme, the same tyme being there Ualerius Graccus, came thyder an Hebrewe or a iewe, as the annales shewe, he came to the senate to cōplayn of the wronges 7 greues that were done to him in that lond, 7 so in doing ⁹⁵⁰⁰ his errāde in the name of al that quince, he said these wordes: O fathers conscript, O happy people, your fatal destenies pmitting, 7 our god leuing vs with Jerusaleme, lady of al Asie, 7 moder to y Ebrues, to be in seruage to Rome, 7 to the Romans: Certainly gret was y power of Pōpey, ⁹⁵⁰⁵ 7 moch more the force of his armi to take vs. But therefore I say, that gretter was the yre of our god, 7 without comparison the multitude of our synnes, wherby we dyd merite to be lost. I wold ye knew one thiȝ, 7 it fore displeth me, y ye Romaines haue not proued it by experiēce. That ⁹⁵¹⁰ is, our god is so iust, y if amōge vs there had bē .x. iust mē, 7 amōge .l. M. yll, one good, he wold haue pdoned al y yl. And

(*f. 136^b) *And than ye Romaines shuld haue sene as the Egyptiës dyd, howe our god alone may do moch more than al your
 9515 goddes togyther. And certaynely as longe as we be synners, so longe ye shall be our lordes. And as longe as the yre of the Hebrues god doth endure, so longe shall the power of the Romaines last. And bycause in this case I folowe one way, and by your secte ye folowe an other way,
 9520 ye can not retourne to honour one god onely, nor I to honour dyuers goddis. I wyll leue this matter to the god, by whose power we haue ben nourished, 7 by whose boûte we be gouerned, and retourne to the case of our embassade. Ye know what peace hath ben betwene Rome and Judee,
 9525 and betwene Judee and Rome, we with you, and ye with vs. In all thynges we haue obeyed you, and ye vs. No iust thinge we haue denyed you. And bicause there is no thinge more desyred of the people, and lesse put in operation than is peace, And there is nothyng more abhorred,
 9530 by the which abhorryng euery mā lyueth, thā is warre: I do warn you of this with trouth, prouyde therfore iustice, put them away y folowe your wylles to do vs yll. And let vs haue no luche malicious folke as incyteth vs to rebel. The greattest signe and strongest pyller of the peace is to
 9535 put away the perturbbers of pece. What profite is it to say peace peace, 7 in secrete to say warre warre? I say this bicause ye haue banished the eldest son of king Idumeo out of Lyon for his demerites, and ye haue sente in his stede Campanius, Marcus, Ruffus, and Ualerius Graccus
 9540 for presidentes. They be .iiii. plagues, or .iiii. pestilences, so that the leeste of them were sufficient to enpoyson the hole empire of Rome, than moche soner our myserable realme of Palestyne. What thyng can be more monstuous, thā that the iuges of Rome shulde sende men to put away yll
 9545 customes fro them that be yll, and they them selves ar the inuen-

(*f. 137) *inuentours of newe vices? What greater shame and inconvenience is in Iustice, than they that haue auctoritee to chastise wanton youth, to gloryfie theym selfe to be capytaynes of theym that be wylde? What gretter infamie can be to Rome, than they that ought to be vertuous and iust to gyue example to other to be yll and vicious? I lye yf they haue not so writhen and enlarged the discipline of Iustice, that they haue taught the youth of Iudee suche vices, that hathe not ben harde of by our fathers, nor red in no bokes, nor sene in our tyme. O Romayns beleue me in one thyng, what counselles Jude hath taken of Rome at this houre, lette Rome take of Judee. Many realmes are gotten with myghty capitayns, and moche shedyng of blode, and ought to be obserued with a good iuge, not in shedyng of blode, but in gettyng of hertes. Certainly the iudge that wynneth moo good wylles than money, oughte to be beloued: and he that serueth for money, and loseth the good wylles, for euer oughte to be abhorred as pestylence. What thynke ye is the cause nowe adays, that your presidentis be not obeyed in a iust cause? Of a trouth it is bycause, that fyrste they commaunde vniust thinges. The commaundementes that be iust, maketh soft & meke hertes, and suche as be vniust, maketh men cruel. We be so myserable in all myseries, that to hym that commaundeth well, we obey yll: and the more yll they commaunde, the more obeyed wolde they be. Beleue me in one thinge, that of the great lyghtnes and small sadnes of the iuges is brought vp fere and great shame in the subiectes. We that be iewes think our self wel aduertysed (by the mouth of our god that sayth) euery prince commyttyng charge of Iustice to him that he seeth vnable to execute the same, or dothe not principally for Justyce sake, accomplyshe iustyce, but dothe it for his owne profyte, or els to please the partie :

Nn

(*f. 137^b) *partie: thinke surely, whan the prince dothe not regarde
 9580 this, by some way that he thynketh leaste of, he shal se his
 honour infamed, his credēce lost, his good minished, and
 some great chaastyement come to his house. And bycause
 I haue other thynges to say in secrete, I wyl conclude as
 nowe openly. Finally I say, if ye wyl conferue your re-
 9585 alme longe tyme, for the whiche ye haue put your selfe in
 great perylles, kepe and maynteine Justice, and we shal
 bere you reuerence: Commaunde as Romayns, and we
 shal obey as Hebrues: Gyue vs a president, that is mercy[-]
 full, and all our realme shal be obedient: Be not to cruell
 9590 to chaastyse our mekenes, and we shal be the more obediēt
 to your preeminēce: I require you desire vs or ye cōmand.
 For in desiring 7 not commaundyng ye shal fynde loue as
 fathers to the chyldern. And no treason as of lordes to ser[-]
 uantes. All these thinges sayd the iewe, wherof the senate
 9595 had great meruayle. And forthwith the senatours prouy-
 ded for .iii. iuste thinges. The one was, that all these wor-
 des shulde be put in writinge, to thentent that they shulde
 be put in the boke ordeyned to write in all good sayenges
 of all straunge ambassadours. The second to put downe
 9600 Graccus Ualerius, bycause he was so cruel, and in hatred
 with the people. The third they prouided Pylate of Lion
 to be presidente of that realme. Than howe semeth it to
 the my frende Antigonus, dyd not this Hebrewe speake
 hyghly? O Rome without Rome, that of Rome holdeth
 9605 nothyng but the walles, and arte fallen into vnthriftie
 vices. what dyddest thou whan such a shame was laide to
 the by an Hebrewe in the myddes of the senate? Certainly
 the greatestt plage amonge all plages, and the greatestt
 losse amonge all losses, is whan the prince hath his lyfe so
 9610 without lyfe, his iustice so without iustice, his dedes soo
 without dedes, 7 in all euyl so bolde 7 hardy, 7 in al good-
 nes

(*f. 138) *nes fuch a coward, that rightwyfely his owne men do accufe him, and ftraungers repreue hym, none dothe loue hym, but al hate him, and his frendes wyl not helpe hym, 7 his ennemies wyl perfecute hym: They that be present ⁹⁶¹⁵ refuse his goodnes, and they that be abfente procure his yll: They that lyue take away his lyfe, and the deade his fepulchre. Nowe to retourne to the purpofe of our iuges, I pray the Antygonus, fhewe me thy mynde, wherof cometh nowe a dayes the great fclaunder of the people, the ⁹⁶²⁰ infamy of the prince, and the peryll in Juftyce? If thou knoweft it not, harken and I fhall fhewe the, wherby all goth out of order. They that be priue are fo importunate, and the princis not refufinge them: they begylyng and he fuffringe to be be [sic] begiled: The one with couetyfe, and the ⁹⁶²⁵ other with ignorance, doth gyue to fuche that he fhoulde take fro, and take away fro fuche as he fhulde giue vnto: and honoureth them that difhonoureth hym, kepeth the ryght wyle in prifon, and delyuereth the vicious, difpifeth experte perfones, and truſteth them that be leude: and fi- ⁹⁶³⁰ nally they prouide not offices to men, but men to offices. They ordeyne the vniuft to miniftre Iuftice, and do iniurie to them that be iuft. Yet here and I fhall fhew the more. Theſe myferables after that they be appoynted and fette in their offices, wherof they be nothinge worthy, more for ⁹⁶³⁵ their auctoritie than for meryte of their perfons, they are feared with their extreme iuftice. They take on them the ſtate of greatte men with the ſweatte and labour of poore men. They fupply with malyce that they wante of difcretion. And worſt of al, they meſure the Iuftice of other mē ⁹⁶⁴⁰ with their owne propre vtilitye. Yet harken and I fhall fay more. After that theſe ideotes ſe them ſelfe in the gulfe of theſe vayn beſineſſes, thā they lacke the reyne of knowledge, 7 the ſayles of wiſedome, 7 the ankers of experience, nor

Nn. ii.

(*f. 138^b)⁹⁶⁴⁵ *nor can not remedy a small matter, but inuent other more
 greater, altringe and troubling the peace for their owne
 particular welth. They wepe for their owne harme, and
 no lesse for the welth of other, and finally lese them selves.
 And therefore they aduenture them selfe into the gulfes, 7
⁹⁶⁵⁰ inflame their lordes, that haue gyuen them suche offices,
 to giue to suche as hath not deserued them. Thou mayste
 know, that the beginnyng of them is pride and ambition,
 and their myddell is enuye and malyce, and their ende is
 dethe and distruction. And if my counsell were taken, su-
⁹⁶⁵⁵ che shulde haue no credence with princes or gouernours,
 but as sclaundred men to be separate, not all onely fro the
 common welthe, but fro their lyues. Surely great is the
 couetyse of them that be shamelesse, which without shame
 demaunde offices of the senate or princis: but it is a more
⁹⁶⁶⁰ boldnes of malyce for the prynces to gyue them. In this
 and in other thynges these are soo dampnable, that ney-
 ther the feare of the goddis doth withdrawe them, nor the
 prince doth not refreyne them, nor vengeance dothe not
 lette them, nor the common welthe doth not accuse them,
⁹⁶⁶⁵ and aboue al other reason dothe not commande them, nor
 the lawe subdue them.

¶ O my frende Antygonus note this worde that I write
 in the ende of my letter. In the yere of the foundation of
 Rome .vi. C. xlii. as the Romayns as than in the worlde
⁹⁶⁷⁰ had dyuers warres, as Gayus Celius ageynste theym of
 Trace, and Gneo Cordon his brother against Sardyne,
 Junius Sylla ageinst the Umbres, Minutius Ruffus a-
 geynst the Macedonyens, Seruilio Scipio ageynste the
 Lusitayns, and Marius consull ageinst Jugurtha kyng
⁹⁶⁷⁵ of the Numidiens, It befell so that Boco kinge of Mau-
 rytayne faouored Jugurtha, and vpon them triumphed
 Marius, and they laden with chaynes were led afore his
 chariot,

(*f. 139) *chariotte, not without great cōpaffion of them that lawe it. After this triumph done, incontinent the fame daye by counsell of the fenate, Jugurtha was beheeded in prifon, ⁹⁶⁸⁰ 7 his companyon Bocus had pardone of his lyfe, and the caufe was, It was a custome none to be putte to Iuftice, but firfte the auncient bokes fhulde be ferched, to fe if any of his predeceffours had done before any feruice to Rome, wherby the captiue fhulde meryte to haue pardon of his ⁹⁶⁸⁵ lyfe: and than it was founde, that the graūtfather of Bocus came to Rome, and made gret orations before the fenate, by whose wordes and sentences, his laid neuew merited to haue pardon of his lyfe: and amonge other of his fayingis, he reherfed thefe verfes that layd: What is that ⁹⁶⁹⁰ realme, where is no good amonge the yll, nor yll amonge the good? what is that realme, that hath their houfes ful of good fimple perfons, and banyfheth away al wyfdom? Or what is that realme that fuche as be good are cowardes, and the yl hardy? or what is the realme, where al pea- ⁹⁶⁹⁵ fible are displeafed, and the fedycious prayfed? What is that realme, that fleeth them that wolde their welthe, and are angry with them that wold helpe their yll? or what is that realme, that permytteth the proude pore folkes, and the ryche tyrantes? or what is that realme, where they al ⁹⁷⁰⁰ know the euyl, and none procureth any goodnes? or what is that realme, where fuche vices are openly commytted, that other realmes feare to doo fecretely? or what is that realme, where as all that they defire they procure, and all that they do procure, they attayne, and all that is yll they ⁹⁷⁰⁵ thinke, 7 all that they thynke they fay, 7 all that they faye they may do, and all that they may do, they dare do, and put it in operation that they dare do: and worft of al, there is none fo good to refyft it. In fuche a realme there fhuld be none inhabitaunt. For within fhort fpace the yll men ⁹⁷¹⁰ fhall

Nn. iii.

(*f. 139^b) *shall be chaunged, or elles dispeopled of good men, or the goddis wyl confounde them, or the tirantis shal take thē. Dyuers thinges were laid, the which I passe ouer at this tyme. Howe thinkest thou Antigone? I sweare by the immortal goddis, that my hert breketh to thinke of the great
 9715 shame that was laid vpon Rome by such writing as was lefte to them by the grauntfather of this kynge Bocus. This my letter I wold thou shuldest rede in secrete to the pretours: 7 if they amende not, we shall fynd the meanes
 9720 to chastise them openly. And as touchyng thy banyshment I promyse the to be thy good frende to the senate, that we may ioy our auncient amitie togyther. And to get the out of that yle, Certainly I shal do my diligēce. I haue writen to my secretarie Panutig to delyuer the .ii. M. sexters
 9725 to releue thy pouertie: and thus I sende the my letter to comfort thy heuy hart. I say no more but the goddis giue the cōtentation of that thou woldest haue ioy 7 reste to the person. And all corporall euyls, cruel enmies, and fatalle destenies be separate fro me Marke. For the behalf of my
 9730 wife Faustyne, saluteth the and thy wyfe Ruffa: She is thyn, and I am thyn. With visitation of ioy I haue receiued thy letter, 7 thankfully I sende the myn. I shall not cease to desire to se thy persone in Italy, and there in Sicyle to leaue my feuer quartayn.

¶ A letter sent by Marcus to Lambert gouernour of the yle of Helespōte, whā he dyd banysh the vacabūdis fro Rome. The xi. [sic] letter.

9735 **M**Arke emperour of Rome, lorde of Asie, cōfederate with them of Europe, frende of theym of Affrike, ennemye of the Maures: To the Lambert gouernour of the ile of Helesponte, sendeth to the of his part cōtentatiō
 and

(*f. 140) *and suretie fro the sacrate senate. I am furred with ŷ fures that thou hast sent me, 7 am clothed with thy mātell, 7 ⁹⁷⁴⁰ am right well pleased with thy greyhoundes: if I hadde thought, that thin absence fro Rome shuld haue procured so moche fruite in that yle: longe ago I shuld haue determined as well for thy profyte as for my seruyce. I sent to the in demaunding but small thinges in my sporte, and ⁹⁷⁴⁵ thou hast sent me many thynges in earnest. In good soth thou hast better proporcioned thy seruice with noblenes, than I to demaunde with my couetise. For if thou remembre, I sent to the for a doseyne skynnes of furre, and thou hast sent me .xii. doseyns: and I dyd send but for [.]vi[.] grey- ⁹⁷⁵⁰ houndes, and thou hast sent me .xii. Truly in this case my pleasure is double. For here in Rome thy great largesse is publyshed, and my smal couetise there in Helesponto. And bicause I am sure thou hast great thanks of me, I pray to god to sende the salute and helthe. And that fortune be ⁹⁷⁵⁵ not denyed the at a good houre. I sende the .iii. barks of mayster foles, 7 yet I haue not sent the al. For if I had banyshed all the fooles in Rome, we shuld haue peopled vs with a newe people. These master foles haue ben so wyly to teche folly, 7 the Romain youth so apt to lerne, though ⁹⁷⁶⁰ they be but in .iii. barks their disciples wold lade .iii. M. Carrakes. I haue great meruayle of one thyng, and my hart sclaundreth the goddis: for I se wel that erthquakes casteth down howses, 7 gret waters bereth away bridges[,] frostes freseth the vines, sodein thondring and tempestes ⁹⁷⁶⁵ breketh down toures, scarfite of water causeth derth, corrupt aire maketh an ende of thē that be wise: 7 yet there is nothyng that can make an ende of these fooles. All thinges at this day faileth at Rome, except all only these idell trewandes, gestours, tomblers, players, or dromflaye[r]s, ⁹⁷⁷⁰ iuglers, 7 suche other, of whom there is inow 7 to many.

O what

(*f. 140^b) *O what a seruice fhuldest thou doo to the goddis, 7 what profyte to Rome, that for thre barkes ful of foles to sende one lade with wyfe men? One thing I wyl say, that with
 9775 the bones of the wise men that yle is halowed, that aunciently were banished by the malice and enuye of theym of Rome: if thy smellynge wittes be not lost, as Italy stinketh of them that be symple, so that yle smelleth swete of wyfe men. whan I came fro the warres of the Parthes,
 9780 the .iiii. yere of myn empire, I passed into that yle by dyuers sees to visite the sepulchres of ancient wise men: and in the citie of Dorbite, in the myddes therof, lyeth Ouide that was banyshed by August, and vnder the mountayne Arpines is the sepulchre of the renoumed Armeno orator
 9785 banyshed by Sylla: at the porte of Argonaut thou shalte fynde the bones of Colliod[o]rus recapituler of the antyke lawes, that was banyshed by Nero the cruell: and in the felde of Elinos, vnder a marble, is the pouders of Syfiso Seteno, that was so well lerned in the .vii. artes lyberal,
 9790 as though he had newe founde them, he was banished by the Marians. I say for trouth, thou shalte fynde it thus, for with my knees I haue touched their sepulchres. And all that season my tender eyes were as fulle of water, as their bones were harde in the erthe. These were not ba-
 9795 nyshed for no vilanies that they had done: but it was the meryte of our forefathers, that they wolde be priuated fro the company of so noble barons: and we their chylderne fro the powder of so renoumed sages. I can not tell whiche is the greater, the fantasie that I haue to thyn yle, or
 9800 the compassion of miserable Rome. I pray the as my frēd, and commaunde the as my seruant, to regarde the places that I haue shewed the. For it is a iuste thyng, and most iuste, that suche cities be priuiledged by them that lyueth, whan they are peopled with suche deade wyfe men.
 And

(*f. 141) *And more ouer Centurion knoweth by wordes the heuye ⁹⁸⁰⁵
 case that these prifoners had with vs, and we with theym
 the day of the feaste of mother Berecynthia. I say, I sawe
 not that day so moch cruelte in Rome, as the infamie that
 we caused in all the empire. Rome, that neuer was ouer-
 come by them that were valyant and vertuous, that daye ⁹⁸¹⁰
 we sawe ouergone and troden vnder fete by those fooles.
 The walles of Rome[,] that were neuer touched by the Pe-
 niens, had their lowpes full of armed trewandes: Rome
 that tryumphed ouer all realmes, was tryumphed [vpon] with
 tomblers and iuglers. I am so abashed in this case, that ⁹⁸¹⁵
 I wote not what to say or write. Yet one thing comforteth
 me, that fith that Rome 7 the Romaynes vniustly do not
 reioyce but with these fooles: she and the famous wyfe
 men iustly shalbe chastised for these foles: and in this the
 goddis shal not be displeased, that fyth Rome laugheth ⁹⁸²⁰
 at these trewandes and mockeries, one day she shal wepe
 with these tomblers and iuglers. I banysshe all these for
 euer fro Rome, not for the bloudde that they haue shedde,
 but for the hartes that they haue peruerter: 7 not for y^e oc-
 casion of any that be deed, but bycause they were masters ⁹⁸²⁵
 of folyes. Without cōparifon it is greater offence to the
 goddis, and more damage to the cōmon welthe, these tre-
 wandes to take away the wyttes fro wyfe folkes, than the
 murtherers to take away mens lyues. If the gretteft gift
 amonge all giftes of Fortune, be to kepe a good witte, let ⁹⁸³⁰
 no man presume to be of a restefull vnderftondynge, that
 is an extreme frende to these trewandes. Beleue me one
 thinge. As one byrde loueth an other, and one beaft an o-
 ther, and one wyfe man an other: so one foole loueth an
 other foole. 9835

¶ I remēbre on a day as I reuolued the registers in the
 Capitoll, I redde a ryght meruaylous thyng of Orueto
 a famous

Oo

(*f. 141 b) *a famous oratour, which is buried in the yle of Helespōte on the moūt Adamantine, Whan great Scipio came fro
 9840 the warre of the Peniens, better accompanied with hun-
 gre storuen trewandes, than with valyant capitayns, he
 layde to hym: Of trouth it is a great shame to the, and a
 small honour to the senate, that thou that haste ouercome
 the wyle Affres, and beinge soo wyle thy selfe, and of the
 9845 blode of the wyle Romainys, wylte be accompanied with
 these trewandes and fooles. In that vnhappy realme all
 the wise men coude not ouercome one that was thoughte
 so myghty amonge so many fooles. I say to the, that thy
 wyt is in more peryl here in Rome, thā thy life in Affrike.
 9850 ¶ These were good wordes, and not of no worldely ma-
 lyce, and within a shorte whyle after, and by dyuers light
 persons, and for a small occasion, this poore olde oratour
 and ryche philosopher, by the frendes of Scipio, was ba-
 nyshed Rome, and sent into that yle. Than behold Lam-
 9855 bert, lette vs retourne to these iuglers, and trewandes.
 Whan they are landed in that ile, lette them go frank and
 free, soo that they vse not their accustomed toyes. Thou
 shalt constrayne them to labour, and chastise them if they
 be ydell. For these myserable folke, fleinge from iust tra-
 9860 uayle, take on them vniust idelnes, 7 conuert mo mē with
 their trewandys, than if open scoles of vacabundes were
 kept. There is nothyng that our forefathers dyd, that di-
 spleseth me so moche, as the suffraunce of these vnthriftie
 trewandes.
 9865 ¶ In the yere .CC. xxvi. of the foundation of Rome, in
 an horrible pestilence in Italye, to reioyce the people, was
 fyrst founde out the inuention of Theatres, by the aduise
 of the trewandes. It is a shamefulle thyng to here, that
 the pestilence duryng but two yeres, and the rage of these
 9870 vnthriftes, to dure .iiii. C. yeres.

Lam-

(*f. 142) *¶ Lamberte, I beleue well that the complayntes, that these prifoners haue begon here, fhall neuer haue an ende there. How be it I care not: for the grudge of them that be ylle, iuftifieth the iuftyce and fentence of them that be good. As the mayfter of Neron fayde: as moche as the ⁹⁸⁷⁵ fhame of lynne ought to be fledde of them that be good, fo moche prayfe is the infamy of the yll. I fhall telle the one thyng, to the intent that the chaftyfement fhulde not feme cruell to the: That lithe themperours of Rome are full of clemency to ftraungers, it is no reafon they fhulde ⁹⁸⁸⁰ be to fharp to their owne. Sythe fatall deftenies hathe brought me into this worlde, I haue fene nothyng more vnprofytable to the common welthe, nor greater folly in them that be lyght of condicions, nor a worfe inuention for vacabūdes, nor a more cold reuocation of mortal folk, ⁹⁸⁸⁵ thā to lerne of thefe gamners 7 trifelers, 7 fuch other iuglers. What thing is more monftruous, thā to fe wife men reioyce at the light paflyme of thefe vaine trifelers? what gretter mockerie can be in the capitol, than the folyfhe fayyng of a geftour, to be prayfed with greatte laughter of ⁹⁸⁹⁰ wyfe mē? what greater fclaūders can be to princis houfes, than to haue their gates alwayes open to receyue in thefe fooles, and neuer open to wife folkes? what greater cruelty can there be for any perfone, to giue more in one daye to a fole, thā to his feruant in a yere, or to his kyn all his ⁹⁸⁹⁵ lyfe? What greter inconstancie can be, thā to want men to furnifhe the garyfons and frontiers of Illirico, and thefe trewandes to abide at Rome? what lyke fhame can be to Rome, thā y the memorie fhall be left more in Italy of thefe tōblers, trewandes, pypers, fingers of geftes, tabourers, ⁹⁹⁰⁰ croudes, dācers, mōmers, gefters, 7 iuglers, thā y renome of capitains with their triūphes 7 armes. And whā thefe caitifes went all about in Rome in fauetie, lowyng their
lewde-

Oo. ii.

(*f. 142^b) *lewdenes, and gaderyng of money: the noble barons and
 9905 capitaynes went fro realme to realme waftyng theyr money, aduenturinge their lyues, and shedyng their blode.

¶ In the vttermofte parte of Spayne, whan warre began betwene the Liberiens and Godytains, and they of Lyberie lacked money: Two iuglers and tabourers, of-
 9910 fred to maynteyne the warre a hole yere. And it folowed, that with the goodes of two fooles many wyfe men were flayne and ouercome.

¶ In Ephefe a cytie of Afie, the famous temple of Dyan-
 na was edified with the confifcation of the goodis of fuch
 9915 a trewande and foole.

¶ Whan Cadmus edified the citie of Thebes in Egipte with .l. gates, the mynstrelles gaue hym more toward it, than all his frendes.

¶ If the histories be trew, whan Auguft edified the wal-
 9920 les of Rome, he hadde more of the trewandes, that were drowned in Tybre, than of the comon treafourie.

¶ The firfte kynge of Corynth arofe by fuche villaynes, I fawe his fepulchre at Corynthie. And as I fay of thefe fmalle nombre, I myght fay of many other. Behold than
 9925 Lambert, howe lyttell care the goddis take, and howe va[-]riable the cafe of fortune is, and howe the dedes of men falle. Some be had in memorie by their folye, and fomme for their wyfedome. One thyng is come to my mynde, of the chaunce of thefe trewandes, 7 that is: whyle they
 9930 be in prefence they make euery man to laugh at the folyes that they do and fay: and whan they be gone, euery man is forie for his money y they bare away. And of trouth it is a iuft fentēce of the goddis, y fuch as haue taken vayn pleafure togyther, whan they are departed to weepe for
 9935 their loffes. I wyll write no more vnto the: but that I do fende the this letter in Greke, to thentent that thou fhewe
 hit

(*f. 143) *it ouer all the yle. Sende forthwith the shyppes ageyne, for they muſte be ſente forth with prouyfions in to Illyrico. Peace be with the Lambert: helth and good fortune be with me Marc. The ſenate ſaluteth the. And thou on ⁹⁹⁴⁰ my behalfe ſhalt ſhewe to the yle the ioyfull happy cuſtomes. My wife Fauſtine ſaluteth the, and ſendeth a riche gyrdell to thy doughter. And in recompence of the furies I ſende the ryche iewelles.

¶ A letter ſent by Marc themperour to Catulus his ſpeciall frende of the nouelties of Rome.

The .xiii. letter.



Arcus the newe Cenſure to the Catulus ⁹⁹⁴⁵ the olde Cenſurine. It is .x. dayes paſt, that in the temple of god Janus, I receyued thy letter: and I take the ſame god to wytnesse, that I had rather haue ſene thy perſone. Thou wryteſte, howe ⁹⁹⁵⁰ my writynge is longe, but the ſhortnes of tyme maketh me to aunſwere the more briefly, ferre awaye more thanne I wolde. Thou deſireſt me to gyue the knowlege of the newes here. Therto I aunſwere, that it were better to demaunde, if there be any thyng abyden ⁹⁹⁵⁵ here in Rome or Italy that is olde. For nowe by our heuy deſtenies al that is good and olde is ended, and new thynges that be yll and deteſtable we may ſe dayly. Themperour, the Confule, the Trybune, the Senatours, the Ediles, the Flamynes, the Pretours, the Centurions, all ⁹⁹⁶⁰ theſe thynges be newe, but the vilanies that ben olde, 7 al paſſeth to make newe offices, and to ordeyne ſtatutes and practykes, to come to the councelles, and to reyle vp ſubſidies. In ſuche wiſe, y there hath ben nowe mo nouelties within

Oo. iij.

(*f. 143^b) 9965 *within these .iiii. yeres, than in tyme passed in .iiii. C. yeres.
 We nowe assemble to gither a. iii. C. to counfel in the capitoll, and there we blason and bofte, swere, and promise, that some of vs may subdue 7 put vnder other, to fauour one, and distroye an other, other to chaftise the yll and re-
 9970 warde the good: To repaire olde 7 edifie newe: to plucke vices vp by the rootes, and to plante vertues: to amende the olde, and folowe the good: to reproue tyrauntes, and affifte the poore: and whan that we are gone from thens, they that spake best wordes, are often takē with the worst.
 9975 dedes. O heuy Rome, that nowe adayes hath suche Senatours, that in sayinge we shall do, we shall do, passe their lyfe: and than euery man sekynge for his owne profyte, forgetteth the common welth. Oftentymes I am in the Senate to beholde other as they regarde me: and I
 9980 am abashed to here the eloquence of their wordes, the zele of Iustyce, and the iustification of their persons: and after that I come thens, I am ashamed to se their secrete extorcions, their damnable thoughtes, and their yll werkes so playnly manifest. And yet there is an other thyng of
 9985 more meruayle, and not to be suffred, that suche persones as are moſte defamed, and vse moſte diſhoneſte vices, that they with their moſt damnable intēcions, make their auowes to do moſte cruell Iustice. It is an ineffable rule, and of humayn malyce moſte vſed, that he that is moſte
 9990 hardy to commytte greattest crimes, is moſt cruel to giue sentence ageynſt an other for the ſame offence. Me thinke that we regarde our owne crimes, as through ſmall nettes, that cauſeth thynges to ſeme the leſſer. And we remēbre the fautes of other in the water, that cauſeth thinges
 9995 to ſeme greater than they be. O howe many haue I ſene condempned to be hanged by the ſenate, for one ſmal faut done in all the lyfe, and yet they commytte the ſame faute
 euery

(*f. 144) *euery houre.

¶ I haue redde, that in the tyme of Alexander the great, there was a renoumed pirate or rouer on the see, whiche ¹⁰⁰⁰⁰ robbed and drowned all shyppes that he coude gette: and by commaundement of this good kynge Alexander there was an army sent forthe to take hym. And whan he was taken and presented to Alexander he sayde to hym: Shew me Dionides, why doste thou kepe the see in danger, that ¹⁰⁰⁰⁵ no shyppe can sayle out of the east into the weste for the? The Pyrate aunswered and sayde: If I kepe the see in daungier, why doste thou Alexander kepe all the see and lande as lofte? O Alexander, bycause I fyghte with one shyppe in the see, I am called a thefe, and bycause thou ¹⁰⁰¹⁰ robbest with .ii. C. shyppes on the see, and troublest al the worlde with two .C. thousande men, thou arte called an emperour. I sweare to the Alexander, if fortune were as fauourable to me, and the goddis as extreme agaynst ther [sic] they wolde gyue me thyne empire, and gyue the my lyttel ¹⁰⁰¹⁵ shyppe: and than peraduenture I shuld be a better kyng than thou arte, and thou a wors thefe than I am.

¶ These were high wordes, and well receyued of Alexāder: and of trouth to se if his wordes were correspondent to his promyses, he made hym from a Pyrate a great ca- ¹⁰⁰²⁰ pitayne of an army: and he was more vertuous on lāde, than he was cruell on the see. I promyse the Catulus[,] Alexander dydde ryght well therin, and Dionides was to be prayfed greatly for that he had sayde. Nowe adayes in Italye they that robbe openly are called lordes: and they ¹⁰⁰²⁵ that robbe priuely are called theues.

¶ In the yere boke of Liuius I haue redde, that in the seconde troublous warre punyke betwene the Romaines and Carthageniens, there came an ambassadour Lufytayne sente fro Spayne, to treat for accorde of peace. ¹⁰⁰³⁰

Whan

(*f. 144^b) *Whan he camme to Rome he proued before the Senate,
 that lyth he entred into Italye, he had ben .x. tymes robbed
 of his goodes, and whyles he was at Rome, he had
 sene one of them that had robbed hym, hange vp an other
 10035 that had defended hym. He feinge so yll a dede, and howe
 the thefe was saued without Iustyce, as a desperate man
 toke a cole and wrote on the gybet as foloweth. O gybette
 thou art made amonge theues, nourished among theues,
 cutte of theues, wrought of theues, made of theues, set
 10040 amonge theues, and thou arte peopled with innocentes.
 And there as I redde these wordes was in the original of
 Lyuius, and in his histories. I swere to the by the immortal
 goddis, that al the Decade was written with blacke
 ynke, and these wordes with redde vermyl[y]on. I can not
 10045 tell what wordes I shulde sende the, but that euery thing
 is so newe and so tender, and is ioyned with so yl fyment,
 that I feare me all wyll fall sodaynly to the playne erthe.
 I tell the that some are sodaynly ryfen within Rome vnto
 valour, to whom I wyl rather assure their fall, than their
 10050 lyfe. For all buyldynge hastely made can not be sure. The
 longer a tree is kept in his kynde, it wyll be the longer er
 it be olde. The trees whose fruite we eate in sommer, doo
 warme vs in wynter. O howe many haue we sene, wher-
 of we haue meruayled of their ryfinge, and [ben] abaffhed of
 10055 their falles. They haue growen as a hole pece, and soden-
 ly waisted as a scomme. Theyr felicitye hath ben but a short
 poynt, and their infortune as a longe lyfe. Finallye they
 haue aredyed the mill, 7 armed it with stones of encrease,
 and after a lyttell gryndyng left it, inuyle al the hole yere
 10060 after. Thou knowest wel my frend Catulus[,] that we haue
 sene Cincius Fuluius in one yere made Consule, and his
 chyl dren tribunes, and his wyfe a matron for yonge may-
 dens, and besyde that made keper of the capitol, and after
 that

(*f. 145) *that not in one yere, but the same day we saw Cincius be-
 heeded in the place, his chylderne drowned in Tybre, his 10065
 wyfe banished fro Rome, his howse raced downe to the
 grounde, and all his good confisked to the common trea-
 fourie. This rigorous example we haue not redde in any
 booke to take a copie of it, but we haue sene it with our eies
 to kepe it in our myndes. As the nations of people ar va[-] 10070
 riable, so are the condicions of men diuers, and appetites
 of mortal folke: and me thynketh this is true, seinge that
 some loue, some hate, and that that some seke, some esche-
 weth: And that that some setteth lyttelle by, other make
 of. In such wise, y al can not be cōtent with one thing, nor 10075
 some with all thinges can not be satisfied. Let euery mā
 chuse as they lyfte, and embrace the worlde whan he wyll,
 I had rather mount a softe pace to the fallyng: and if I
 can not come therto, I wyll abyde by the way, rather thā
 with sweatte to mount hastily, and than to tumble down 10080
 heedlyng. In this case syth mēs hartes vnderstond it, we
 nede not to write further with pennes. And of this matter
 regarde not the lyttell that I do saye, but the great deale
 that I wyll say. And syth I haue begon, and art in strāge
 landes, I wyl write the all the newes fro hens. This yere 10085
 the .xxv. day of May, there came an ambassadour out of
 Afie, sayenge he was of the yle of Cetyn, a baron righte
 elegant of body, ruddy af [sic] aspect, and ryght hardy of cou-
 rage. He considered beinge at Rome[,] though the sommers
 dayes were longe, yet wynter wold drawe on, and thanne 10090
 wolde it be daungerous saylynge in to his yle: and sawe
 that his besynes was not dispatched: On a day beinge at
 the gate of the Senate, seinge al the Senatours entre in
 to the Capitolle, without any armure vpon them, he as a
 man of good spirite, and zelatour of his countreye, in the 10095
 presence of vs all sayde these wordes:

O fa-

Pp

(*f. 145^b) *¶ O fathers conscripte, O happy people, I am come fro
 a straunge countreye to Rome, onely to se Rome, and I
 haue founde Rome withoute Rome: The walles where-
 10100 with it is inclosed, hath not broughte me hyther, but the
 fame of them that gouerne it. I am not come to se the tre-
 fourie, wherin is the treasure of all realmes, but I am
 come to se the sacred senate, out of the whiche issueth the
 counsell for al men: I came not to se you, bycause ye van-
 10105 quyshe all other: but bycause I thought you more vertu-
 ous than all other. I dare well say one thyng, except the
 goddis make me blynd, and trouble myn vnderstondyng,
 ye be not Romainys of Rome, nor this is not Rome of the
 Romainys your predeceffours. We haue herde in our yle,
 10110 that diuers realmes ben wonne by the valyantife of one,
 and conferued by the wysedome of all the senate: and at
 this houre ye are more lyke to be distroyed, than to winne
 as your fathers dydde: all their exercise was in goodnes,
 and ye that are their chylderne passe all your tyme in ceri-
 10115 monies. I say this ye Romainys, bycause ye haue almost
 kylde me with laughynge at you, to se howe ye doo all as
 moche your diligence to leaue your armure withoute the
 gate of the senate, as your predeceffours dyd to take them
 to defende the empire. What profyte is it to you to leaue
 10120 your armes for the sureties of your persons, and putteth
 them on wherwith ye flee all the worlde? What profyteth
 it to the thoughtfull suiter, that the senatour entreth vn-
 armed in to the senate without swerde or dagger: and his
 harte entreth into the senate armed with malyce? O Ro-
 10125 maynes, I wyl ye knowe, that in our yle we hold you not
 as armed capitaynes, but [as] malicious senatours: not with
 sharpe grounden swerdes 7 daggers, but with harde her-
 tes 7 venymous tongues ye feare vs. If ye shulde in the
 senate put on harnes, 7 therwith take away your lyues, [it]
 were

(*f. 146) *were but a small losse, feinge that ye sulsteyn not the inno- 10130
 centes, nor dispatche not the busines of suiters, I can
 not suffre it. I can not tell in what possessions ye be holdē
 at Rome: for in our ile we take armour fro foles, whether
 your armours are taken awaye as fro foles or madde fol-
 kes, I wote not: If it be done for ambicioufnes, it cometh 10135
 not of Romaines, but of tyrauntes, that wranglers and
 ireful folke shulde be iuges ouer the peasible, and the am-
 bicious ouer the meke, and the malicious ouer the simple:
 if it be done bycause ye be foles, it is not in the law of the
 goddis, that .iii. C. fooles shuld gouerne .iii. C. M. wise 10140
 men. It is a longe season that I haue taried for myn an-
 swere and licence: and by your madnes I am now farder
 of, than I was the first daye. We bringe oyle, hony, saf-
 fron, wood, and tymbre, salt, syluer, and golde out of our
 yle into Rome, and ye wyll that we go elles where to seke 10145
 Iustice. Ye wyl haue one lawe to gather your rentes, and
 an other to determyne our Iustices: ye wyll that we pay
 our tributes in one day, 7 ye wyl not discharge one of our
 errādes in a hole yere. I require you Romaines determin
 your selves to take away our lyues, and so we shall ende: 10150
 or els here our complayntes, to thentēt that we may serue
 you. For in an other maner it may be than ye know by he-
 ryng with your eares, whiche peradventure ye wold not
 se with your eien. And if ye thinke my wordis be out of me-
 sure so ŷ ye wyl remedy my coūtrey, I set not by my lyfe. 10155
 And thus I make an ende. Uerily frende Catulo these be
 the wordes, that he spake to the senate, which I gat in wri[-]
 tinge. I say of truth, ŷ the hardines, that the Romaines
 were wont to haue in other coūtres, the same as now strā-
 gers haue in Rome. There were that spake that this am- 10160
 bassadour shuld be chastised, but the goddis forbyd, ŷ for
 saying trouth in my presence, he shulde haue ben correcte.
 It is

Pp. ii.

(*f. 146^b) *It is inough 7 to moche to, to suffre these euyls, thoughe
 we flee nor perfecute those that aduertyle and warne vs
 10165 of them. The shepe ar not in suretie of the wolfe, but if the
 shepard haue his dogge with him. I mene, doggis ought
 not to leaue barkynge for to awake the shepardes. There
 is no god commaundeth, nor lawe counsayleth, nor com-
 mon welthe suffreth, that they whiche are commytted to
 10170 chaastyse lyers, shulde hange them that say trouth. And sith
 the senatours shewe them selfe men in their liuinge, and
 sometyme more humayne than other that be flaues, who
 elles shulde delyuer them fro chaastisement? O Rome and
 no Rome, hauyng nothyng but the name of Rome, where
 10175 is now become the noblenes of thy triumphes, the glorie
 of thy chyl dren, the rectitude of thy Justice, and the ho-
 nour of thy temples? for as nowe they chaastise hym more
 that murmureth agaynste one only Senatour, than they
 do them that blaspheme al the goddis at ones. For it gre-
 10180 ueth me more to se a Senatour or censure to be worste of
 all other, than it displeaseth me, that it shuld be sayd, that
 he is the best of all other. For a trouthe I saye to the my
 frende Catulus, that as nowe we nede not to seke to the
 goddis in the temples, for the Senatours are made god-
 10185 dis in our handes. This is the difference betwene theym
 that ben immortall, and they that be mortal. For the god-
 dis neuer do thyng that is yll, and the Senatours doo
 neuer good thyng: the goddis neuer lye, and they neuer
 say trouthe: the goddis pardon often, and they neuer for-
 10190 gyue: the goddis are content to be honoured .v. tymes in
 the yere, and the Senatours wolde be honoured .x. tymes
 a day. What wylt thou that I shuld say more? but what
 so euer the goddis do, they ought to be prayfed: and the
 senatours in all their workes deserue to be reprobued. Fy-
 10195 nally I conclude, that the goddis assure and affirme eue-
 ry thing

(*f. 147) *ry thynges, and they erre and fayle in nothynges: and the
 fenatours assure nothynges, but erre in all thynges: onely
 for one thynges the fenatours are not of reason to be cha-
 styfled: and that is, whan they intend not to amend their
 fautes, they wylle not suffre the oratours to wafte theyr ¹⁰²⁰⁰
 tyme to shewe theym the trouthe. Be hit as maye be, I
 am of the opinion, that what mā or woman, withdraweth
 their eares fro heryng of trouthe, impossible it is for them
 to applye their hartes to loue any vertues: Be it censure
 that iugeth, or fenatour that ordeyneth, or emperour that ¹⁰²⁰⁵
 commaundeth, or consule that executeth, or oratour that
 preacheth. No mortall man take he neuer so good hede to
 his werkes, nor reason so well in his desires, but that he
 deserueth some chaastyfement for some cause or counsaile
 in his doinges. And sith I haue written to the thus of o- ¹⁰²¹⁰
 ther, I wylle somewhat speake of my selfe, bycause of the
 wordes of thy letter. I haue gathered, that thou desirest
 to knowe of my person. Knowe thou for certayne, that in
 the kalendes of Januarie I was made censure in the se-
 nate, the whiche offyce I desired not, nor I haue not de- ¹⁰²¹⁵
 serued it. The opinion of all wyse men is, that no manne
 without he lacke wytte, or surmounteth in folly, wyl glad-
 ly take on hym the burden & charges of other men. A gret[-]
 ter case it is for a shamefaste man to take on hym an office
 to please euery man, for he muste shewe a countenaunce ¹⁰²²⁰
 outwarde, contrarye to that he thynketh inwarde. Thou
 wylte saye, that the good are ordeyned to take the charge
 of offices. O vnhappye Rome, that hath wylled to take
 me in suche wyse, as to be the beste in it. Greuous pesty-
 lence ought to come for them that be good, sith I am sca- ¹⁰²²⁵
 ped as good amonge the yll. I haue accepted this office,
 not for that I had any nede therof, but to satisfie the de-
 syres of my wyfe Fauстыne, and to fulfyll the commande-
 ment

Pp. iii.

(*f. 147 b) *ment of Anthonius my grauntfather. Haue no meruayle
 10230 of any thyng that I do, but of that I leaue to be done.
 For any man that is wedded to Fauptyne, there is no vi-
 lany but he shall do it. I swere to the, that fith the day we
 were wedded, me semeth that I haue no wytte. I leaue
 weddyng for this tyme, and returne to speake of offyces.
 10235 Surely a peafible man ought to be in offyces, though it
 be peynfull: for as the offyces are assured amonge them
 that be vertuous, so peryllously goth the vertuous folke
 amonge offyces. And for the trouthe hereof reckon what
 they wyne, and than thou shalt se what they lose. Saye
 10240 that is good, if thou knowest it, 7 here the yll, if thou de-
 fyre to knowe it. He that wyll take the charge to gouerne
 other, he seketh thought and trouble for hym selfe, enuye
 for his neyghbours, spurres for his ennemyes, pouertie
 102045 for his rycheffe, awakyng of theues, peryll for his body,
 an ende of his dayes, and tourment for his good renome.
 Fynally he seketh a waye to reiecte his frendes, and a re-
 peale to recouer his ennemyes. O an vnhappy mā is he,
 that taketh on hym the charge of chylderne of many mo-
 10250 thers, for he shalbe always charged with thoughtes, how
 he shulde content them all: ful of fighes bycause one hath
 to gyue hym: feare that one shulde take fro hym, weping
 if he lese, and suspection that they infame hym. He that
 knoweth this, without longe tarieng ought to sette a bri-
 dell at his heed. But I say of one, as I saye of an other.
 10255 For I wyll swere, and thou wylt not deny it, that we may
 finde some nowe adays, that had rather be in the parke to
 fight ayenst the bulles, thā be in suretie vpon y scaffold.
 Oftentimes I haue hard say: Go we to the Theatres to
 renne at the bulles: go we to chafe the hertes and wylde
 10260 boores: and whā they com there, they renne away, not the
 beestis fro them, but they fro the beastis: In such wyse as
 they

(*f. 148) *they went rēnyng, they retorne ageine fleing. I say theſe ambitious perſones procure to gouerne, 7 are gouerned, they commaunde and are commaunded: they rule and ar ruled; and fynally thynkyng to haue diuers vnder their 10265 handes, theſe wretches put them ſelfes vnder euery mans fote. For the remedy of all theſe perylles my thoughte is comforted with one thing, and that is, without procuring or offring of my ſelfe, the ſenate of their owne wyll hathe cōmaunded me. In the .viii. table of our auncient lawes 10270 be theſe wordes. We commande, that in our ſacred ſenate charge of iuſtyce be neuer giuen to him that wyfully offreth hym ſelfe to it, but to ſuch as by ripe deliberation be choſen. This is certaynly a iuſte lawe. For men nowe be not ſo vertuous nor ſo louinge to the cōmon welth, y they 10275 wyl forget their owne quietnes and reſt, doing damage to hym ſelfe to procure an other mans profyt. There is none ſo folyſhe, that wyl leue his wife, chyldrē, 7 his own ſwete countrey, to go into ſtrange coūtreis, but if he ſe him ſelfe amonge ſtrange people, thinkyng vnder the colour of iu- 10280 ſtyce to ſeke for his own vtilite. I ſay not this without we[-]pyng, that the princis with their ſmall ſtudy 7 thought, 7 the iuges with their couetyſe, haue vndermyned 7 ſhaken down the hygh walles of the polycie of Rome. O my frēd Catulus, what wylt thou that I ſhuld ſaye, but that our 10285 credēce ſo miniſheth, our couetyſe ſo largely voyded, our hardines ſo boldeth, our ſhamfaſtnes ſo ſhameles that we prouyde for iuges to go 7 robbe our neighbours as capytayns ageinſt our ennemies. I lette the to wyte, where as Rome was beloued for chaſtifying the yl, nowe it is as mo- 10290 che hated for diſpoyling of innocētes. I do remēbre, that I red, in the time of Denis Syracuſan, that ruled al Sy-cile, there came an ambaffadour fro Rhodes to Rome, be-inge of a good age, well lerned, and valyaunt in armes,
and

(*f. 148 b) 10295 *and right curious to regarde euery thyng. He camme to Rome to se the maiestie of the sacred senate: the height of the high capitol enuironned with the Collifet: the multitude of senatours: the wysedom of the counsaylours: the glorie of triumphes: the correction of the yl: the peace of
 10300 the inhabitauntes, the diuersitie of nations: the haboundance of the mayntenaunce, the order of the offyces: and finally seinge that Rome was Rome: he was demanded howe he semed therby: He answered and sayd: O Rome in this thy present worlde, thou arte fulle of vertues and
 10305 wyse men, hereafter it wyll be furnyshed with fooles. Lo what hygh and very hygh wordes were these? Rome was vi. C. yeres without houses of nycetie of foles, and now it hath ben .iii. C. yeres without one wyse or vertuous. Loke what I say, it is no mockerie but of trouth. If the
 10310 pitiefull goddis now adayes did reyle our predeceffours fro dethe do lyfe, eyther they wold not knowe vs for their chylderne, or elles attache vs for foles. These be thinges vsed in Rome, but thou sendest no worde of that is vsed in Agrippine. I wyll write no thyng to the to put the to
 10315 peyne: write to me some thyng to reioyce me. If thy wife Dynfilla chanced well of the flote that came out of Cetin with salte, oyle, and hony, I haue caused it to be wel prouided for her. Wite thou, that Flodius our vncle was cast downe by rage of his hors, and is deceassed. Laertia and
 10320 Collodius are frendes to gyther, by occasion of a maryage. I do send the a gowne, I pray to the goddis to sende the ioy therof. My wife Faustyn saluteth the. Recōmende me to Iamyro thy sonne. The goddis haue the in keping: and contrary fortune be fro me. Marcus thy frende to the
 10325 Catulus his owne.

A let-

(*f. 149) *¶ A letter sent by Marke the emperour to the amorous ladyes of Rome, by cause they made a play of hym. The .xiiii. letter.

MArke oratour lernyng at Rodes the arte of humanite, to you amorous ladies of Rome salutation to your perfonen, and amendement of your defyred lyfe. It is writen to me, that at the feaste of the mother of the goddis Berecynthia, all ye togyther there present played, and gested on me: wherin ye layde for an example my lyfe and my renoume. It is shewed me, that Aulina composed it, Lucia Fulua wrote it, and thy selfe Toringula dyd finge it, and ye all togyther dyd present it to the Theatre, ye haue portrayed and paynted me in dyuers maners, with a boke in my hande, tourned contrary, as a fayned philosopher: with a tongue alonge, as a bold speker without measure: with a horne on my heed, a common cuckolde: with a nettel in my hande as a tremblyng louer: with a baner fallen downe, as a cowarde capitayn: with halfe a berde as a femynate man: with a cloth afore myn eies as a condempned vacabunde: and yet not content with this, but the other day ye portrayed me in a new maner. Ye made my figure with fete of straw, my legges of ambre my knees of wood, the thyghes of brasse, the bellye of horne, the armes of pytche, the handes of mace: the heed of yello: the eares as an asse: the eyes of a serpent, the heares as rootes iagged, the tethe of a catte, the tōge of a scorpion, and the foreheed [sic] of lead: wherin was writen in two lynes these letters, M, N, T, N, I, S, V, S, the whiche meneth, (as I do take it) The mortall man taketh not the statue so strange, as the doublenes of the lyfe: 7 than ye went to the ryuer, and therin tyed his heed downward a hole

Qq

(*f. 149^b) 10355 *a hole day. And if the lady Meffalyn had not ben, I think it had ben tied there tyll nowe. And nowe ye amorous ladyes haue written to me a letter by Fuluius Fabritius, wherof I receyue no peyn, but as an amorous man, from the handes of ladyes I take it as a mockerie. And to thē-
 10360 tent that I shulde haue no tyme for to thynke theron, ye sende to wyte a question of me, that is: if I haue founde in my wrytinges, wherof, by whom, where, whan, what, and howe the fyrste women were made. And bycause my complexion is to take mockes for mockynges, and syth ye
 10365 demaunde it, I shall shewe it you, and your frendes and myn, and specially Fuluius your messanger hath desired me. There is nothinge wherof I complayne, but I wyll holde my peace, saue to your letter and demaunde, I wyll answere. And fith there hath ben none for to aske the que-
 10370 stiō, I protest that to none other, but to you amorous women of Rome, I sende myn answere. And if any other honest lady wyll take the demande for you, it is a token that she hath enuy of the office that ye be of. Certaynly if any lady sheweth her selfe annoyed with your payne openly,
 10375 fro hensforthe I condemne her, that she kepe no faut that she knoweth in secrete. They that be on the stage fere not the roringe of the bulle: and he that is in a dongeon feareth not the shotte of artillerie. I wyll saye, a woman of good lyfe feareth no man with an ylle tongue. The good
 10380 matrones may kepe me for their perpetuall seruante, and they that be yll for their chiefe ennemie. Nowe to answere the question, to know wherof the fyrst women were made: I say that accordynge to the diuersitie of nations, that be in the world, is dyuers opinions, that I fynd in this case.
 10385 The Egiptiens saye, that whan the flode of Nyle ranne abrode, and watred the erthe, there abode certayne pieces of erthe cleauynge to gyther lyke greace, and thanne the
 heate

(*f. 150) *heate commynge in them created many wyld beastes: and
 so amonge them was founde the firste woman. Noote ye
 ladies, that it was necessarie, that the flode of Nyle shuld ¹⁰³⁹⁰
 flowe ouer his brimmes, that the firste woman myght be
 made on the erthe. All creatures are bredde in the entrai-
 les of their mothers, excepte the woman, that was bredde
 without a mother. And this semeth to be tru, bicause with[-]
 out mothers ye were borne, without rule ye lyue, 7 with- ¹⁰³⁹⁵
 out order ye dye. Ueryly he putteth him selfe to many tra-
 uayles, and hath many wyles to fynd, and many times to
 thynke, and to aske many succours, and to abyde many
 yeres, and to chuse amonge many women, that wyll rule
 one onely wyfe by reason. Be the beastes neuer so cruelle ¹⁰⁴⁰⁰
 and fierse, at the laste the lyon is ledde of his keper with-
 out any bonde: The bulle is closed in the parke: the bry-
 dell ruleth the hors: a lyttell hoke catcheth the fyshe: and
 the wolfe suffreth to be tyed: only a woman is a beast vn-
 able to be tamed: 7 neuer lefeth her boldnes for any thing ¹⁰⁴⁰⁵
 that is commanded her, nor the bridell, for that she is not
 commaunded. The goddis haue made men as men, and
 beastes as beastis, and the humayne vnderstondynge ve-
 ry high, and his strēgth of a great power: but yet is there
 no mā be he neuer so high, that shal scape the womā light- ¹⁰⁴¹⁰
 ly, nor defende hym be he neuer so stronge. But I saye to
 you my ladyes: There is no spurres that can make you
 go, nor raynes that can holde you, nor brydell that can re-
 freyne you, nor angle or net that can take you: and final-
 ly there is no law can subdue you, nor shame refreyn you, ¹⁰⁴¹⁵
 nor feare abashe you, nor chaastyfemente amende you. O
 in what yll aduenture putteth he hym selfe, that thinketh
 to rule and correct you. For if ye take an opinion in hand,
 all the worlde shall not drawe you frome it: if a man tell
 or warne you of any thyng, ye wyll neuer beleue hym: ¹⁰⁴²⁰

If one

Qq. ii.

(*f. 150^b) *If one gyue you good counsell, ye wyl not take it: if one threaten you, anone ye complayne: if one flatter you, thā ye waxe proude: if one reioyce not in you, ye are spitefull: if one forbear you, it maketh you bolde: if ye be chasty-
 10425 fed, ye tourne to serpentes: finally a woman wyl neuer forgyue any iniurie: nor gyue thanke for any good dede. Nowe adayes the moſte ſymple of all women (I ſweare) wyl ſweare, that ſhe knoweth leſſe than ſhe dothe: and of trouthe the moſte wyſeſt mans wytte ſhall fayle in theyr
 10430 reaſons: and yet the wyſeſt of theym ſwerueth frome all wyſedom. Wyl ye know my ladyes, howe lytel ye know, and howe moche ye be ignorant? That is, ye determyne ſodenly in harde thinges of grauitie, as yf ye had ſtudied for it a. M. yeres: and if any gaynſaye you, ye take hym
 10435 as a mortall enmie. Hardy is that woman, that dare giue counſel to a man: but he is more hardier that taketh it of a womā. But I ſay he is a ſole that taketh it, and he more ſole that aſketh it, and he is moche more folyſhe that fulfylleth it. Myn opynion is, that he that wyl not fal amōg
 10440 ſo many ſtones, nor pricke him amonge ſo many thornes, nor blyſter hym amonge ſo many nettyls, lette hym here what I wyl ſay, and do as he ſhall ſee: ſpeake well and worke ylle, In promyſynge promyſe moche: In fulfyllynge fulfylle nothyng: and finally alowe your wordes,
 10445 and condemne your councelles. If one ſhulde demaunde nowe adays of dyuers ryght renoumed perſons, that ben deed, howe they dydde with the counſell of women whan they lyued: I am ſure they wolde not haue ryſen than to beleue thē: nor at this houre to be reuyued ageyn to here
 10450 them. How was kyng Philyp of Macedon with Olympias? Parys with Helayne? Alexander with Roſane? Eneas with Dydo? Hercules with Deyanira? Hanyball with Thamyra? Nero with Agrippine? And if ye wyl not be-

(*f. 151) *beleue what they suffred with them, demande of me how I do amonge other. O ye women, I remembrynge that 10455
 I am borne of one of you, abhorre my lyfe: and thynking that I lyue with you, I desire deathe. For there is none other deathe as to treate with you. And no better lyfe thā to flee fro you: It is a common sayinge amonge women, that we men be vnkynde, bycause we being borne in your 10460
 entrayles, do entreate you as bondwomen and seruantis: and ye say, sith ye beare vs with peryll, and nouryshe vs with trauaile, that it were conuenient and iust that we al- ways shulde be occupied in your seruices. Oftentymes I haue studyed, why men desireth women so moche. There is 10465
 no eies, but they ought to wepe, no harte but it shulde breake, no spirite but it shuld be sorowfull to se a wyfe mā losse by a foolyshe woman. The foolyshe louer passeth the day to satisfie his syght: the derke nyght to tomble with vayne thoughtes: one day to here tidinges, an other day 10470
 he offereth seruice: one tyme louynge darkenes, an other tyme he hateth lyght: he dyeth with company, and lyueth solytarie: and finally the poore folyshe louer may that he wyl not, and wylleth that he may not. More ouer the counsell of his frendes profyteth hym not, nor the shame of his 10475
 enymies, nor losse of his goodes, nor the aduenture of honour, nor losynge of his lyfe, nor sekynge of deathe, nor comynge nere, nor goinge ferre, nor seinge with eyes, nor herynge with eares, nor tastynge with mouthe, nor yet fe- lynge of hande: and finally to attayne victorie, he hathe 10480
 alway warre ageynst hym selfe: I wold these louers knew fro whens loue procedeth, it is this: The entrayles that we are bredde in is of fleshe: the brestes that we sucke, are of fleshe: the armes that we are nourished in be of fleshe, the werkes that we do are of the fleshe, by the whiche oc- 10485
 casions commeth the repeale of our fleshe to their fleshe.

Many

Qq. iii.

(*f. 151^b) *Many free hartes falle into the snares of loue. It semeth well my ladies, that ye are brought vp in pudles, as the Egyp̄tiēs say: The puddels kepe no clere water to drinke,
 10490 nor fruite to eate, nor fyfhe to be taken, nor vessell to sayle with: I do say ye are foule in your lyuinge, shamefull in your perſones, in aduerſitie feble and lethy, in prosperitie ſubtyll and wyly: falſe in wordes, doubtfull in your werkes: In hatynge ye kepe a diſorder, extreme to loue, auaricious in gyftes, vnſhamfaſt to take: And I ſay ye are a receyte of feare, where as wyle men findeth perylle, and ſymple men ſuffre: In you wiſe men holde their renomes diſalowed, and the ſymple their lyfe in penury.

¶ Let vs leaue the opinion of the Egyp̄tiens, and come
 10500 to the Grekes, whiche ſaye, that in the deſertes of Arabye the ſonne ſhyneth moſte hote: and they ſay, that at the begynnyng there appered a woman alone with a byrde called Phenyx, the whiche byrde (they ſay) was created of the water, and the woman of the great hete of the ſonne, and
 10505 of the corruption of the powder that falleth fro the trees, whiche the wormes doth eate: In this wiſe there was a tree ſoore eaten with wormes, and it chaunced by heate of the ſonne, and the drythe of the powder, a fyre to kendle, and ſo brent it: and than of the fire and poudre of the ſaid
 10510 brent tree, the firſte woman was made. And though I be a philoſopher Romaine, I wyll not ſay, that the opinion of the philoſopher greke was yll. For of a truth ye ladies that be amorous, haue your tongues of the nature of fire,
 7 your condicyons of the rotēnes of the powder of wood.
 10515 After the diuerſitie of beſtes, nature hath put ſom ſtrēgth in dyuers partes of their bodies, as the egle in the beke, the vnicorne in the horne, the ſerpent in the tayle, the bull in the heed, the bere in his armes, the hors in his breſt, the dogge in his teathe, the hogge in groyne, the wood doue
 in

(*f. 152) *her wynges, and women in their tongues. Of trouthe the ¹⁰⁵²⁰
 flyght of the wood doue is not so highe as the fantasie of
 your folyes, nor the catte scratcheth not so soore with her
 nayles, as ye scratche foles with your importunities: nor
 the dog hurteth not them, that he rēneth at, as ye do the so[-]
 rowful louer that serueth you: nor he rēneth not in so gret ¹⁰⁵²⁵
 perill of his lyfe for to catche the bull by the hornes, as is
 the peril of the good fame of the louer y falleth into your
 handes. And finally the serpent hath not so moch poyson
 in his taile, as ye haue in your tonges: let al the Romaine
 ladies apart: for there be many ladyes of Rome, of whom ¹⁰⁵³⁰
 there is no complaynt of their persones, nor suspection of
 their good names. Of all suche my letter spebeth not, nor
 my penne writeth not, but of other 7 not of them. I speke
 of women that be suche, that all venemous beastes haue
 not so moche poyson in their bodies, as an yl woman hath ¹⁰⁵³⁵
 in her tongue. And lith that the goddis haue cōmanded, 7
 our destenies doth permytte, that the lyfe of men can not
 passe without woman: therefore I aduertyle these yonge
 people, and pray them that be olde, and awake wise men,
 and teche the symple, to flee away fro women of yl name, ¹⁰⁵⁴⁰
 rather than fro common pestylence.

¶ Redynge the ancient lawes of Plato, I fynde written
 thus: we cōmand y al womē openly infamed, be opely put
 out of the citie: to thentēt that other seing their finnes not
 vnpunished, may abhorre the sinne for feare to fal into the ¹⁰⁵⁴⁵
 same peyne. Also the same law sayth: We cōmande, that
 pardon be giuen to a woman of all the fautes commytted
 by her owne body, if any amendement be sene in her: but
 neuer to pardon them that hathe commytted synne with
 their tungen. For commyttynge synne with an yll person ¹⁰⁵⁵⁰
 is of fragilitie, but with the tongue it is of pure malyce.

¶ O diuine Plato master 7 mesure of al vnderstondyng,
 and


(*f. 152^b) *and prince of all philosophers, whanne thou madest that lawe in the golden world, that there was neuer such scarcitie of yll women, and so great abundance of good women in Grece. What shall we doo nowe in Rome, where there be so many ylle openly, and so fewe good in secrete. Naturally they were wonte to be shamefaste in their vyages, temperate in wordes, wyfe of wyt, sobre in goinge, 10555 meke in conuersation, pitiefull in correction, well regardyng their lyuinge, not kepyng companies, stedfast in promesse, and constant in loue. Fynally let not the womā that wyl be good, trust in the wisedome of wise men, nor in the flatterie of lyght folkes: But lette her vertuously 10565 regarde her renoume, and beware alwayes of any man that maketh her any promys. For after that the flames of Uenus be set on fire, and Cupide hath shotte his arowes, the ryche man offreth all that he hathe, the poore man all that he may, the wyfe man sayth he wyl be her great frēde, 10570 and the symple alway her seruant: the wyfe man wyl lose his lyfe for her, and the fole wyl take his deathe for her: The olde man wyl say he wyl be frend to her frēdes: and the yonge man wyl say, he wyl be ennemie to her enmies. Some wyl promys to pay her debtes, and other to reuēge 10575 her iniuries. Finally to hyde their pouertie, and to shewe their beautie they leaue these fooles losing their persones and good fames. I wyl leaue to speake of good women, for it is not myn intent to lay any thinge to their charge, but to aduertise them well. I demaunde of you amorous 10580 ladyes, if Platon was there, whan ye made a playe of my lyfe, and drewe my figure about in Rome? No surely in dede, by that I se in you, at this tyme it is suspicious that in sayde of other. For there is but a fewe in Rome, whom Plato and his lawe dothe excuse. One thyng ye can not 10585 deny, if I were the worste of all men, at the laste ye haue founde

(*f. 153) *founde the ende of my vilanyes. And ye can not deny me, but she that is leaste yll of you, in all my lyfe I coude not shewe the malyce of her lyfe. It is greatte perylle to wyfe women to be neyghbours to fooles: Great peryll it is to them that be shamefast, to be with them that be shameles: 10590 great peril it is to them that be of a meke and styl maner, to be with them that be bolde and rude: great peryll it is for them that be chaste, to be with them that lyue in auoutrie: great peryll it is for the honourable, to be with them that be diffamed. For the women defamed, thinke that al 10595 other be defamed, and desire that they shulde be defamed, and procure to haue them defamed: and say they be yl famed. And to thentent to couer their owne infamy, they infame all other that be good. O ye ladyes in amours, it is long sith ye knew me and I you: and yf ye speke, I speke: 10600 yf ye knowe I knowe, if ye be styll I am styll, yf ye speke openly, I wyl not speke in secret. Thou knowest wel Auylia, that made the ieste, how Eumedes solde calues derer in the bouchery, than thou soldest the innocent virgins in thy house. Thou knowest wel Turiga, that one day thou 10605 recknedst all thy louers, but thou coudest not reckon them on thy fyngers, but desyredst to haue a bushell ful of peason. And thou Lucia Fuluia knoweste well, whan thou were (thou wotest where) with Breto, and madest peace with thy husbande, thou tokest hym a lyde, and laydest, 10610 but if thou myghtest lye out of thy house ones a weke, he shuld not lye in the house. And thou Retoria knowest wel, that in thy yonge dayes two yeres thou were appoynted on the see with a Pyrate, so that he shulde take no mo to satisfie a. C. men of warre in the galey. Thou Egna Cor- 10615 cia knowest wel, that whan the censure entred to take the, he found .v. mens gownes, in whiche thou wentst euer by nyght, 7 thou haddest but one womans gowne, that thou warest

Rr

(*f. 153^b) *wareft on by day. Thou knoweft well Pefylane Fabrice,
 10620 that Aluinus Metellus 7 thou beinge married, before the
 Cenſure demaunded openly his parte, of that thou gate
 in thy houſe with thy ſecret louers. And thou Camyll kno[-]
 weſt well, not beinge content with thyn owne nation, but
 by reaſon of the great hauntynge that thou haddeſt with
 10625 ſtraungers, thou canſt ſpeake all maner of languages. I
 wil marke them that hath marked me, and hurt them that
 haue hurte me, perſecute theym that haue perſecuted me,
 and infame them that haue infamed me: Al other my pen
 doth pardō, bycauſe they haue pardoned me in their play.
 10630 And bycauſe my letter hath begonne in that ye haue done
 to my perſon, therfore I wyl end it in that it feleth of your
 good names. And thus I conclude, that a man may ſcape
 free fro all damages, with abſteynynge fro them: But fro
 women there is no way, but to fle fro them. Thus I ende
 10635 and demaunde of the goddis, that I may ſe of you, as ye
 deſire to ſe of me. And ſythe ye be louers, I counsell you,
 as ye haue ſente me your ieſte as for a mocke, in lykewiſe
 for a mocke to receyue the anſwere. Marce Rodyan to the
 amorous ladyes of Rome.

¶ A letter ſent by Marc the emperour to Boemia a
 louer of his, that wolde haue gone with hym
 to the warres. The .xv. letter.

10640  Arc pretour Romain ſent to the warres of
 Dacy, ſendeth ſalute to his louer Boemia,
 which art in the pleaſures of Rome. I being
 ſcaped fro a cruel bataile, haue red the fewe
 lynes written with thy hande, 7 haue herde
 10645 of the a long informatiō. I ſay to the, thou
 haſt put me in a more great abaſhement, than the feare of
 myne

(*f. 154) *myn enmies. In takynge thy letter into my hande, forth-
 with the herbe of malyce entred into my herte. Whan I
 tempre my body with thy delytes, I thinke my hart is fre
 fro the venym of thyn amours. I of my wyl, and thou bi- 10650
 cause thou canste do no more, we haue giuen vs to be free
 of our pleasures, I thinke as wel as to make a deuorfe of
 our enmies. But luche as ye be, so ye do, banyshementes
 of amours, and treasours of paffions. The loue of you al
 ought to be digested with pylls: but the paffion of one of 10655
 you wyl not be oppressed with all the Rubarbe in Alexan-
 drie. Ye shewe your selfe cruell to pardon an ennemy, and
 euery day light to change louers. Curiously I haue kept
 you all the while that delytes ouerpressed my youth: yet I
 coude neuer se in any woman no certayntie, nor reason in 10660
 loue, but hate at the last. Thy presēt lyghtnes quarelleth
 with my youth past: and it is bycause thou seest not in me
 the auncient wyl toward the, nor the present seruice. And
 certaynly herynge thyn accusation, and not my iustifica-
 tion, as iustly thou paieest me with deth, as I pay the with 10665
 forgetfulnes: The whiche forgettynge is as straunge to
 be in hym that serueth, as vngentylnes in the lady that is
 serued. Thinkest thou, that I haue forgotten the lawe of
 Uenus, where as it commandeth, that the curious louers
 shuld exercise their strengthes in armes, and occupie their 10670
 hartes in loue? and also that their apparell be very clene-
 ly, their fete well compassed, their bodies stedfast and not
 wauerynge, their voyces lowe and soft, and sadde in coū-
 tenance: their eies open galynge at wyndowes, and theyr
 hartes redy to fle in the ayre. Of trouth my loue Boemia, 10675
 he is but a grosse louer, that holdeth his wylle in capti-
 uitie, and his vnderstandyng free. The vnderstondyng
 oughte to be lost, where as wyl is in prison. I saye this
 to thentent that though myne age haue lefte the exercyse,
 yet

Rr. ii.

(*f. 154^b) 10680 *yet my spirite hath not forgotten the art. Thou complai-
 nest bicause I gyue my selfe to rest, 7 that I haue greatly
 forgotten the. I wyll not deny the trouthe: the day of for-
 gettynge maketh the muster of my thoughtes, and reson
 whiche is prouifour declareth, that it is not to my grauite
 10685 to permyt, that I shuld loue, nor thy age to suffre to be be-
 loued. As nowe thou knowest, that dyuers thinges, that
 youth diffimuleth in yonge persons, in age meryteth gre-
 uous correction. The dedes done in youthe procedeth of
 ignorance: but the vilanies done in age procedeth of ma-
 10690 lyce. Whan I kepte the Cautons, I ietted in the stretes,
 I fange balades, I gased to the wyndowes, I played on
 instrumentes, I scaled the walles, I wakened lyght per-
 sons: thinkest thou, that I wyft what I dyd in my youth?
 and now that I se my selfe promoted fro these pleasures,
 10695 and decked with so many whyte heares, and apparayled
 with so many dolours, I thynke nowe, I was not than,
 or elles I dreame as nowe, not knowynge the ways that
 I haue gone, not feinge the wayes full of stones, I haue
 fallen ere I was ware, I haue fallen in snares: seking no
 10700 guyde, I was entred in to the whirlepoole: and by the
 grossenes of my boldnes, I was lost, and therefore I haue
 deserued pardon. And nowe that I am out of the thornes
 and bushes, thou woldest haue me farther in than euer I
 was: And now that I can not take the purgations, thou
 10705 offrest me newe syropes: I haue watched all nyghte, and
 touched newly the alarme. For the ancient amitie I pray
 the, and coniure the in the name of the goddis, lithe that
 my harte is rebell against thy wyll, which is right doubt-
 ful: causeth me to leaue to desire the thus without doubt.
 10710 And so thētent that thou shuldest not thynk any vnkynd-
 nes in my whyte heares, as I may argue thy face of ydel-
 nes, I wyll that we reckon what we haue wonne, or hope
 to

(*f. 155) *to wyne. Shewe me what cometh of these plesures: the tyme yll spent, good name in scaterynge to pardicion, the patrimonie waisted, the credēce lost, the goddis annoyed, ¹⁰⁷¹⁵ the vertues sclaundred, gette the name of brute beastes, and surnames of shame: sliche ye and we and other be. Thou wrytest in thy letter, howe thou wylte leaue Rome, and come 7 se me in the warres of Dacy. Seing thy foly I laugh, and knowledgyng thy boldnesse, I beleue the. ¹⁰⁷²⁰ And whan I thynke thus, I take the letter agayne out of my bosum, 7 beholde the seale, doutyng if it be thy letter or not. Thou alterest my pulses and felynges of my hart, 7 the colour of my face chaūgeth, imageninge, that either shame surmounteth in the, or els grauitie fayleth in me. ¹⁰⁷²⁵ For sliche lyghtnes shuld not be beleued, but of lyke light perfonen. Thou knowest well, he that doth yll, meryteth peyn soner thā he that doth the infamy. I wold wite: whether thou wylt go? thou hast ben cutte for vertinace, and nowe thou woldest be solde for wyne. Thou began fyrste ¹⁰⁷³⁰ as cherries, and thou wylt be laste as quynces: we haue eten the in bloffomes, and thou wylt be lyke the fruite: the nuttes ar very good, but the shales be to hard, with straw and donge thou arte made rype, and thou art rotten, and if thou be rottē, thou art to be lothed. Thou art not cōtent ¹⁰⁷³⁵ with .xl. yeres, that thou hast, of the whiche .xxv. yeres are passed in tast as wyne, that is to be solde: and as straw berries hyd vnder the leaues that are corrupte and rotten. Art not thou Boemia, that lacketh two tethe, the eyes howed, with white heares, 7 a riueld face, one hande loste ¹⁰⁷⁴⁰ with the gout, 7 a rybbe marred with chylde beryng? whyther wylt thou go? put thy self thā in a barrell, 7 cast the 7 it into the riuer, 7 thou shalt come out al weate. We haue eaten the freshe fysh, 7 nowe thou woldest bring hyther y rusty old salt fishe in stede therof. O Boemia Boemia, now ¹⁰⁷⁴⁵

I

Rr. iii.

(*f. 155 b) *I know there is no trust in youth, nor hope in age. Thou
 complaynest, that thou hafte nothyng. That is an olde
 quarell of the amorous ladies of Rome, whiche takynge
 all, say they haue nothyng: and that ye lacke of credēce,
 10750 ye do fulfyl with money. Therefore beleue me louing frēd,
 that the folyfhe estate, that procedeth of vnlauffull wyn-
 nyng, gyueth small suretie and lesse good name to the per[-]
 sone. I can not tell howe thou hafte spende so moche. For
 if I drewe of my rynges with one hande, thou dyddeft o-
 10755 pen my purse with the other hand. I had greater warres
 with my coffres than, than I haue nowe with myn enne-
 mies. I coude neuer haue iewel, but thou woldest demād
 it: nor I dyd neuer deny the. Nowe at this houre I mer-
 uayle, for in this myn age I fynde great hynderaunce by
 10760 my youthe. Thou complaynest of trauayle and pouertie.
 I am he that hath great nede of that medicine for this o-
 pilation, and a playster for that soore, and to haue some
 colde water for that hote feuer. Art thou not aduised, that
 I banyshed my necessitie in the londe of forgetfulnes, and
 10765 dyd set vp thy wyll for the request of my seruice. In wyn-
 ter I went all bare, and in sommer charged with clothes,
 I went on fote in the myre, and rode in the faire way. whā
 I was heuy, I laughed, and whan I was mery I wept.
 For drede I drewe forthe my strengthes, and out of my
 10770 strengthes cowardyle. The nyghtes to fygh, 7 on the day
 to wayte where thou wentest by. Whan thou haddist nede
 of any thyng, I was fayne to robbe my father for it. Tel
 me Boemia, with whom fulfilledst thou thyn open folies,
 but with the yll orders that I putte my selfe to in secrete?
 10775 wote ye what me semith by you amorous ladies of Rome?
 ye are in the courte as the lyttell moughtes eatynge olde
 clothes, 7 a pastime for light folkes, treforers of foles, 7 se[-]
 pulchres of vices. This y semeth me is, y if in thy youth
 euery

(*f. 156) *euery mā gaue to the, bicaufe thou fhuldest giue the to eue[-]
 ry mā: now thou giuest thy self to euery mā, bycaufe euery ¹⁰⁷⁸⁰
 mā fhuld giue them to the. Thou tellest me, that thou hast
 ii. fons, 7 lackest helpe for them. Yeld gracis to the goddis
 of the pitie that they haue vfed with the: they haue giuen
 to .xv. children of Fabricio my neyghbour but one father,
 7 to two of thy children onely, they haue giuen .l. fathers. ¹⁰⁷⁸⁵
 Therefore deuyde them amonge theyr fathers, and euerye
 mā shal not haue one fynger. Lucia thy doughter indede,
 7 myn by suspect, remembre ý I haue done for her more in
 marienge of her, thā thou didst in her procreation. For to
 the getting of her thou dydst call dyuers, 7 to mary her I ¹⁰⁷⁹⁰
 dyd it alone. I wryte to the but lyttel, to the respect of that
 I wold write. Butrio Cornelio hath spoken moch on thy
 parte, he hym selfe shall shewe the as moche of my parte.
 It is longe ago sith I knewe thyn impacience. I knowe
 wel thou wilt sende me an other letter more malicious. I ¹⁰⁷⁹⁵
 pray the sith I write to the secretly, defame me nat opely.
 And whā thou redeest this letter, remembre what occasiōs
 thou giuest me to write, 7 though ý we be not frendis, yet
 wil I not leue to send the siluer. I send the a gowne: 7 the
 goddis be with ý, 7 bryng me out of this warre with pece. ¹⁰⁸⁰⁰
 Marke pretour in Dacye to his auncient louer Boemia.

¶ The answere to the emperours letter sent by
 Boemia. The .xvi. letter.

Boemia thyn ancient louer, to the Marc of
 moūt Celio her mortal enemy, I desire vē-
 geance of thy person, 7 il fortune for al thy
 life, I haue receiued thy letter, 7 therby p- ¹⁰⁸⁰⁵
 ceiue thy dānable entrailes 7 thy cruel ma[-]
 lices. Suche yll persons as thou art hath
 this priuilege, ý sith one doth suffre your vilanies ī secret,
 ye wyll

(*f. 156^b) *ye wyll hurte them openly, but thou shalte not do so with
 10810 me Marc: for though I be not trefouresse of thy trefours,
 yet at leaste I am trefouresse of thyn ylnesse: and where
 as I can not reuenge me with my person, I shall labour
 to do it with my tongue. And thynke that though we wo-
 men be weake, and our bodies lone ouercome, yet wyte it
 10815 for certayne, that our hartes ar neuer vanquysht. Thou
 sayest, that scapyng fro a battayle thou dydest receyue
 my letter, wherof thou were loore abashed: It is a verye
 common thyng to them that be weke and flacke, to speke
 of loue, wanton fooles to treat of bookes, and to cowar-
 10820 des to babble of armes: I say it, bycause the answeringe
 to a letter was not of necessitie to reherse to a woman as
 I am, whither [sic] it were before the battayle or after. I know
 well, thou art scaped fro it, for thou were not the first that
 fought, nor the last that fledde. Whan thou were yong, I
 10825 neuer sawe the go to the warre, that euer I dredde or had
 suspecte of thy lyfe: for knowynge thy cowardyse, I ne-
 uer toke care for thyn absence, for therin I was most sure
 of thy persone. Than Marc tell me now, what thou dost
 in thyn age. I thynke thou bearest thy spere not for to iust
 10830 in the warre, but for to leane on whan the goute greueth
 the. Thy helmette I deme thou bearest with the to drinke
 with in tauernes, and not to defende the fro the strokes of
 swerdes, for I sawe the neuer stryke man with thy swerd,
 but I haue knowen the sle a .M. women with thy tonge.
 10835 O malicious and vnhappy Marc, if thou were as valy-
 aunt as thou arte malicious, thou shuldest be as greatly
 dred of the barbarike nations, as thou arte in hatred, as
 reason is, with the matrones of Rome. Tell me what the
 lyfte, at the least thou canst not denye, but that thou hast
 10840 ben a weake and flacke louer, so thou arte nowe a weake
 and flacke cowarde knyght, an vnknown frende, auari-
 cious

(*f. 157) *cious, infamed, malycious, cruel, ennemy to euery man,
 and frende to no bodye. And we that haue knowen the
 yong strong and lusty, cōdemne the for an olde fole. Thou
 sayest, that takyng my lettre in to thy handes, thy herte xo845
 toke the poyson of malyce. I beleue it well without swe-
 ryng, for any thyng beyng malicious forthwith fyndeth
 lodgyng ī thy hous. Beastes that be corrupt, lyghtly take
 the poyson, that they that ben of good complexyon caste a-
 way. Of one thyng I am in certayne, thou shalt not dye of xo850
 poyson. For one venyme oftentimes dystroyeth an other
 venym. O Malycious Marc, yf all they in Rome knewe
 the, as well as sorowfull Boemya dooth, they shuld soone
 se what difference were betwene the wordes that thou spe-
 kest, and the intencion of thy hert. And if by the wrytinges xo855
 that thou makest, thou meritest to haue the name of a phi-
 losopher, by the ylnes that thou doest inuente, thou doste
 merite to haue the name of a tyraunt. Thou sayest, thou
 lawest neuer certytude in the loue of a woman, nor ende
 of her hate. I haue great glorie, that other ladies belyde xo860
 me haue knowlege of thy small wysedome. A se [Ase?] Marc, I
 wyll not mocke the, thou arte suche one, as neuer deser-
 ued that one shulde begynne to loue the, nor leaue to hate
 the. Wylt thou haue certitude in loue, and thou vnfayth-
 full of thy seruice? Wylt thou serue with mockeries, and xo865
 woldest be loued truely? Wylte thou enioye the persone
 without spendyng of any of thy goodes? Wylt thou haue
 no complayntes of the, and thou not ceassynge thy maly-
 ces? Thou sayest thou knowest the ylnes of women. I wyl
 thou know, we be not so folysh as thou thinkest, nor thou xo870
 so wyse as thou wenest, to prayse thy selfe: yet hytherto
 hath ben sene mo men to folowe the appetyte of women,
 than there hath ben women folowynge the wyll of men.
 In none of bothe is great trust; and yet we bothe practise
 that

Sf

(*f. 157^b) 10875 *that one man hath his harte so myghty to be more wyfer
 than thre wyfe women, and one woman thynketh her so
 stronge to put vnder her fete and ouercome .iii. C. suche
 as be lyght. Thou sayest, thou arte abashed of my lyght-
 nes, to leaue Rome, to go to the in the warres. Great is
 10880 the loue of the coūtrei, fith that many leaue dyuers wel-
 thes that they haue in strange landes, and lyue straitly,
 for to lyue in their owne lande: but greater is my loue,
 lyth that I wolde leaue Rome with al the pleasures to go
 and serche for the in straunge landes amonge the cruelle
 10885 battayles. O malicious Marke, O straunge louter: if I
 leaue Rome, it were to go and seke my hert beinge in the
 battayles with the. And certaynly dyuers tymes whanne
 I doo thinke on thyne absence, I sworne and sorowe as
 my hart were not with me, and yet I fynde no perfyte re-
 10890 medy. I thinke not our loue is lyke these bestes that ioy-
 eth of their pleasures, without to wylle, and desyre their
 wylles. I sweare to the by the goddesse Vesta, and by the
 mother Berecynthia, that thou owest me more for one day
 of loue, that I haue had to the, than for the seruices that
 10895 I haue done to the in .xxii. yeres. Behold vnhappy Marc,
 howe moche in thy prefence I haue alwayes regarded the,
 and in thyn absence I haue alwayes thought on the, and
 slepyng I haue alwayes dreamed of the, I haue wepte
 for thy trauayle, and laughed at thy pleasure, and finally
 10900 all my welth I haue wyshed the, and al thyn ylls I haue
 wyshed me. I ensure the one thyng, that as nowe I fele
 not so moche thy persecution, that thou doest to me, as I
 do the mysknowlege that thou makest to me. It is a gret
 sorowe for an auaritious man to se his goodes losse: but
 10905 without comparison it is ferre greater for the louter to se
 his loue yll bestowed: It is a hurt that is alwaye sore, 7 a
 peyn alway painful, a sorow alway sorowful, 7 it is a deth
 that

(*f. 158) *that neuer endeth. O ye men, if ye knew with what loue women loueth you in perfytenes whan they loue, 7 with what hert they hate whan they are set to hate: I swere to 10910 you, ye wold neuer cōpany with thē in loue: or if ye do loue them, neuer to leue thē for feare of theyr hate, 7 how there is neuer gret hate, but where as moch loue was fyrst. But thou shalt neuer be gretly hatid, for thou were neuer truly loued of ladies. The sorowful Boemia hath loued ȳ .xxii. 10915 yere of her lyfe, 7 now she only hateth ȳ tyl after her deth. Thou sayest, I may be eaten for veriuyce, and yet I wold be folde for wyne. I knowe wel I haue erred, as one that hath ben yonge and lyght, and whan I perceyued that I had lost my way, and that my myfaduventure can fynde no 10920 way nor remedy: It is the greattest losse of al losses, whā there is no remydy. I haue erred lyke a feble and a weake woman, but thou hast erred as a stronge man: I haue erred by symple ygnorance, but thou haste erred of a prepen[-]sed and wyfull malyce: I haue erred, not knowyng that 10925 I shuld haue erred, but thou knewest what thou dyddest: I haue trusted as faythfull to thy wordes, lyke a gentyll man, and thou haste begyled me with a thoulande lesyn- ges as a lyer. Telle me, dyddest thou not seke occasion to comme into my mothers house Getulia, to allure me her 10930 doughter Boemya to thy mynde? Dyddest not thou promyse my father to teache me to rede in one yere? and thou taughtest me to rede the boke of Ouidius, of the arte of loue? Dyddest thou not sweare to be my husbande, and than withdrewest thy hande as a false aduoultrer? Doest 10935 thou not knowe, that thou neuer foundest vilanye in my personne, nor I neuer founde trouthe in thy mouthe? At leest thou canst not deny, but thou hast offended the goddis, and arte infamed of men, 7 odious to the Romainys, sclaudred of good folkes, and example to the yll folkes, 10940 and

Sf. ii.

(*f. 158^b, *and finally a traytour to my father and mother, a breker
 of thy faythe, and to me sorowfulle Boemia an vnkynde
 loue. O malicious Marc, haste thou not cutte me in le-
 ues, offrynge to my father to kepe his vynes surely? Ill
 10945 may the chekyn truste the kyte, or the lambes the wolues:
 7 worfe the to bring vp the daughters of thē that be good.
 O curfed Marke, o [sic] damageable keper of vines hath the
 matrones of Rome founde the, in kepyng their dough-
 ters: I swere, that there was neyther grape nor clufter,
 10950 but it was eaten or cut by the. Thou dydst eate me beinge
 grene, I promyse the it hath sette thy tethe on an yl edge.
 Thou sayest, I ryped by power of heate and strawe. It
 displeaseth me not so moche, that thou sayest, as thou gy-
 uest me occasion to say to the. Thy shame is so shamefull,
 10955 and thy malyce so vnshamefast, that I can not answere
 the to the pourpose, without hurtyng or touchyng the
 quycke. I wolde wyte of the, whan thou maryedst Fau-
 styn, whether thou fondest her grene or rype? Thou kno-
 west well, and lykewise so do I, that other beside the, gau[-]
 10960 ged the vessel, and thou drankest the lees: other gathered
 the grapes, and thou gleyned the vyne: other dyd eate the
 grapes, and thou haddest the huskes. O wycked Marc,
 beholde thyn euylles, and howe the goddis haue gyuen
 the iuste chaastyfement, that thou being yonge merited not
 10965 to be defyred of thy louers, nor that thy wyues kepe feith
 to the in thyne age. For to be aduenged of thy persone, I
 nede none other thyng, but to se the married to Faustine.
 By the mother Berecynthia I promyse the, y if thy small
 wyfedome myght atteyne to knowe entierly, what is sayd
 10970 of her and the in Rome, surely thou woldest wepe nyghte
 and day for the lyfe of Faustyn, and not leue the thought-
 full Boemia. O Marc, lyttell thought is taken for the, 7
 howe fer is our vnderstōdyng vncoupled fro thy thought-
 tes:

(*f. 159) *tes: bycause that with thy great doctrine by day tyme thy
 houle is made a schole of philofophers, and the wanton- 10975
 nesse of thy wyfe Faustyne by nyght, maketh it a bordell
 of ruffiens. It is a iuste iugement of the goddis, that sith
 thyn onely malyce suffiseth to poyson many that be good,
 that one alone may suffice to vnbend and lose thy renome.
 One difference there is betwene the and me, and thy wyfe 10980
 Faustyne: for my dedes are but in suspect, and yours are
 openly knowen in dede: myn are secrete, and yours are e-
 uident: I haue stōbled, but ye haue fallen: Of one thing
 alone I haue merited to be chastised, but ye haue deserued
 no forgyuenes: My dishonour is deed with the faut, and 10985
 is buried with myn amendmēt, but your infamie is borne
 with your desyres, and is brought vp with your wylles,
 and lyueth styll with your werkes: and finally therfore your
 infamie shall neuer dye, for you lyued neuer well. O ma-
 licious Marcus, with all that thou knowest, wotest thou 10990
 not, that for losynge of a good name, an yll fame is reco-
 uered: and in the ende of a good lyfe, begynneth a good
 faame [sic]? Thou ceassest not to saye ylle onely by suspicion,
 the whiche thy false iugementes shewe the, and yet thou
 woldest we shulde not speake that we se with our eyes. Of 10995
 one thyng be thou sure, that neyther of the, nor of thy
 wyfe Faustine there is no false wytnesse: for the trouth is
 so euident, that there nedeth not to inuent any lies. Thou
 sayst, that it is an old quarel of amorous ladies of Rome,
 that in takinge fro many we are the poorest of all other, 11000
 bycause we fayle in credence, we are honoured for syluer.
 It is of certayntie, that we mystrust the hollie bycause of
 his prickes, the acornes, for his huskes, the roses amōge
 nettyls, and thy mouth for thy malyce. I haue curiously
 taken hede that thou neuer saydest well by women, nor I 11005
 neuer coude fynde, that any wolde the good. What gret-
 ter

Sf. iii.


(*f. 159b) *ter correction shuld I haue of thy wyckednes, or more ven[-]
 geance for myn iniuries, but to be certayn, that all the lo-
 uyngē ladies of Rome are sory of thy lyfe, and wolde be
 11010 glad of thy dethe. The lyfe of that man is wycked, that
 many bewayle, and in whose dethe euery body reioyseth.
 It is the propertie of poore vnkynde persons as thou art,
 to forgette the great goodnesse done to them, and to be so-
 ry for the lyttell that they gyue. As moche as noble hartis
 11015 glorifye them in gyuyngē to other, so moche are they alha[-]
 med to receyue seruices vnrewarded. For in giuingē they
 make them selfe lordes, and in receyuyng they are as sla-
 ues. I wolde wyte what thou haste gyuen me, or what
 thou haste receyued of me? I haue aduentured my good
 11020 name, and giuen the possession of my personne: I haue
 made the lorde and mayster of al my goodes: I haue ba-
 nyshed my selfe out of my countrey, and putte my selfe in
 peryll only for thy sake, and in recompence of al this, thou
 reprocheest me now of miserie. Thou neuer gauest me any
 11025 thing with thy good wyl, nor I neuer receyued it willing-
 ly, nor it dyd me neuer profyt. Al thinges recouer a name,
 not for the common werke that we see, but for the secrete
 intention with whiche we worke. And thou vnhappy
 man desiredst me, not to enioy my persone, but rather to
 11030 haue my money. We ought not to cal the a clere louer, but
 a thefe, 7 a wyly see rouer. I had a lytel ryngē of the, whi-
 che I am determyned to caste into the ryuer, and the clo-
 thyngē that I had of the I haue brent in the fire. And yf
 that my body were any thyng amēded with the bread that
 11035 I haue eaten of thyn, I wold cutte my fleshe, and let out
 the blode without any feare. O cursed Marke, thy darke
 malyce wolde not suffre the clerely to vnderstande my let-
 ter: for I entended not to aske moneye, to releue my po-
 uertie and solytarynesse, but reknowlegynge and than-
 kyngē

(*f. 160) *kynges to fatisfie my wyllunge herte. The vayne and co- 11040
 uetous menne as thou arte thy felfe, are pleased with gif-
 tes, but the hartes incarnate in loue are lyttell fatisfied
 with fyluer. For loue onely is payed with loue agayne.
 The manne that loueth not as a manne of realone, but
 as a brute beaste, and the woman that loueth not but for 11045
 the interest of her person: fuche ought not to be trusted in
 their wordes, nor their perfones defyred. For the loue of
 her endeth, whan the goodes fayle: and the loue of hym,
 whan her beautie fayleth. If thy loue proceded onely of
 the beautie of my face, and my loue only for the money of 11050
 thy pours: it were not ryghte, that we were called wyfe
 louers but rather very nyce perfones. O wycked Marke,
 I neuer loued the for thy goodes, though thou louedst me
 for my beautie: with all my hart I loued the than, 7 with
 all my hart I hate the now. Thou sayst, the goddes haue 11055
 fhewed me great pitie, to gyue me fewe chyldren, and to
 them many fathers. The greattest malice in women is to
 be vnfhamefaste, and the moſte vilanie in men is to be yll
 layers. Dyuers thinges ought to be fuffred for the fragili-
 te of women, whiche are not permytted in the wyſedom of 11060
 men. I ſay this bycauſe I neuer ſawe temperaunce in the
 for to couer thyn owne malyces, nor wyſedome to excuſe
 the debilities of other. Thou ſayeſt, that my ſonnes haue
 dyuers fathers. I ſwere vnto the, that though thou dye,
 the chylderne of Fauſtyne ſhall not be fatherles. And of 11065
 trouthe yf the goddis (as thou ſayeſt) haue be pytiefull to
 my chyldren, no leſſe arte thou to ſtraunge chyldren. For
 Fauſtin kepeth the but to excuſe her blame, 7 to be tutour
 of her chyldren. O curſed Marc, thou mayſt wel enioy and
 take no thoughte, for thyne owne chylderne haue no nede 11070
 to be married. For one thyng we are bounde, that is for
 the example the whiche thou doſte gyue of thy paciencce:
 For

(*f. 160^b) *For lithe thou suffrest Fauptyne in so many infamies, it is no great nede that we suffre any secretes in the. I say no
 11075 more at this tyme, makyng an ende of my letter, desyryng the ende of thy persone.

¶ A letter sent by Marcus the emperour to Matrine
 a yonge mayden of Rome, of whom he was
 enamoured, seinge her at a wyndowe.

¶ The .xvii. letter.

11080  Arke the emperour, the very desirous, to the Matrine greatly desyred. I wote not if by good aduenture of myn yll aduenture or by yl aduenture of my good aduenture, I dyd see the of late at a wyndowe, where as thou heldest thyn armes as close as myn eien were spred abroad, that curled be they for euer. For in beholdyng thy face my
 11085 hart forthewith abode with the as prysoner. The begynninge of thy knowledge is the ende of my reason, and felynge of flyght. Of one trauayle cometh infinite trauayles to men, I say it, if I had not ben ydel, I had not gone oute of my house, and yf that I had not gone out of my
 11090 howse, I hadde not gone oute in to the stretes, and if I had not passid through the strete, I had not sene the at thy wyndowe: and if I hadde not sene the at thy wyndowe, I had not desyred thy persone: and not desiring thy person, I had not put thy name in so great peryll, nor my lyfe in
 11095 trauayle, nor had giuen none occasion in al Rome to speke of vs. Of a trouth lady Matrine in this case I condemne my selfe, syth I wold beholde the. And thou woldest be saluted, sith thou desiredst to be sene. And syth thou were set as a whyte marke, it was no great meruayle that I shot
 with

(*f. 161) *with the arowes of myn eies at the butte of thy beautie, 11100
 with rolynge eies, with browes bent, wel coloured face,
 incarnate tethe, ruddy lyppes, crispe heares, handes set
 with rynges, clothed with a. M. maner of clothynges,
 bearynge purses full of swete smelles, and bracelettes ful
 of knackes, with perles and stones at the eares. Tell me 11105
 what becometh of a woman with these thynges, that wyl
 shewe her selfe at a wyndowe? The mooste cause is, that
 I can esteeme or thynke therin, that lythe ye do shew your
 bodies openly to vs at the eie, that your wylle is, that we
 shulde knowe your desires secretly. And if it be so, as I 11110
 afferme, that it is so, it semeth me madame Matrine, thou
 shuldest desire hym that desireth the, to informe hym that
 sercheth the, to answer hym that calleth the, 7 fele that he
 feleth, intende to hym that intendeth to the: and lythe I
 vnderstande the, vnderstande me, and vnderstande lythe 11115
 thou doest not vnderstande. I am aduyfed as I went by
 the strete Falaria to se theues putte to Iustice, myne eyen
 lawe the at a wyndowe, on whome dependeth all my de-
 syres. Thou doest more Iustyce to me, than I do to the the-
 ues, for I beinge at Iustice, thou hast iusticied the Ju- 11120
 styce, 7 none dare payne the. The gybet is not so cruell to
 them that neuer knew but yl doing, as thou art to me that
 neuer thought, but howe I myghte do the seruice. The
 theues suffre but one dethe, and thou makest me to suffre
 a. M. in a daye: In one houre the theues liues are ended, 11125
 and I dye euery mynute: I drawe towarde deth wrong-
 fully, and they suffre for their fautes: I suffre an innocēt,
 they openly and I in secrete. What shall I saye more to
 the? of trouthe they wepe watry droppes with their eies,
 bycause they dye, and I wepe teares of bloud in my hart, 11130
 bycause I lyue. This is the difference, their tourmentes
 spredeth abroad through al their bodies, and I kepe myn
 togyder

Tt

¶ *f. 161 b) *to gether in my herte. O cruelle Matrine, I can not telle
 what Iustyce it is, to put men to deth that steale money, 7
 11135 suffre women lyue that robbe mennes hertes: If theyr
 eares be cut of, that pyke mennes purces, why are womē
 than pardoned, that robbe mennes inwarde hertes 7 en-
 trayles? By thy noblenes I pray the, and by the goddesse
 Uenus I coniure the, eyther answere to my desyre, or els
 11140 restore my herte agayn, whiche thou halste robbed fro me.
 I wolde thou kneweste the clere fayth of my herte, rather
 than this letter writen with my hand. If myne aduenture
 were soo good, as to speake with the, 7 that thy loue were
 not afhamed therof, I wolde hope with the syght 7 spech
 11145 to wyne that whiche I am in suspect to lese by my letter.
 The reason is, bycause thou hereft my ylle and rude rea-
 sons redynge my letter. And if thou sawest me thou shul-
 dest se the cruell teares that I offre to the by my lyfe. I
 wolde my mouth coude publyshe myne enraged euylles,
 11150 as my herte feleth, then I swere to the lady Matrine, that
 my greuous Dolor shulde awake thy small thought. And
 as thy beautie 7 mine affection hath made me thyn owne,
 the knowelege of my passion shuld make the myne. I de-
 syre that thou shuldest regarde the begynnyng, and ther-
 11155 with regarde the ende. Certaynly the same day that thou
 enprysonedst my herte at thy wyndowe, in the doungeon
 of my desyres, I had no lesse weykenesse to be euercome,
 thanne thou haddeste force to constrayne me. And more
 greater is thy power to put thy selfe from me, thanne my
 11160 reason is to put me fro the. I axe noo mercye of the, but
 that we myghte declare oure wylles together. But in
 this case what wylte thou that I shulde say, but that thou
 hast so moche power ouer me, and I so lytel of my liberte,
 that wyll I nyll I my herte can not be but thyne: And hit
 11165 beyng thyne, thou mayste and wylt not declare thy selfe
 to

*f. 162) *to be myn. And fith it may nat be, but that my life must be condemned in thy seruyce, be thou as sure of my fayth as I am douteful of thy hope: For I shall haue a greater welthe to be losse for thy sake, thanne to wyne any other thyng. I wyll say no more atte this tyme, but that thou accompte my perdition and dethe, and drawe the lyfe of my teares in to open ioye: And by cause that I holde my fayth in thy fayth, and wyll neuer despayre in thy hope, I sende to the .x. lytell rynges of gold, with .x. stones of Alexandry: And I coniure the by the mortall goddes, that whanne thou doest put theym on thy fynghres, to sette me in thy herte and entrayles. Marcus amorous wrote this with his owne hande.

¶ An other letter sente by Marc the emperoure
to the layd gentylwoman Matryne.
The .xviii. letter.

MArke habytaunt atte Rome, to the Matryne his ryghte swete enemy. I call the swete, for it is Iust [sic] that I dye for the. And I call the enemy, bycause thou makest not an ende to flee me. I can not tel wherin it is, but sythe the feast of Jano hytherto, I haue wryten thre letters to the: And to the answer of them I wolde that I had seen two letters from the, if it were thy pleasure. If that I serue the, thou woldest that I shuld not serue: if I speke, thou wylt not speke to me: if I loke at the, thou wylt not beholde me: if I call the, thou wylt not answer: if I visite y, thou wylt not see me, if I write to the, thou wilt giue me none answer, And worst of al, yf other do shewe the of my dolours, thou makest but a mocke therof. And if I had as moch knowlege, where

T. [sic] ii.

(*f. 162b) *where to complayne to the, as thou hast power to remedy
 11195 the playntyfe, my wyfedome shulde no lesse be prayfed a-
 monge wyfe men, than thy beautie is amonge fooles. I
 pray the hartely regarde not the contrarieties of my rea-
 sons, but regarde the faythe of my wepynges, the whiche
 in wytnesse of my peynes I do gyue vnto the. I wote not
 11200 what good may come to the of my harmes: nor what wyn[-]
 nyng of my losse thou shuldest hope to gette: nor what
 suretie of my perylle thou shulde attayne vnto: nor what
 pleasure of my displeasure thou mayst haue. I haue had
 aunswere of my messanger, that without redyng of my
 11205 letters, thou hast with thy handes toren them all to pie-
 ces. It ought to suffice the to thynke, that my person were
 hewen in quarters, yet I wolde thou haddest redde these
 small lynes lady Matrine: for by them thou shuldest haue
 sene, howe my thoughtes were troubled. ye women are so
 11210 extreme that for faut of one man, a womā wyll complayn
 of all other men in generall, so that ye be cruel for one par[-]
 ticular cause. Openly ye pardone all mens lyues, and in
 secrete ye procure euery mans dethe. I esteeme it nothyng
 dame Matrine that thou haste done: but I lament me of
 11215 that thou demaundedst Ualerius thy neyghbour to saye
 to me. One thyng I wolde thou haddest in memorie and
 not forgot, and that is, lithe that my lybertie is so small,
 and thy power so great, bycause I beinge all holly myne
 owne, I am tourned to be thyn, that thou shuldest thinke,
 11220 that whan thou woldest iniurie me, thou shuldest do most
 iniurie to thy selfe, sythe that by the I dye, as thou by me
 doste lyue. In this yll purpose perseuer not, for thou dost
 aduenture the lyfe of vs bothe. Thou damnest thy condi-
 tion, and distroyest my helth, and finally thou must come
 11225 to the medicine. Forgiue me dame Matrine, if I say any
 malyce to the, that is, I knowe that ye women desyre one
 thyng,

(*f. 163) *thyngge, and kepe vs in drede, that it shoulde not come by her thought. Thou were wont to be wel condicioned, and at least though thou doest not put it in vre [sic], yet thou haste the fame therof: and an ancient fame ought not to be left ¹¹²³⁰ for a newe vnkyndnes. Thou knowest wel, what contrarynesse dothe vngentylnesse to the vertues in vertuous houses, and thou canst not be called vertuous, but if thou be gentyll and courteyle. There is no gretter vnkyndnes, than to loue her that loueth not me: That I visite the, and ¹¹²³⁵ thou visitest not me, that I speake to the, 7 thou speakest not to me is nothyngge, that I knowlege the, 7 thou wylt not know me is nothyng, though I wepe and thou laugh is nothyngge, though I demaunde, and thou denyest is nothyngge, though thou owe me, and neuer paye, yet it is ¹¹²⁴⁰ nothyngge: but where as I loue the and thou not me is a great thyngge: that thyng that can not be diffimuled with the eies, nor the hart suffre all the vyces amonge mortall creatures, it is reason that they be forgyuen, bycause they are commytted by nature, saue onely the vnlouynge of ¹¹²⁴⁵ women, and the vnkyndnesse of men, whiche are vyces commytted of malyce. And dyuers seruices by me done to the, and moche more that I haue to do hereafter, thou Matryne mayste all onely pay me with one thyng. I pray the refuse not to gyue me remedy, sythe I haue not offred ¹¹²⁵⁰ me in the peryll. If thou say, that Patroclus thy spouse hath the propertie ouer the, yet at leaste receyue me to the profe, and I shall pretende possession of the. And in this wise in the vayneglorie to be thyn, shal couer the damage not to be myn. Thou makest me to meruayle sore, howe for ¹¹²⁵⁵ so small a mercy and rewarde thou can suffre suche importunitie so longe. For certayne many thinges we grant to an importunate manne, the whiche are not graunted to a temperate man. If thou hopest to ouercome me Matryne,

Tt. iii.

(*f. 163 b) 11260 *tryne, I holde my selfe vanquysshed, if thou wylte lose
me, I holde me for losse, if thou wyl fle me, I yeld my self
as deade. For by the gesture that I make afore thy gate,
and the syghes that I make in myn owne hous, are gret-
ly myne to resyste, and the greuous assault of the, be edy-
11265 fices more to sommon dethe, than to defende the [lyfe]: yf
thou wylt that I scape this daunger, deny me not the re-
medy, bycause it shalbe a gretter vyce in the to fle me, thā
vilany to gyue me remedy. And it were no iuste thyng for
so small a pryce to lose the fayth of so gret seruyce. I wote
11270 not what to do, to make the my debtour, and thou to paye
me. And yet worst of al, I wote not what to do, nor what
to thinke nor to say, nor to whom to determine me, bicause
I can not assure any profyte in me, but to be certayne in
thy seruices. And bicause thou doste truste hym that hath
11275 done this message, by hym I do send this open letter, and
my secrete aunswere. I do sende the a iewel of perles, and
a besant of golde. To the goddis I do cōmende the. And
I require the for to receyue it with as good a wylle as I
do present it vnto the. Marc the oratour to the right hono[-]
11280 rable Matryne.

¶ A letter sent by Marc the emperour to Ly-
bia a fayre lady Romaine.

¶ The .xix. letter.



11285 Marke full of sorowe and penyfenes to the
Lybia takynge but lyttell thought or care:
If thy small thought passed any thyng on
me, and also yf my troubles and dolours
were lodged and dydde reste in the, than
thou shuldest perceyue and se howe smalle
the quarell were, the whiche I make to the, in respecte of
the

(*f. 164) *the tourment that I doo fuffre, yf the blafinge flames if-
fued out, as the fyred brondes doo brenne me within, the
fmoke wolde reache to the heuens, and make ymbres of 11290
the erthe: yf thou doeft well remembre the fyrft tyme that
I fawe the in the temple of the virgins veftales, thou be-
yngre there prayed to the goddis for thy felfe, and I on my
knees prayed the for my felfe. I knowe well thou offredft
hony and oyle to the goddis, and I offred to the foore we- 11295
pynges and fyghes. It is a iufte thyngre to gyue more to
hym that offreth his inwarde entrayles, than to hym that
draweth money out of his purfe to offre. I haue determi-
ned, and difpofed me, to write to the this letter, that thou
fhuldeft fe how thou arte ferued with the arowes of myne 11300
eies, that were fhotte at the whyte of thy feruyces. Alas,
howe forowful am I to thynke, leaft the calme tyme now,
dothe threaten me with the tempeft to come. I wyl fay, that
difloue in the, caufeth the hope doubtfull in me. Beholde
what myfaduenture, I had lofte a letter, and I retour- 11305
ned to the temple to feke for it, but I had nere loft my felf,
in going thyther fo often, cōfydering my fmal merite. I fe
well, that myn eies the ladders of my hope, are fet on foo
hye a walle, that no leffe is the doubte of my fal, than the
daunger of the clymmynge vp. Thou bowynge downe 11310
the leaues of thy high merytes, hafte broughte me to the
poynt of continuall feruice. Lette me haue the fruite, and
giue the leaues to whome thou wylte: But the immortalle
goddis, I haue great meruayle, by caufe [byc. ?] I thought that
in the temple of the virgins Ueftales, no manne fhoulde 11315
haue hadde temptations. But as nowe I do fynde by ex-
perience, that the woman is more lyberall and fooner o-
uercome, that is faft and ftraytly kept and watched than
other. All the corporalle damages are fyrfte harde of, er
they be knowen, and knowen er fene, and fene er they be 11320
felte,

(*f. 164^b) *felte, and felte er they be tasted, yet it is not so in loue. For
 firste they fele the stroke therof, er they se the way howe it
 cometh. The lyghtnyng is not so sodeyne, but it is seene
 afore the thonder clappe, nor the wal falleth not so sodein-
 11325 ly, but fyrste some stones do breke asonder, nor the colde
 cometh not so faste on, but some smal sheueringes cometh
 before: but all onely loue is not felt tyll it be setled in the
 entrayles. Let euery man knowe it that knowe it not, and
 thou lady Libie if thou wyll knowe: Loue slepeth whan
 11330 we wake, and waketh whan we slepe, and laugheth whan
 we wepe, and wepeth whan we laugh: It assureth in ta-
 kyng, and taketh in assuringe: And speket whan we be
 styll, and is styll whan we speke: And finally it is of that
 condicion, that for to gyue vs that we desyre, hit causeth
 11335 vs to lyue in payne. I swere to the, whan my wyl became
 thy seruante, and thy beautie caused that thou were my
 lady, whan I was in the temple and retorne agayne thi-
 ther, not desyryng the, thou beheldest me, and I as vn-
 happy loked on the. But O. what a thought came to me
 11340 that my herte beyng hole, thou hast deuyded, beinge in
 helth thou hast hurte, beinge aliue thou hast slayne, be-
 yng myn thou hast stollen it, and that worste of al is, not
 helpyng to my lyfe, thou consentest that loue assaile me
 to the deth. Many tymes ladye Libya confyderyng that
 11345 al my thoughtes ben hyghe and my fortune lowe, I wold
 haue separte my selfe fro the, But confyderyng that my
 trauayles are well applyed in thy seruyces, I say though
 I myghte I wille not be separte fro the. I will not denie
 one thinge, and that is, that cursed loue taketh away the
 11350 taste of al thinges, and yet therby alonely it gyueth vs ap-
 petite, the whiche giueth vs moche yll prouffite. This is
 the profe of him that loueth hertily. For one disfaour of
 them that is beloued, is more than all the faoure of this
 lyte

(*f. 165) *lyfe. I thinke lady Libia thou art gretly abashed to se me
 outwarde as a philosopher, and to knowe me inwarde a 11355
 secrete louer. I praye the Lybia discouer me not: For yf
 that the goddis gyue me longe lyfe, I am mynded for to
 amende. And thoughe I be atte this houre but a yonge
 foole in the arte of loue, whan I am olde I shall be wise:
 the goddis knowe what I desire, and the force that I do 11360
 enforce me to: but as the fleshe is weake and the hart ten-
 dre, and hath many occasions and fewe vertues, and the
 worlde subtyll, and the people malicious, I passe this be-
 gynnynge and spring of floures, with hope that in haruest
 I shall haue some fruite. Dame Lybia doest thou thinke, 11365
 that philosophers though they were neuer so sage, be not
 stricken with the cruelties of loue? and that vnder theyr
 cours clothes their fleshe is not smoth? Certaynly amonge
 the hard bones soft fleshe is bredde, vnder the sharpe hus-
 kes the cheltnutte is nourished. I saye that vnder cours 11370
 apparell, is true and perfyte loue. I deny not but that our
 flacke nature resysteth not with vertues, nor I deny not,
 but there be yonge wāton desyres, not repressed with ver-
 tuous purposes: I deny not, but that the bytte of youthe
 is not refreyned with the brydell of reason: I denye not, 11375
 but that that the fleshe procureth, is dyuers tymes with-
 stande by wysedome. And also I knowlege well, that he
 that is not amorous, is a foole. And thou knowest, that
 thoughe we be wyse, we leaue not therefore to be men. All
 that euer we lerne in all our lyues, suffiseth not to knowe 11380
 howe to rule the fleshe one houre. To wyse men in this
 case hath fallen many errours: there be many maysters
 in vertues, and many moo hath bene, and yet they haue
 ben ouercome with vices, wherfore than doest thou mer-
 uayle of me alone? I confesse of trouthe, that I had ne- 11385
 uer myne vnderstondynge so clere, as whan Cupyde fan-
 ned

Uv

(*f. 165^b) *ned wynd on me with his winges. There was neuer none
vnto my tyme, that euer was noted wyfe, but first he was
a prifoner 7 bound with the loue of Cupyde. Gratian was
11390 amorous on Tamyr: Solon Salaming gyuer of the la-
wes, was amorous of Greycane: Pytacus Mitelenus
lefte his owne wyfe, and was enamoured of a bondwomā,
that he broughte fro the warres. Cleobolus the curyan,
whan he was ful .xxiiii.[sic] yere olde, and had red philosophy
11395 xlv. yere, fcalynge the houle of his neyghbour, fel of the
ladder, and dyed: Periander prince of Acaye, and a great
philosopher of Grece, at y prayer of one of his louers flew
his wyfe: Anacharces a philosopher a Scitean of his fa-
ther fyde, and a greke of his mother fyde, was fo enamo-
11400 red of a woman of Thebes, that he taught her al his cou-
nynge, and whan he was fycke in his bedde, fhe redde in
the fchole for hym: Epimenides of Crete, that flepte .xv.
yeres without waking, and though he was .x. yere a gret
worfhypper of the goddis, yet he was banyfbed from A-
11405 thenes for the loue of women: Archyta Tarentyn, may-
fter of Plato, and difciple of Pythagoras, occupied his
mynde more to inuent the kyndes of loue, than his forces
in doctrines of vertues: Gorgio Cleontino, borne in Sy-
cyll, kepte rather concubines in his chambre, than bokes
11410 in the fcholes. All thefe were wyfe men, and yet we maye
fe, howe at the lafte they were ouercome with the fleffhe.
Than blame not me alone: for as I haue tolde of fo fewe
in noumbre, fo I coude recyte of other a holle armye. Of
trouthe he ought to haue many thynges, that wyl be ta-
11415 ken as curious in loue. He muſte haue his eien displayed
on her that he loueth, his vnderſtandyng fore altered in
that he thinketh, his tonge troubled in that he fhuld fay:
So that in feinge he be blynded, in thoughtes wandring,
and in ſpeakynge troubled. O lady Libia, the louynge in
mocke-


(*f. 166) *mockerye paffeeth by mockerie: but where as the true hert ¹¹⁴²⁰
 is, there is the grefe and no mockerie. Loue fhedeth her
 poyfone, and cruelle Cupydo fixeth his arowes vppe to
 the fethers. Than the eyen wepe, the herte fygheth, the
 flefhe trymbleth, the fynewes fhrynke: the vnderftan-
 dyng waxeth groffe, reafon fayleth, and fo all falleth to ¹¹⁴²⁵
 the erthe, foo that finally the heuye louer abidyng in him
 felfe, holdeth lyttell or nothyng of hym felfe. All this I
 fay bycaufe that knowlege to loue fayleth in me: yet be ye
 fure, that the workes fayle me not to worke in thy feruice.
 And fithe hit was my aduenture to fe the, nowe it is my ¹¹⁴³⁰
 chaunce to knowe the, I demaunde nothyng els of the,
 but that thou wylte loue me trewely, fyth I loue the with-
 out feynynge. And yf thou hafte herde, that I am fycke
 at my harte, I defyre the to do me fome good: for fythe it
 is all onely in the, it is reafon that thou all onely feke for ¹¹⁴³⁵
 remedy. I was greatly comforted, whan Fabius Carly-
 nus defyred me in thy behalfe to be a prifoner, and I dyd
 incontinent all that thou dyddeft defyre, to thentent that
 thou on fome day fhuldeft do that I defyre. And beholde
 lady Lybia, the woman that is ferued with feruyces, it is ¹¹⁴⁴⁰
 reafon, that fhe receyue fome prayers. And thoughe my
 ftrengthes haue no power to open the gates of thy pour-
 pofe, as nat to agree to thy demaunde, yet all my labours
 be bycaufe of thy renowme. I praye the difcouer not the
 one, nor begyle me nat with the other. For now thou feeft ¹¹⁴⁴⁵
 that in grauntinge is remedy, and in trufte is comforte,
 but promeffe is deceyuable, the delayenge is peryllous,
 and the entreatynge byndeth. I fe verye welle, that the
 hafty demaunde deferueth a longe aunfwere: but I wold
 not that thou fhuldeft do foo: but as I defyre the, fo de- ¹¹⁴⁵⁰
 fyre me. I faye agayne, I am all thyne, and not myne
 owne. And as for my felfe in all thinges I wyll ferue the.
 And

Uv. ii.

(*f. 166^b) *And lady Libia regarde, that it were as moch honour for the, as profytable for me, to tourne thy difordinate defy-
 11455 res and purpofes. For thou feelt well it is moche better to heale fhortely than to late with faylynge of thy purpofe. All women kepe one daungerous opinion, that is, they wyll neuer receyue counsell that is gyuen them in a great caufe: and if it be fo, as I thynke, lithe thou art prayfed
 11460 and eftemed of great beautie, than be eftemed to receyue good counfel. And in this maner in cafe that my damage be very great, and thy pacience very lyttell, I fhall be called wyfe to gyue the fuche coudcell [sic], and thou ryght gracious to folowe it. One thyng I faye: and pardone me,
 11465 though I fhewe it to the, howe that women be greatly infamed, that wyll take no counfayle, and fuche as wyll afure their renowme by the opinyon of other, as moche as though they were determined fo to do their felfe. Wherefore I wolde ye fhuld do one thing for an other, as I cou-
 11470 fayle you. And yf thou fyndeft any yll therby, withdrawe thy hande. I wyll fay no more to the, but that I do pre-
 11475 fent to the al my vnhappy troubles, my desperate fyghes, and my feruyces as thy feruaunt. My troubled dolours, my wordes of philofophy, and my amorous teares. Also I fende the a gyrdille of golde, and I gyue it the on the condicyon, that thou fette thyn eies theron, and apply thy harte to me. I praye the goddis to giue me to the, and the to me. Marcus Aurelius the philofopher writeth this in very great fecrete.

11480 ¶ THVS ENDETH THIS GOLDEN Boke of the eloquent Marc Aurelie emperour: who fo euer be reader therof may take it by reafon for a ryche and a newe labour, and fpecially princis and gouernours of the common welth, and mynifters of iuftice, with other. Also the
 11485 common people eche of them maye finde the labour conuenient

(*f. 167) *uenient to theyr estate. And therin is conteyned certayne
 right high and profounde sentences, and holfom counfel-
 les, and meruaylous deuyses ageynste thencumbrance of
 fortune: and right swete consolations for them that are o-
 uerthrowen by fortune. Finally it is good to them that di[-] 11490
 geste it, and thanke god that hath gyuen such grace to a
 paynym, in gyuyng vs example of vertuous lyuyng,
 with hye and salutarie doctrines and meruaylous instru-
 ctions of perfectnes. Certainly as great prayse as ought
 to be gyuen to the auctour, is to be gyuen to the transla- 11495
 tours, that haue laborously reduced this treatise oute of
 Greke into latyn, and out of latyn into Castilian, and out
 of Castilian into frenche, and out of frenche in englyshe,
 writen in high and swete styles. O right happy traualle,
 by the which such fruite is issued therof. And also blessed 11500
 be the handes that haue wrytten hit. A ryghte precious
 meate is the sentences of this booke: But finally the saue
 of the sayd swete style moueth the appetite. Many booke
 there be of substanciall meates, but they be so rude and
 so vnflauery, and the style of so small grace, that the 11505
 fyrste morselle is lothesome and noyfull: And of
 such booke foloweth to lye hole and founde
 in Lybraries, but I truste this wyll
 not. Of trouthe great prayse is
 due to the auctour for his 11510
 traualle. And by the
 there can be no
 grace equi-
 polent
 in erthe, lette vs praye to god to 11515
 gyue hym grace and reward
 in heuen. Amen.
 Graces to god.
 FINIS.

(*f. 167^b) 11520 *  Thus endeth the volume of Marke Aurelie empe-
 rour, otherwyle called the golden boke, tranflated out of
 Frenche into englyſſhe by John Bouchier knyghte
 lorde Barners, deputie generall of the kynges
 towne of Caleys and marches of the fame,
 11525 at the instant deſyre of his neuewe fyr
 Francis Bryan knyght, ended
 at Caleys the tenth day of
 Marche, in the yere
 of the reygne
 11530 of oure
 Soueraygne lorde kyng
 Henrye the .viii.
 the .xxiii.

LONDINI IN ÆDIBUS THO-
 MÆ BERTHELETI RE-
 GII IMPRESSORIS.
 CVM PRIVILEGIO A RE-
 GE INDVLTO.

[Auf S. 168 (nicht numeriert) das Bild der Lucrezia, die
 ſich ſelbſt erſticht, mit zwei Spruchbändern; oben: LVCRECIA
 ROMANA, unten THOMAS BERTHELETVS. Das gleiche Bild
 befindet ſich auf der Rückſeite des letzten Blattes des Inhaltsver-
 zeichniſſes (The Table).]

Druckfehlerberichtigung.

Seite	57	Zeile	6	lies	[aad ^ə ni ^u wn]	statt	[aad ^ə ni ^u wn]
„	68	„	33	„	[gloor ^ɪ]	„	[gloor ^ɪ]
„	99	„	12	„	verändernde	„	veränderte
„	100	„	23	„	yawn	„	gawn
„	118	„	22	„	inquire	„	enquire
„	129	„	32	„	[kaal]	„	[kaal

OMWL
PD 3 .P24x
v.109
Palaestra

MAY 9 '86

UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA
wils v.109
PD 3 .P24x

Palaestra.



3 1951 001 980 653 L